

# GERARDO

THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD.

OR  
A PATTERN E FOR  
LASCIVIOUS LOVERS.

Containing severall strange miseries of loose  
AFFECTION.

*Written by an ingenious Spanish Gentleman, Don  
Gonzalo de Cespedes, and Meneçes, in the time of  
his five yeeres Imprisonment.*

Originally in Spanish, and made English by L.D.

---

---

London printed for ED. BLOUNT.

1 6 2 2.







T O  
**THE RIGHT  
HONORABLE,**  
IN NAME AND NOBLENESSE

Brothers, WILLIAM Earle of Pembroke, Lord  
High Chamberlaine of his Maiesties Houshold,  
And PHILIP, Earle of Montgomerie,  
Baron of Shurland, Knights of the  
most Honorable Order of  
the Garter:

HIS GERARDO and Himselfe, with his  
*truest wishes for all increase of felicitie to  
both their Lordships,*

D. D.

L. D.

*Right-Noble. My Lords:*



*T*ranslations (as sayes a  
witty Spaniard) are, in  
respect of their Originals,  
like the knottie  
wrong-side of Arras-Hangings: But

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

by his wits leaue, as the faire out-side could ill be seene, without helpe of the knots within; no more can the fame of a wel-deseruing Author be far spred, without the labor of a Translator. This made me, for the present *Spanish* Author his sake, venter to make him speak English, and to do a publike good, by publishing the morall Examples contained in the present Tragicall Discourses. Now, that I presume to offer my weake endeouours to the view and protection of both your Lordships, I shall no way despaire of a pardon; since the world, that takes notice of your Noble Goodnesse, (the first, best of your honour'd Titles) giues me assurance, that (though a stranger, rather then an intruder) I shall be esteemed

*To your Honors both, a deuoted*

*Seruant,*

LEONARD DIGGES.



## TO THE READER.

Gentle Reader,

**I** Present to thy view fixe exemplarie Discourses of Gerardo the unfortunate Spaniard, written originally by Don Gonçalo de Cespedes a Spanish Gentleman, who in the time of five yerres of his Imprisonment, under the borrowed Name of Gerardo, personates himselfe in his owne misfortunes. And so partly with truth, partly with fiction, makes up a first and second Part. Something there may bee in the weauing and contexture of the Worke, that may giue thee delight: sure I am, thou shalt find profit in it; especially, if thou be such, as hath any way beene subiect to wanton lust, or loose affection. The best is, if the Worke fall short of expectation, let the Authors credit looke to it; for a Translator hath no commission to better (suffice to come neere) his Originall. Some of the Verses in the Spanish Copie, I haue purposely left out, as being (in my iudgement) unworthy to bee ranked

---

To the Reader.

---


*with the Prose ; others I haue altered , to make them  
more sutable to an English Reader. One by-discourse  
I haue left wholly out, as superstitiously smelling of Pa-  
pisticall Miracles; in which I haue no beleefe. To  
fore stall thee no longer, Begin and reade; and  
though I vndergo thy hard Censure,  
yet I will not be so vncharitable,  
as not to bid thee  
Farewell.*

L. D.

---

THE

---




---

# THE TRAGICKE POEME

*To the R E A D E R.*

**T**Hou that art taken with a female smile;  
Thou, whom a looke, a sigh, or teares beguile  
Of Wind-like Woman: Thou, that at first sight  
Part'st from thy thoughts, and giu'st thy mayden-right  
To irreligious Man, whose smooth-tongu'd Art  
Made vp in Oathes, steales on thy foolish heart:  
Both you, and all inthrall'd Louers, reade,  
Whether my teares may iust acceptance pleade.





---

### Errata

P. Ag. v. line 14. for bearing, read bearing. pag 17. lin. 2. for endeavour, endeavoured. p. 19. l. 1. for presentment, refinement. p. 21. l. 10. for of, at. p. 22. l. 3. for thy, the. p. 81. l. 28. for sale, let. p. 94. l. 13. for coming, came. p. end. l. 31. for father, fathers. p. 95. l. 10. date who. p. 99. l. 26. for unreasonable, reasonable. p. 100. l. 3. for resolute, resolute. p. end. l. 25. for Owner, Owners. p. 111. l. 26. for seare, seate. p. 117. l. 17. for aquall, equall. p. end. l. 19. for Holocaust, Holocaust. p. 140. l. 2. for Echo, Echo. p. 152. l. 18. for knowne make, make knowne. p. 225. l. 1. for of, or, p. 235. l. 4. for causing, caused.

---



GERARDO:  
THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD:

*The first Discourse.*



Was windy darke: Lightning and Thunder gaue notice of the approaching Showres, when, from the deafe murmure of the shady boughes, & clouen Rocks of a thick Mountaine, a pittifull and piercing Shricke strooke through the feareful eares of three poore Shepheards, whose nimble Goates were at the instant there grazing; at which, their equall fright and confusion, made them thinke the voice ascended from the hollow entrailes of the earth. A vvhile they rested in suspence, to see, it happely it were nought but a longing solitude of fancie that posselt them. But re-hearing the lamentable notes, they vndoubtedly thought, that if it were no Ghost, it needs must be some afflicted Mortall made such mone.

B

Still

Still the frightfull noyse increased, and the Shepherds their feare; till one more heartie then his fellows, taking a Box out of his Scrip, with Flint and Steele soone kindled the Tinder, and lighted some shrubbe sprigges, though wet, by reason of Raine that fell, and bidding his companions follow him, taking their Slings and Sheepe-hookes, they marched downe the Hills side, and with their lighted Sticks (seruing them for Lanternes) guided toward the dolefull sound: Soone they approached, where in an intricate thicket of Bushes and Bryers, they might heare a voice wrapped vp, as it were in fighes, bringing them so fearefully on, that though they drew neere, they made a pause, till hearkening more wisely to the sad complaints, they plainely ghesse'd them to proceed from some wretched creature, and the rather, since they might heare the Author of that sorrow, craue aide and fauour of iust and compassionate Heauen: Whereupon (laying all feare aside) they rushed through the rude Bushes, and bushy Trees, at one of whose strong Trunkes (by the helpe of their lighted shrubbes) they might behold a (dead as it were) dismayed Youth laid on the withered Grasse, his face pale and wanne, his teeth fast closed; and his eyes eclipsed, onely now and then with a dolefull sigh he would accompany his mortall pangs, which springing from a wofull cause, and in the dead of night, might doubtlesse occasion the fearefull effect here related.

The sad spectacle stirred vp the poore mens compassion, which they shewed and celebrated with their pitying teares. The wounded partie had dyed the neere thicke grasse with his bloud, in which the rage and torment

ment he felt, made him furiously welter, his paine seeming to bee such, that after each grone, they expected his lites end. The Beholders, though they ihtreated him of his difaster, could know nothing, for much losse of bloud had made the partie quite senselesse; so that seeing it bootelesse to satisfie their desires, they sought, if it were possible, to helpe his hurts, to which purpose they began gently to vncloath him: and vnbuttoning a thinne Tyssue Doublet he wore, perceiued two wounds in his brest, which (though bloody, deepe) yet appeared not to be mortall; besides which, he had other three (lesse dangerous) in seuerall parts of his body: by all which, they might perceiue, that the Authors of them were most willing, not to haue left their worke vnfinished. Their best and wholesomest purpose was to cut down boughs, which tying and fitting together, as well as the shortnesse of time would permit them, they made a carriage like a Beere, on which as the compassionate Swaines were about to haue laid the dismaid body, so to haue conueyed him to a neighbouring Village their habitation, the trampling and neighing of a Horse, that seemed to be neere, stayed them; and being as yet scarce free from their former feare, a smal matter was sufficient to affright them: for imagining some came backe to dispatch the bloudlesse Corps, without expecting the certaintie; cold in their commenced charitie, they swiftly tooke them to their flight. But the same effect, which the Horses noise caused in them, frightened the same Horse, who yet had not forsaken his wounded Master, till now that they with their lights flew thorow the thicket, so amazed the swift Beast, that he (like winde) making contrary speed, they soone lost sight of him,

him, which made them thinke, that hee whom they left among the Trees, was some person of qualitie, and owner of that Horſe, which made them afreſh deſirous to put their pious intent in execution: and ſo turning back, and not once ſuffering the wounded perſon to come to himſelfe out of a deepe Trance in which he lay, putting him vpon the Boughy Coffin, and rearing him on their ſtrong ſhoulders, they went toward their Village.

In this manner they marched through the intangling Wood, till ſuch time, as (ſkilfull) they got out of it, and willing to take a narrower path, which ſerued them as a ſhorter cut to the neighbouring Village, ſomewhat out of the rode way, they might heare great cryes, humming of Slings, barking of Dogs, ſuch a noiſe as made them thinke verily all the Mountainous Inhabitants were vp in Armes.

But firſt let mee ſhew the cauſe of this notable Vproare, which, though needleſſe, ſuffice proceeded from thoſe rude and barbarous Mquntainers.

You heard how the three Shepheards with their fearfull flight, frighted the ſwift Horſe, who by his Maſters hard fortune, was there looſe, grazing in the Deſart Mountaine. It hapned next, as theſe charitable mens ill luckes would haue it, that the furious ſpeed of the ſwift Beaſt awoke certaine Keepers, that belonged to the Woods, to looke to the Game, and ſuch recreations as were committed to their charge, who ſtraight ſtood on their Guard, ſuppoſing ſomewhat elſe to bee the cauſe and breaker of their reſt: when (ſcarce riſen from the ground, and looking what way the bloudleſſe body was brought toward them) ſeeing ſo many lights, (for doubtleſſe their feare made them ſeeme flaming

*Ætina's*

*Aetna's* to them ) and not knowing what might bee the cause, or who should vvalke in that vnseasonable time and manner, full of astonishment, and, like mad-men, (though wanting courage to expect the issue) not staying one for another, they ranne to the neereſt Village to cry out for help : and this with ſuch howling and ſtrange clamour, that they raiſed all the neighbourhood and adioyning Farmers vp in Armes : and the hurry was ſo much the greater, at what time (crying out for help) the fearefull name of the King and his Juſtice was interpoſed ; for then, Men, Women and Children, ſome with Halberts, others with Launces or Swords, (at the Bells ringing ) ranne which way the Keepers affirmed there were ſome ſetting the King his Woods on fire ; who conducting the troupes, brought them ſpeedily to the place, from whence the poore careleſſe Shepheards were vvalking faire and ſoftly in proſecution of their charitable office; ſometimes exchanging their burdens, otherwhiles reſting vpon the bare and naked Rockes, ſo that ere they could get to the Village, theſe cruell people were ready to encounter them : and theſe were the cries and noiſes the ſecure Shepheards heard, vpon their ſally from the incloſed Mountaine. No ſooner ſaw the Sauage Crue thoſe ſtrange lights, when ſtraight (as by aime) they diſcharged a thicke ſhowre of ſtones, making the hollow Valley reſound with their wouen Slings: wherefore the poore men (ſeeing themſelues ſo hardly intreated, and that though they cryed out to the others to hold their hands, 'twas but in vaine, ſince they could not bee heard) left their burden, and ſell to their defence, at what time it grew to bee toward day-breake.



What with the nights moisture and the sharpenesse of the approaching morne, the young mans vvounds were so festered, and the piercing grieve of them brought him to a lively feeling, and so to his vnderstanding: and though he could as then call and cry out for helpe, yet it was so vweakely, that none of those in the skirmish with the poore Shepheards could heare him.

The Shepheards beeing (as is said) but three, and persecuted by so many, (wanting Armes and further defence) were forced to turne their backs, and hide themselues in the neereft thicket (the vvhole fry and rabble of those raging Clownes following them, with that desire to kill or take them, as had they beene bloudy Robbers or Cannibals. The lone and vnfortunate Gentleman calls on mee, who vvvas left helpless in the Crosse-beaten way to the Village, from whence the High-way leades to the ancient *Segonia*, not passing two Leagues distant; and therefore I shall, till a fitter time, suspend the successe of the distressed Shepheards. Iust Heauen (it seemed) was pleased to giue aide to him that with so much necessity craued it, and so no longer deferred the fauour done him, by meanes of a Noble Gentleman, then riding and crossing from *Escorial* (the Worlds eighth Meruaile) to the famous Citie of *Segonia*, accompanied with some followers, and vvvas necessarily to passe, vvhere this afflicted dying Youth was thus lamenting his misfortune; and relenting at the sudden and sorrowfull encounter, vvithout inquiring further into the matter, (as ghesling it to bee the Act of Theeves) hee made him as gently as might bee to be set vpon a Mule, and caused one of his seruants to get vp behinde to support him: and fearing by his gasty vi-

sage,

sage, how neere death began to threaten him (that hee might not dye vpō their hands) he so carefully hastened his iourney, that within an houre comming to the top of the snowy Mountaine, they might discover the famous Citie, incompassd with strong Walles, adorned with sumptuous Palaces and Pinnacles, and inuironed with thicke Groues, and flourishing Fields: but not willing to giue their eyes the content that the beautifull Countries prospect inuited them too, they soone got to the Citie, and there entred the first lodging they saw open, by such time as it grew to be now broad-day.

The Noble Gentleman thus alighted, deferred no iot the care of him that was vnder his protection; and so in great haste caused Surgeons to be sent for, and in the meane time, commanding his bed to be made ready, he himselfe vndressed him, and taking off a Sattin Wast-coate he wore next his skinne, found a rich Jewell of admirable fashion and workmanship, hanging at an enamelled chaine of Gold, besides a precious Diamond set in a well-wrought ioynt-Ring which he had vpon his right hand finger, at which the good Gentleman was something troubled, knowing now how much hee was deceiued in his former opinion: For had the Authors of those wounds beene (as he thought) Theeues, they would not haue left behinde them Jewels of so great Value, which made knowne sufficiently their Owners worth. Being in sundry imaginations touching this accident, his Seruant was returned with an expert Surgeon, who taking the parties Pulse, and viewing his wounds, ghesse'd by him and them that they were not deadly, and that the chiefeest cause of his swooning, was much losse of blood, which vigour of youth would soon

again restore; and, so with some comfortable remedies the Surgeon applide, the Gentleman came a little to himselfe; onely for feare of the worst it was ordained, that none should trouble him with speaking to him, till hee might more strongly recouer his Sences, vvithout which he remained most part of that day. When hee grew at last to be better, and considered in how different a place he now vvvas, from that, vvhere hee receiued his vvounds, he could not but extremely vvonder, and (calling to minde his misfortunes) grew somewhat passionate, and addressing himselfe to the Noble Gentleman, that neuer so much as once parted from his bed-head, requested him to tell him, in what place hee was, or how brought thither: In which, the Noble *Leriano* (for so was the compassionate Gentleman called) lovingly satisfide him, desiring him withall not to grieve himselfe with the thought of any thing saue health, which hee and his seruants were as carefull of as their owne. At which the vnfortunate Gentleman vvvas somewhat more couragious, and yeelding his due thanks, thought fit to be silent, and so as much as his wounds would permit him, rested ioyfull, seeing his lost and dead hopes of recouering new life, so much bettered.

It pleased Heauen after to restore him wholly, reseruing him to other innumerable vnfortunate accidents and misfortunes; and now vvithin some few dayes hee vnderstood more largely from *Leriano* in what manner hee found him; vvho told him likewise, that himselfe was a Branch of that Ancient Stocke of the Noble *Pe-rasanes de Ribera*, and borne in the Royall Citie of *Senil* (*Spaines Babylon*) from whence he was traucelling about certaine

certaine Law suites to the Citie and Court of *Valladolid*, which voyage he now more willingly deferred out of the care of his health, then vnderooke, that hee might be feasted and welcomed by his kindred and friends: Heere the vnknowne Youth was as thankfull, as contented at such true and faithfull professions, thinking now his miseries and wounds well inflicted, since by their sad occasion, they acquainted him with so worthy a friend.

Not long after, he was able to rise, but not so boldly, as to venter out of his Chamber, where hee wanted nothing to entertaine time with, or diuert Melancholly, which by fits exceedingly afflicted him: and at one time amongst the rest in *Leiranos* absence (who was walked into the Towne) falling into his sad Dumpes, and willing to beguile his fancy, he called for a Lute, (which cunningly tuned) with a cleere Voice and pleasing Dittie he mustered vp his lifes former passages, in the insuing Verses.

Soule. *Since she hath prou'd vntrue,  
Leaue to loue her, bid, Adieu:  
Hope, for nought from such an ill,  
But to be a Prisoner still:  
Can she euer be reclaim'd,  
That hath thus her honour stain'd?  
Vanish, vanish, (my desire)  
Loyall thoughts (like lingring fire)  
You consume me. Hence, Away,  
Since your Mistris went astray.*

Soule. *Remember to forget  
Her, whose fa'shood haunts thee yet:*

Try no more, nor longer proue,  
 what it is to live in Love;  
 Least, so, (like a suddaine Theefe)  
 Thou bee'st seif' d by winged griefe.  
 Say, with sorrow shee should pine,  
 'Twas no base neglect of thine  
 Caus'd it: her faults sets thee free:  
 Reason bids, Take libertie.

Soule. Thou maist forget, I know,  
 Justly, her, thy cause of woe,  
 who abhor d thee; Nature weake,  
 Passion (though) would gladly speake,  
 Sayes, I lov'd her once: 'Tis right:  
 But, then, wanton appetite  
 More, art thou (my wronged soule)  
 And maist flesh & blood controule.  
 They are mortall, but thy name  
 Still must haue a purer fame.

Soule. No longer weepe: forbear,  
 (Patience bids) to shed a teare.  
 Cruell she that lost all troth,  
 Well may teach thee now to loath.  
 Blame no birth or croser Starre,  
 But their sexe that faithlesse are:  
 Soule! yet weep (though) still lament  
 (All my life) in woe be spent:  
 Least (forgetting to complaine)  
 Thou be drawne to Love againe.

Soule.

Soule. Clarinda, and sad moane,  
You that ne're leaue me alone,  
You, to heare me, weary still:  
But content and pleas'd to kill.  
Now you heare a griued Loner  
(All his former hopes giu'n ouer)  
Promise to forget: which way,  
Shall I then forget, Soule? Say!  
I: beginne: for that's the most  
Leaue to Loue; since all faith's lost.

Whilſt he was yet euen in the middle of his Song,  
Leriano entred, but loth to interrupt him, ſtaid, till by a  
ſcorching ſigh, with which his Song had end, he knew  
the Muſicke had wrought in him, her accuſtomed effect  
of ſadneſſe; ſo he came neerer, where he found him laid  
on his bed, and his eyes diſtilling teares: which in vaine  
he ſought to hide from his deare friend, who comming  
toward him with open armes, ſaid; There is no reaſon,  
gentle Sir, that from a ſtranger, and one that ſhewed ſo  
much good will as my ſelfe, you ſhould conceale that  
griefe, which, by vvhat now, and at other times you  
haue demonſtrated, I conceiue to be very great: and if  
I, till now, haue not beene very earneſt to demand the  
cauſe, you may know it was not willingly to reduce ſuch  
pitrifull accidents to your memory, as might happely  
haue endangered your health, in which you are  
now ſo forward. You muſt not but ſatiſſie me, and let  
mee know vvithall, who, and whence you are: For I vow  
to Heauen and you, that bee it neceſſarie for your ſake  
and reuenge, I vvill hazzard Honour, Life, and Fortune.  
I reſt fully aſſured (replide the concealed Youth.) Noble  
friend.



friend *Leriano*, of the pure affection you haue shewed me, mouing you to saue my life, by restoring it, and giuing me the being I now enioy, which, next Heaven, I owe to your selfe; and though the remembrance of my past disasters be most grievous to me; yet in respect of my engagements to your selfe, and because I would you should perceiue how much I desire to fulfill your commands, though I renue old sores, vnrip auncient wounds, I will satisfie your wish, giuing a short account of my inward thoughts, youthfull dayes, and yong imployments, as forerunners of my present stormes and shipwracke.

I cannot sufficiently expresse *Leriano's* gratitude, to heare his friends willingnesse to the thing he so heartily desired, and thinking each minute an Age till he began the promised Discourse, he commanded his seruants to aue them, and with a cheerefull countenance and still attention gaue care to what followeth.

My name, worthy Friend, is *Gerardo*: The great and famous Village of *Madrid* (most vvorthy Mansion of our Catholike Monarks) my loued Country, the common generall Mother of different people, and remote Nations. Neere her high-reared walles, by whose ruines her ancient strength is yet seene, is the house of my Ancestors, ennobled as well by their births, as it's owne Antiquitie; there was I borne, there first bred. It vvered needlesse to enlarge my Discourse, by recounting the tender exercises of my infancie, therefore I will begin from my yeer's of fiftene, which accomplished, I was forced to obey my Father, by accompanying him to one of the best places of Government in *Castile*, which his Maiesty had as then newly bestowed on him.

My

My elder Brother *Leoncio* went also along with vs, a valiant yong fellow of towardly hopes; all of vs were most iocund with our Fathers new fortunes, our iourney vvas short, for in foure dayes we arrived, where (according to custome) we were solemnely welcomed. My Father tooke possession of the Government, and to the general satisfaction went on in his *Triennium*.

This was the famous City of *Talhora*, one of the best & most populous in the Kingdome of *Toledo*; whose situation is fructified with the siluer streames of gold-bearing *Tagus*, and makes it one of the most pleasant and delightfullst vpon all his Bankes: the Inhabitants are louing, courteous, and affable, particularly the Gentry (of the best qualified houses of Spaine) most worthy Pillars to so ancient a foundation.

Here (me thought) I was euer at home, vvith friends of mine owne Age and ranke: our exercises for the most part were riding, running at Bulls, at the Ring, Maskes, Barryers and the like, with (which delighting the multitude) wee made our selues cunning practitioners. In the field, Hawking and Hunting vv ere our sports, for both which that Country is plentifully provided. These, & the others, that took vp our whole times, were my chiefe delights, to a heart yet vntouched by loues flames: which made me as contented, as free; as satisfied in my selfe, as by others enuied. Yet not long could I so boast, not long was I thus ioyfull: how soone from a freeman became I a bondslau e? From merry to melancholly; from tractable, to the contrary; from happy, to vnforgunate? Sooner then I could with (deare *Leriano*) shall you heare the change. Amongst many other shewes and Triumphs we vsually had, one drew

drew neere, appointed by our Citie in honour and commemoration of the blessed Virgin *Maries* happy Nuptials, much celebrated throughout all *Castile*, at which time, an infinite number of common people, and great concourse of Gentry resort thither, as well from the Court and the Citie of *Auila*, as the Imperiall *Toledo*, and other parts of the Kingdome. The wished day came on, being the sixe and twentieth of Aprill, duskyish and cloudy, a season naturall to that Climate, or belike *Phæbus* knew his beames might well bee spared, where so many, so beautifull lights would appeare. We were two and thirty Gentlemen, that in seuerall colours entred the Market-place: my selfe performed the office of Stickler betwixt my Father and Brother *Leonio*. The sport began, the Bulles were let loose and chased, the whole solemnitie, to the generall good liking and applause of the Spectators, ended in a well-ordered skirmish of Canes on Horsebacke, there hauing hapned no disauster or mischance at all, saue mine, which considering the state it hath now brought me too, was the greatest could arriue.

At my first passing ouer the place on horsebacke, my carelesse eyes chanced to glance at a Bay-window, (where certaine Gentlewomen strangers were placed) they pawed a little as being attracted, no lesse by the noueltie, then the goodly presence: Backe I went with some other friends and Gentlemen, that I might re-enjoy a fuller sight of whose beauties, and faire and softly, as praucingly as our Horses could pace, we drew neere, passing to and fro, with more turnes and windings, then doth a poore prisoners restless imagination in a loathsome dungeon. Neither had we (thinke I) till  
this

this time quitted the place, had not the Gentlewomen, seeing all ended, raised themselves vp to goe downe to their Coaches that attended them beneath. Heere my foundation failed, and from this instant beganne the ruines of my fiered *Troy*.

One there was amongst those Ladies, that till the present still masked, discovered so rare a beauty in so yong a body, that wee were all suddenly astonished. Me thought (vnaccustomed to such brunts) the faire creature euen tore and parted my heart, to make it part of her tender owne: For sure I am, by the effect, any one might iudge how ill I was wounded, so powerfull piercing was the soueraigne glaunce of her eyes. At her rising vp, shee approached so neere the iron window, that seeing her lay her faire hands on the fore-part of the Bay, I was bold to tell her, The hardnes of those barres (faire Mistris) is not safe, from being softened by those snowy hands, if happely they partake with the vertue of your scorching eyes, since with their rayes, you melt the most obdurate flinty-hearts.

These, and such amorous flashes, I imperfectly blundered out: she onely answered with a gracious smile, and paying our salutations with a Curtsie, followed her company.

At entring her Coach, I alighted to haue held the Boote, to vvhich, neither her selfe, nor another Dame (I knew since to bee her Aunt) would by any meanes consent: onely as they entred, I passed a complement, and they returned thanks. I asked them whence they were? They told me of *Auila*: had it not beene for being noted, I should haue knowne their lodging, the end and limit of their Voyage. I could scarce  
take

take leaue, that Angell had so transported me : but seeing there vvas no remedy, was forced to patience. They were gone, and left me so amazed, that I had scarce memory to get to Horse, or to perceiue that my friends expected me. Yet vp I got, and gaue order to a seruant, to watch where the Coach stopped, and to learn truely who they were that went in it. This done, wee gaue a turne about the ioyful City, though the distemper, (caused by the late accident, I felt within me) made me weary of my friends irkesome company, of whom (saining my selfe not well) I tooke leaue. By the time I got home it was night; so I shifted cloathes, and (my minde brooking no delaies) went into the street, and *Senabria* with me, so was the seruant priuy to my secrets, called; him I villed to direct me to the house of my beloued stranger, and likewise to tell mee what hee had heard of her qualitie: vvhose said, she lay in one of the richest mens houses in the Citie, whose Neece she vvas, and that she, vvhose accompanied her in the Coach, vvas her Aunt, that they vvere within two dayes vpon a iourney of Devotion, to the Monasterie of *Guadalupe*. So that now thinking I had relation enough for my purpose, I would needs fetch a turne in the street, hoping that the very sight of those walles that concealed my Sun from mee, might giue me some comfort. But one of my neere friends preuented mee, who hearing I vvas not vvell, came to visit me: wee straight saluted, imbracing, as if in long time wee had not seene each other. Hee vvondred at the noueltie, and hauing power of commanding friendship on his part, soone forced from mee the cause of my malady.

*Fernando* (so vvas my best friend called) was glad in  
his

his soule, that my sicknesse vvas no other then vvhat I made knowne; and indeuour vvith his best perswasions to diuert me from my purpose, telling me by vvhat I had let him know of the sudden departure of those Dames, how small hope there vvas to obtaine my desire. But finding me fixed, it behooued him to giue vvay: so together vve went to the street and house of vvhich *Senabria* had informed me; and passing vnder the vvindowes, I might see at one of them, being the lower-most, the North-Starre that guided mee; her eyes contending to giue light vvith those rayes that shewed in the still night: She and another Dame of like stature, and (in likelihood) yeeres, were discoursing together: that partie vvas knowne by *Fernando*, to be *Francisca*, Daughter to *Segundo Octauio*, owner of the house, vvwhose qualitie vvas before mentioned.

Faine vvould I at the instant haue spoken; but *Fernando* thought it not fit too suddenly to affright the game; so wee drew neerer by degrees, onely so long, till we thought vvee might be discovered by the Moones light: and they seeing vs make a stand, vvould haue broken off their Discourse, clapped to the vvindowes, and retired, had not *Fernando* (as hauing more freedome) stayed them, by saying, Let not our boldnesse (hauing so good a discharge as the sight of your beauties) interrupt your pleasing Conference; or if this may not serue for an excuse, you may punish vs, as you vvould household seruants.

*Francisca*, a little frightened, thus answered; If it vvwere lawfull for vs to make longer stay, wee should not greatly complaine of your boldnesse; the rather, since your humilitie hath thus satisfide; onely the growing late, makes vs of force retire. Nay, but said I (remouing vvith this occasion) you cannot but leaue vs doubtfull of your displeasure, vvwhich I shall esteeme as my greatest unhappinesse.



All this while my Diuine stranger was silent, vwhen, applying my selfe to her, I thus said; I beseech you, faire Mistris, be not you of that Ladies rigorous minde: since your sweetnesse is shortly to leaue vs, to make so long stay from this Countrey.

Doe you know me, quoth she, vwith a gracious disdaine, or that my departure shall be so soone? *Francisca* now demanded of *Fernando* (vvhom she knew) vvho I was; and so I had leisure, to speake more freely to my Mistris, saying, If (faire creature) you remembred but so well him that this afternoone kissed your hands, and to them rendred a heart more firme then these irons, as he in his inflamed brest hath the rare image of your face engrauen; sure I am, you could not so neglectfully answere me.

I vnderstand not your meaning (said shee) though (me thinks) euer since your beginning to speak, I should know you: but the habit you now weare, is so different from vvhat you had on in the afternoone, that you neede not suppose me to be forgetfull. Loth I vvas to spend the short time in fruitlesse Discourse, and therefore to the purpose demanded, saying, VVhen is your sad departure? or to say truer, my suddaine death? and this vvith so faint and pittifull a voice, that my Mistris touched vvith my feeling, with some little earnestnesse, (though smilingly) answered, I should thinke you vv ere sorry for my departure, but that I ghesse you can dissemble. I haue neither time, nor place, faire Dame, said I, to expresse my iust sorrow in, which is such, vvhen I thinke of your absence, that if I follow you not, the being mine owne desperate executioner, must be my latestt refuge, seruing as an Antidote against the poison that burnes and consumes me.

You doe much endeere your sicknesse, said she, (giuing as it were to vnderstand that I flattered her) vvwhich if it be  
such

such as your presentment shewes, my knowledge is small, and my abilitie lesse to apply a brieve remedy : though I suspect, that as you grew quickly sicke, you will the sooner recouer : for it is the fashion of you men, to make things farre difficult vvith vs, and for your aduantages to facilitate and leuell Mountaines of impossibilities. Let's haue plaine Song, if you wil haue me agree in the tune; & that you may know, I vvould not vvillingly contradict you, nor proue nice to the much good wil you professe vnto me: you shall vnderstand, that two dayes hence I am for *Guadalupe*, and hope my returne may be this way; and both now and then, if in any thing I may serue you, belecue, and command me, and see whether I be thankfull, or neglect your vovves, though perhaps they be but flatteries.

Thus farre held on our Discourse, (my selfe the ioyfullest man aliue) when some one calling from within, they were forst to be gone; & *Francisca* only stayed to vtter this. *Fernando* tels mee, you haue an excellent Musician serues you; & I hauing extolled our Country voices to my Cousin *Clara*, desire you that shee may be satisfied in hearing, and I proue no Lyer in relating : and to morrow about this time we will heere expect you. Faine would I, with the greatest thanks that might be, haue kissed her hands for the fauour she did me : but her farewell was so sudden, it was impossible : and so *Fernando* and my selfe passing thorow the street, hauing appointed to meete againe next night, tooke leaue and departed.

The remainder of the night I spent in a thousand seuerall imaginations, all proceeding frō the difficultie of the enterprize I had in hand; till the cleere morning giuing truce to my confused thoughts, I got out of their Labyrinth, and from home likewise : and hauing notice where my Mistris vsed to heere Masse, I and my friend *Fernando* were there

present, where I receiued from my lifes Owner, in as much as her amorous but warie, lookes, would permit rich and inestimable fauours.

Thus passed we the morning, and the afternoone in often walking thorow her streete, till night came on : and being fit time, with my deare friend and the Musicke wee drew neere : and finding all husht and quiet, standing where we did the night before, my Musician began to sing what I had instructed him, to the sweet melody of a vvell-tuned Violl.

*If, like Phœbus, in the west,  
Now thy fairer eyes at rest,  
Wearie, longer, are to see  
One, that dyes for want of thee:*

*Then, must I of force (my Deare)  
Hope the morne will soone be heere :  
And a Truce to slumber giue,  
So shall I retorne to liue.*

*Shall I; of those Sunnes, thine eyes,  
Be the flow'r that at Sunne-rise,  
Spreds with him, and shuts againe,  
When he diues into the maine ?*

*But, thine eyes might plainly see  
Yesterday that truth in me,  
Since, when they were present, I  
Liu'd; (but they being gone) now dye.*

*So that now, at thy command,  
Life and death are at a stand :  
Doubt not, Coward: her good will  
How can a good Angell kill ?*

*If, a wretched Prisoner, whom  
Law and a foule fact doth doome,*

*Once,*

Once, by chance, spy but the face  
Of his Prince, he hopes for grace.  
Iustlier may thy beauty giue  
Me assurance, then, to line :  
Since I happy was, to view  
That : no guilt or crime else knew.  
Eagles by the Sunne doe proue  
Right, or Bastard brood ; so Loue  
My amazed daz'ling eyes  
Of thy splendour purifies.  
Loue, that safely doth incline  
Me to trace those eyes of thine :  
Fearing not what e're betides,  
Once to lose my sou'raigne guides.  
And, although those North-Starres now  
Darkned are, and thy faire brow;  
Yet, my Loue, the Loadstone, may  
Soone discouer light some day.

Iust as he began, the window opened, but not a creature to be seene, which made vs not a little wonder, (ignorant who within might keepe my Mistris and her Cousin from appearing) but the Musician with that sweet Sonnet following which he sung, interrupted our doubtfulnessse.

Whether, or fix't, or wandring, Lights of Heauen !  
(Though lesser Tapers, to the Moone, you be)  
Bright Scutcheons of the gods, and Planets seuen  
Whose cheerefull influence doth best agree  
With am'rous mindes : a brest most pure and euen  
Innokes your faire aspects ; Looke downe on me,  
And (as your pow'r s, me power to Loue haue giuen ;)  
Light her I loue, that she my thoughts may see.

*And oh, thou cold and more then sober night !  
 That in dull calu'nesse sleep'st untill cleere day,  
 In absence of thy Sunnes all-glorious light.  
 Wert thou like me (sad night) to goe thy way  
 By absence giu'd, to lose so rich a sight ;  
 Teares, sorrowes Tribute, and not sleepe, thou'dst pay.*

This Sonnet ended with so sweet a cloze, that soon the Ladies shewed themselves, and from the window willed vs to come neerer, saying, From the very beginning *Clara* and I haue hearkened to your seruants admirable voice, and deferred our being scene, for feare of marring the Song.

*Fernando* replide with thanks: and I turning to my *Clara*, asked her how she liked the Voice: to which with a pretty smile she answered; 'Twas harmonious enough, but that the Musician, in declaring so liberally his Masters passion, had somewhat more enlarged himselfe then was there expected: Why, sweet loue (said I) doe the scorching amorous effects of my heart offend you? If so, my brest from henceforth shall like another *Aetna* boile inwardly, and my tongue, in stead of expressing paine, turne Marble.

I blame you not, *Gerardo*, somewhat milder now said she; but since your affection is such, I could haue wished that neither my Cousin, nor your friend, should be priuy to it: For the returne on my part, I know not what to say, but would God I had neuer left *Auila*. (This said) her right arme set on the windows great Barre, and her cheeke resting vpon the white hand, with a gentle sigh, I might perceiue, that her eyes trickling some drops, dried, or rather caught the crysall pearles in an olorous Handkerchiefe. I presumed, such an accident could bee no lesse then favourable, and so vrged the reason of the sudden passion, withall  
 making

making large protestations of my loue and seruice, that in it I would spend my life, though I hazzarded it in any kind of death. To which, in the moode shee was, thus shee replide, Haue I not reason, thinke you, *Gerardo*, to be troubled, in seeing my selfe thus estranged from mine owne affections? and by casting my selfe so loosely vpon yours, to know (to my unhappinesse) that I haue no command ouer my free wil, and that in this respect, I am forced to part (though my heart and life be parted) since my Cousin and her Parents cannot with infinite intreaties obtaine of my Aunt to leaue me with them, perhaps as presaging my desires? Oh know, mine eyes doe but counterfet my hearts grieffe, & the greatest affliction which that can feele, is the impossibilitie (in absence) to repay the affection you beare me. And so ending in teares and sighes, turning to her Cousin without expecting my answer, she said; I thinke 'tis time to retire for feare wee be missed. *Francisca* was about to haue answered, when *Fernando* crossing Trumpe, preuented her, saying to *Clara*, Your desire, faire Dame, cannot as yet take effect: for, if you want sleepe, *Francisca* must make good the field alone, til we determine a certain doubt, in which there must be a knowne Victor, or else it is not to be giuen ouer.

'Tis the best in the world, quoth *Francisca*, but so tediously controuerted betweene a number of people, that should we set it afresh on foot, 'twere neuer to end. Well, it must be resolued, said I, and Mistris *Clara* with her wisdom shall arbitrate for the more certaine conclusion of your opinions. Why, none may deny, said *Fernando*, but that mine is true: for what reason is it, that our constancy should bee paralel'd with that of women, past or present? and certainly, my so reasonable earnestnesse in this point, shall last with me as long as life. And I (said I) will re-



enforce it to the last gaspe. Well then, said *Francisca*, there is no more to bee done, but set vp the Lists. What need you, quoth I? the iron barres of your window already serue in their stead. But leauing this, as a thing settled in our fauour, the Instrument with some pleasing Ditty shall make our peace.

The two Cousins were pleased with my motion, especially when they might see me take the Violl from my man, and settle my selfe to sing these Verses:

*Stay, bold thoughts, refraine your will,  
 Silent be and suffer still:  
 What? not speake if bee be by?  
 Torment: if you doe, you dye.  
 Say, the flame to rise begin,  
 Teares without, may quench within.  
 Better die in easie paine  
 (Suff'ring) then (if not) be slaine.  
 Is there (though) no remedy?  
 Silence, then; I'le welcome thee:  
 And thou, tongue of mine, conceale,  
 What the heart must not reueale.*

When I had ended the faire *Diana* beganne highly to commend the Ditty; but so to extend the finger, that had not chaste *Lucina* lost her boy for light, they might haue seene shamefastnesse in the bloud of my cheekes. Leauing this, I began to offer my selfe anew to their service, and to *Clara* thus spoke, that both might heare me: We shall be very solitary (your departure being so sudden as last night you told me:) but indeed this Countrey cannot containe such a treasure long; besides, the place of your birth is so eminent, that it must needs as equally attract you, as your  
 kindred

kindred or friends. I know what it may doe, said shee, my will is now my Aunts, whilst I am with her; though let mee tell you, that for my Cousin here, (whom I loue equally with my selfe) I could bee content to leaue not onely mine owne Countrey, but forget my neereſt friends. And ſo ſhe ended, beholding mee ſo amorouſly, that I plainly perceiued to whom her ſpeech was directed, which intangled me wholly in her pleaſing Labyrinth, in ſuch ſort, that before I got free, it coſt mee much time, and many miſfortunes.

But now ſeeing day come haſtily on, we tooke leaue, and I of *Clara*, as if it had beene my lateſt; indeed to both our griefes we parted, which I in melancholy expreſſed: vvhich when *Fernando* ſaw, hee could not but breake into this ſpeech vnto mee: It much troubles mee, friend *Gerardo*, to ſee you thus droope: what doe you want? what is not abounding to you? yeſterday you were not acquainted; to day, you haue *Casars Vici*: *Clara* loues you, how much your ſelfe and I well perceiue. She goes to *Anila*, the iourney is not ſo long, nor your meanes or mine ſo ſhort, but that we may be Gheſts any where as well as at home. And ſince this is ſo, ſince you take me to bee your friend, there's no more to be done, but take courage; and, like a man of Valour, withſtand all difficulties.

Ah my louing friend, ſaid I, your noble breaſt at no time euer failed mee: your Diſcourſe reuines my afflicted heart; you raiſe my dead hopes, which were euen now giuen ouer, ſo that I am now wholly diſpoſed to the preſent occaſion you vrge; and if ſo you pleaſe, to morrow, (when wee ſhall heare that *Clara* hath left the Cittie) wee will ſecretly follow to the Bridge, and ſo take the lower way of the Riuer (being out of the high way thither) where they will vndoubtedly lodge: and for feare of being benighted, make

it their first daies journey. You say well (quoth *Fernando*) and perhaps we shall haue a ioyfull returne; onely (for the maine) it behooues vs to bee secret. That concernes mee most, said I, and therefore my aduice is, that without more company then our selues, we goe both disguised: In which resolution, we bade Adieu till the next day, that knowing my Mistris with *Francisca* and her Aunt were to depart after Dinner; I vvent to *Fernando's* lodging, vvhere I vvas againe incouraged by him; who shewed his Noble desire in the following Sonnet.

*A brazen heart, an Adamantine minde*  
 (Doubtlesse) had he, whose restless working Braine  
 First launcht our moouing houses to the Maine,  
 And slippery hinges gaue to waues and winde.  
*Fanaticke fury, zeale, aspiring blinde,*  
 Had he, who rashly sought to fly (in vaine)  
 But rasber he, that heau'ns bright Carre, so faine,  
 Downe headlong droue (against his fathers minde.)  
*A daring AE, a pretty enterprize*  
 'Twas, to descend and conquer Erebus,  
 To binde the Triple-Porter in a Chaine:  
 But to presume to venter on her eyes,  
 without more note or merit court thus,  
 (As greater madnesse) so, a greater gaine.

And next hauing cloathed our selues in the best manner vve thought fit, vvee departed out at a backe doore of his house; and by the Riuer side, with coole travelling, and good discourse, about Sun-set wee arriued at certaine houses, not passing halfe a League from the Bridge; and alighting wee layd vs downe vpon the greene Grasse behinde certaine ruinous mudde Walles, where wee resolved to ex-

peet my Mistresses passing by, which hapned not long after: and knowing the Coach, in which she went, giuing it leaue to go on before, we followed softly after, & kept the noise of it stil in our eares, though see it we could not, by reason the darknes of the night began more & more to thicken vpon vs. So we came to the towne, and marking what Inne they took, entred into another, where, alighting, I deliuered my Horse to the Oast, and *Fernando* turning back againe vpon his, we went out into the street, where I clapt a Hunters Cap on my head, and an open Cassocke at the sides, of which I came provided ouer my shoulders, & taking off my Spurs and Sword out of the Hangers, caried it vnder mine arme, liuely resembling one of our *Mulniers*: I desired *Fernando* to follow, who was ready to burst with laughter: & in this disguise we came to my Mistresses Inne, her (as we entred) I saw set very sorrowfully in a Chaire by her Cousin. I demanded a chamber for my new Master, which whē we had shewed vs, in a spacious Court at hand, I gaue order for prouendring my Horse, which done, whilst supper also vvas making ready, confident in my Liury, I went where my deare Pledge was sitting, sometimes crossing from the street to the Court; otherwhiles, from the Court back againe; and then drawing neere to her presence, sought by the brightnes of a candle, that lighted al the forepart of the house, to make my selfe knowne to her faire eyes: all which endeouours had bin vaine, had not *Francisca*, that kept her company, left her alone, by going into another roome where her Aunt was resting her selfe: and thus acknowledging the opportunitie heauen bestowed vpon me, I quickly made my approach, saying, Is it possible, light of my darknes, that this your Slaue hath bin so vnknowne to those cleere eyes? when she amazed, I seized on her white hand, and taking off my Cap and disguise, made my selfe better known: So that when she was  
fully

fully satisfide, out of pure astonishment, long it was ere shee would leaue crossing her selfe, and with the sudden alteration this vnexpected change had caused, said, Are you *Gerardo*? in beholding you, sure I become blind.

Who should it be, deare sweet (said I) but he you name, who transformed into your precious selfe, am neuer absent from you? Lord, my best Sir (quoth she) how came you hither? What base attire is this concealed your Noble being from me? whither do you go? Do you think I meane to vndoo my selfe, or feare that my being so slightly guarded, may make mee a prey to bloudy Robbers that frequent the vn-couth Mountaines? I cannot thinke, said I, North-starre of my desires, that there can be so cruell a Thiefe, who, seeing those diuine lookes, would not cast his armes at your snowy feet; touching my coming hither, know: *Fernando* my friend (worthy al confidence) and my selfe haue thus on horseback followed after you; and if you please to giue a reward to my small labour (though to beare the name of your Seruant, is sufficient) vouchsafe that I may this night speak to you, since if you be willing, no occasion can bee wanting. I willing (said she?) if that be all the difficulty, neuer go from me. Oh no, that were vnfit, M<sup>rs</sup> said I, your Cousin will come out; and though my disguise might excuse her, not knowing mee, I am loth to put it to the venter. Well, a Gods name leaue me a while, said she, & expect me somewhere, where we may not be seene. Thus I returned to my friend, and making known my successe vnto him, withal the fright my disguise put my Mistris in, it gaue him notable content. And so as well to beguile the time of my expectation, to see my Mistris, as also to excuse the transformation of my base disguise, in imitation of the valiant *Hercules*, giuen ouer to the vnbridled Loue of *Iole*; by way of allusion hee tooke a subiect in these following Verses.

*Melting*

Melting Alcides, that strong Club of his  
 (That at his feet the twelve sad labours laid)  
 That skinne, (a glorious Constellation made)  
 whose Owner (long agoe high mounted) is;  
 With Iole doth change: who, glad of this,  
 Gives him her Reele and Spindle (womans Trade)  
 with which the Semi-god grows well apaid;  
 And to her worke to fall, thinkes not amisse.  
 She like a second sterne god of warre  
 Appeares; and he of wanton Venus shewes  
 A perfect draught, fond Lovers to descry.  
 Yet I not wonder, since I know there are  
 Stranger effects that Cupid doth disclose  
 with Bloud, Stars, words, and pow'rfull Sympathy.

Whilst we discoursed of these and other matters, *Clara* and her company were gotten to Supper; and she, ere the Cloth was taken away, faining an excuse, with her Maid onely accompanying her, came thorow the Court by our Chamber, and going toward the farthest part of it, sent her backe, onely bade her call, if she should be missed: I perceiving the deuce, soone followed after; and though my feete had wings, yet *Clara* fained the necessitie of her returne, hauing staid so long: onely said, Now, *Gerardo*, you haue no reason to complaine, since you see how true I am to your desires.

When, said I (owner of my life) can I forme complaints of you that may not proue vniust; since with this present fauour onely my reward is more, then had I vndergone an *Ulysian* Nauigation?

You doe ouer-much indeare it, said shee; but tell mee, Thinke you to see me at *Auila*, if, to my grieve, my Aunt change not her minde? though doubtlesse, in this I hope



hope Heauen will be propitious to me. To this I answered, From the very houre, nay instant, mine eyes beheld you, and my soule made election of your rare personage, I determined to follow you, not to *Anila*, which is so short a step, but euen the whole world ouer: and of this pure truth (deare Pledge) rest assured and satisfied.

Tis well (said my Mistris) I am alone, and like a vveake vessell acknowledging the aduantage of your strength, am therefore forced to belecue you, confident, that time at length must best discouer your constancie, and my affection. Yet tell me, meane you now to accompany me to *Gnadalupe*? No (my best Mistris) said I: for though I cannot enioy a greater happinesse; yet I feare, beeing missed at *Talbora*, it might happely breed some ouer-curious suspicion: to excuse which (as loth to hazzard your reputation) I had rather lose my longing. Your warinesse doth much please me (said she:) continue it still, and when you heare of our returne, neglect not, but that very night come to the vsuall stand; and till then, farewell, for I feare I haue staid too long. You must not so part, quoth I, to leaue mee in so long absence, without a fauour from you that may cherish my hopes of seeing you; and in so saying, with all my might, I tooke her about the necke, and to her seeming anger, and my glory, gathered the sweet flowers from her rare lips: at which, I cannot set downe, how altered, how angry shee was at my licentious boldnesse. But in such warres, peace is soone made: so loue, to whom we became both subiects, easily forced her to pardon my boldnesse, and confirme our friendship, by hanging a rich chaine about my necke, and precious iewell at it, which formerly serued to adorne her owne brest, saying, Though you haue angred mee, yet in hope of your repentance, receiue this pledge, in remembrance that she that now parts from you  
to

to *Guadalupe*, beares you with her, set in the secret Relicke of her heart. Faine would I haue replide, but the coming of her Maid hindered me; wherefore slipping into a corner, *Clara* passed on, and my selfe soone went backe to my Chamber, where *Fernando* and I with equall content tooke our rests, seeing my suite so much bettered by these prosperous beginnings: which being the Originals of my present ills, 'twas necessarie (my good *Leriano*) I should be thus prolix in recounting them.

We neuer so much as staid for day-light, but taking horse, with good speed, in few houres, *Fernando* got to his lodging, and I to my Fathers house.

Fifteene dayes my inflamed heart suffered in the torment of my Mistresses absence; and vpon the ioyfull night of her arriual, like a most punctuall Louer (*Fernando* in my company) some houres before the vsuall time, I expected the vp-rising of my bright Sunne, which at length, more glorious then he that vsually giues his light, appeared from her accustomed window. Excessiue ioy, they say, oft causeth sudden death: and though by heauens particular goodnesse, in me it wrought not that sorrowfull effect; yet it so troubled me, that I was scarce able to send forth those effectuall reasons, Loue and desire prompted me with. What my tyed tongue made difficult, I remitted to the action of my eyes & hands; with which laying hold on those whiter then snow of hers, imprinting my lips in their pure Chry-stall, my outward actions, declared my inward motions. In no lesse suspence was my loued Pledge, till *Fernando* with his accustomed freedom, loosing the knot of our amorous silence, kissing *Clara's* hand, and animating me to doe the like, I bade her welcome home, to which shee returned thanks, and straight ioyfully told me, that her stay in *Talbor* was now effected with her Aunt, at the imfortunate

tunate suite of her Cousin *Francisca*; which when I heard, I was euen transported vvith gladnesse: and as things stood, nothing could succeed more luckily to my purpose. I asked after her Cousin; she told me, wearinesse had sent her to sleepe; besides, shee meant not to make her acquainted with their loues: at which, I receiued no small content, as well in respect of secrecie, as that I might more freely conuerse with my Mistris.

Many a night we conferred in this close manner, so warily, that (excepting my friend) none else was priuie to our affections. Two yeeres were expired in these amorous meetings, in all which time I could neuer arriue at the wished end of my hopes, or obtaine a recompence for my long seruice. My heart was euen tired with the delays and obstacles *Clara* laid in my way, but the hopes she mingled with these distastes, drew me on to be still constant.

And now the Festiuall of our glorious Patron *S. James* was at hand; against which time great triumphes were preparing in the Citie of *Anila*, which posselt her with much feare, and mee with no lesse trouble, to thinke, that her friends, desirous happely to see them, would haue her along, whereby her returne might be vncertaine: And though this our doubt came not to be put in execution, yet serued as spurres to my liuely heate, and so with more violent importunitie, I pressed to be admitted into my Sweethearts chamber, against which, the difficulty was; That *Francisca* lay there, though this might be remooued by the experience of her sound sleeping; and withall, there wanted not good conueniencie, by reason of a window without grates, which opened to the roome next *Clara's* chamber; (a little doore being onely betweene) informed of which from her selfe, I requested her to giue mee a print of the Locke in soft Waxe, that by this deuice I might haue a

Key

Key made to serue the turne. With much ado, (after many sighes and teares, and continuall intreaties, her flintie heart ouercome) my plot tooke effect: and as soone as the Key was made, I deliuered it to her, to trie the certainty of it; which was such as my heart could wish, though for the returne of it, I needed more effectiuall teares and supplications; so stiffe vvas her obstinacie, or rather honestie. But vrging still my affection, and how much she vvas indebted to my loyall constancie, she could not but at last restore it: vwhen I had it, I could vwillingly haue made speeches to it, but for deferring my glory; and so clapping wings to my feet, like a second *Icarus*, with *Fernando's* helpe, I mounted, and lighting on the doore, gently opened it, and went in, where I soone found my lifes comforter: I embraced her often, and lest her Cousin might spie vs, we got within the Curtaines of my Mistresses Canopie, and quickly without more conditions, saue onely her modest contention, before I left the roome, I might reckon my selfe amongst the happiest, reaping at length the ioyfull fruit of what I had sowed with so much sorrow and labour. 'Twas now with me another world, and a new content: I had now possession of a fort, which I held once inexpugnable; I now feared no storme, since I was gotten to the hauen: So ignorant was I in the changes of blind Fortune. For her, I may well affirme, she was no lesse pleased then I, and at parting, with a vvorld of teares, she besought me not to forget her (which how farre vvas I from thinking of?)

From the very houre that I made her sole Mistris of my thoughts, (vvithout boast bee it spoken) neuer-certaine or vsure suspition kept me vvaking; or ieaiousie, vvatchfull: so true vvas she, though tractable to all, yet vvas there neuer any so hardy, as to offer so much as a daring thought to her beauty, euen to the time that I predominated in my  
D loues

lous height, and had absolute command, there beeing none but mine, no vvilling or nilling but vvhath I pleased. Thus liued I so comforted; confident, that no night-walkes, Letters, Tickets, Messages, Maskes, Ring-running, or Barriers, performed in her seruice, could make me once thinke that she would looke aside to wrong me.

At this time a Gentleman of our citie vsed almost hourly to frequent my Mistresses street; a young Gallant (though elder then my selfe) rich, an heire, and my especiall friend, vvhom I likewise often saw (though suspecting nothing) at the Church vvhere *Clara* vsed, vvhere he vvvas still one of the first, and that neuer failed: yet for all these fearefull motives, the least malicious pricke neuer touched my heart; not dreaming of any diligence of his toward my Mistresse. Many a time (I wholly ignorant) vvould *Fernando* aduertise me of this suspition, as foreseeing how much *Rodrigo* (for so was the Gentleman called) vvould puzzle vs. But as I vvvas in the midst of my happinesse, and absolute ouer my *Clara's* vvill, nothing could make me carefull, or thinke of a competitor.

Amongst many glad some nights I passed in her cherishing embraces, one (the first that stung me vvith ielousie) in midst of my iollitic, she (first coniuring mee, and earnestly facilitating the distaste I might receiue, and I assuring her not to be angry, greedy of the deliquery this mountaine of pregnant discourse promised) beganne the ensuing Discourse:

The feare I haue (my deare *Gerardo*) at any time to offend you, or giue a iust occasion, to make you suspect my loyall faith, enforceth mee to giue you early notice of the obstinate pretension of one, your neere friend. Heauen knowes, if, when *Clara* proceeded hither, my heart were not ready to burst vvithin me. Shee went on: *Rodrigo* (my  
choler



choler now at full) that against my consent employes his foolish thoughts in my seruice, as you may haue seene in diuers occasions: of which, if I till now forbore to giue you account, it was, that I thought my disdain, and the small comfort he receiued, might make him desist from his purpose: but seeing that from my deniall his intent takes greater hold, I could no longer conceale thus much: nor this paper, which to day I receiued from the handes of a maid of my Aunts, who colouring her boldnesse, with telling me, it was from my father, made me take and reade it, desiring after an answer, which she had, such as her shamelesse proceeding deserued. This is the perfect truth, that the Ticker, I she, that receiued it, but free from a thought of offending you, which I shall neuer haue as long as heauen shall please to keepe mee yours. And giuing mee the paper she was silent, and I lesse confident in my securitie, resolving thenceforward to be more warie, as hauing to contend with a powerfull opposite.

I could not but chide her for deferring the aduice, for the inconueniencie it might haue caused, since the carefull solicitation of a new Suiter, might easily discouer the affection of secure Louers. But wee were soone friends, and I somewhat calmer, demanded what answere she sent by the Messenger, who replied, that first drawing another paper, fained to be the Letter out of her pocket, she tore it, threatening the wench withall, that her Aunt should punish her lewdnesse: with which somewhat satisfied, I tooke leave, and going out, went to *Fernando's* Lodgings, who when he had left mee with my Mistresse, vsed to returne home. I came to his doore as he was newly going to bed, to his no small admiration to see mee so hastily with him, though by the sadnes of my looke, he conceiued some sudden change in my affaires: After wee had saluted, and sate downe in



his chamber, taking out *Rodrigo's* Letter, by the light of a white Wax candle, I read it to my friend, and which I can neuer forget, these ensuing contents:

### RODRIGO TO CLARA.

*My minde fearing (as in reason it may) a iust punishment for my boldnesse, (yet confident in the clemencie of your noble brest) expects a definitive sentence of life or death, either to perish in the wanes of your disdain, or by your gracious hand to be raised out of a sea of troubles that oppresse mee. I shall receiue comfort, if you strike the sayles of your rigour, which hath beene so cruell as my affection constant, which springs from a heart that offers it selfe to your mercie: receiue it faire Dame, but with more compassion use it then the afflicted owner; whose life and death resteth to the arbitrement of your glad or unhappy answer.*

I thinke (noble friend) neither venomous troden Viper, or poysonous Serpent in sandie *Africa*, were euer so stirred with rage, as my enflamed brest, by that time I had ended my aduersaries Letter: and certainly, had not my friend caught hold on me, I had then sought him, and reuenged my furious ielousie. But my friend with reasons, worthy his wisdom and discretion, stayed mee, mitigating my violent passion. Hee first thoroughly vnderstood the cause of my distaste, and next the Papers owner; both which considered, he proceeded thus: By heauen (*Gerardo*) when I saw you so full of furie, I verily supposed, you had found this Letter vnwittingly about *Clara*, and that on her part way had beene made to some greater mischief: But beware, be not too rash, the fort is better defended then you can wish; she her selfe is her owne guide, her owne guard, what would you more? Why complaine you? *Clara* is faultlesse,

faultlesse, *Rodrigo* not to be condemned: for, for each man to good himselfe the best he can, where hee knowes no detriment to parties, or preiudice of friends, I thinke 'tis tolerable. Not hee, nor any, saue my selfe alone, know your thoughts; so he is blameles. It concernes you to be careful, that since you haue more eyes added to your waking care, you must take heed, and for a time leaue the enioying your Mistris, till you may with more quiet obtaine your pleasure.

These and the like reasons *Fernando* knew so well to lay before me, that he conuincd me to him: so (determined to follow his aduice) we tooke leaue, and I betooke mee to my home and rest. Euer after (considering how waighzie an occasion I had in hand) I went alwaies well armed, and hauing a newemie, vvas not too secure in the defence of my person, purposing (if ought should happen) by way of anticipation, to be still before-hand. *Fernando* and I often met *Rodrigo* in his amorous pursuite in *Clara's* street early and late, vvhich made vs for feare of being discouered, vary more shapes then *Proteus*. One night amongst others, (the first of my misfortunes) *Fernando* and I vvere neere the windowes, and hauing taken stand, expected the houre to come that I might enter, at such time as two, muffled came towards vs; and drawing neere, were knowne to my friend; vvhose turning to me, said: There goes your Riual and his man, vvhose meane to take notice of vs, (as indeed they went about it:) So that supposing it was best for vs to be gone, for feare of some ill accident, I told *Fernando* so much; who, though hee liked my counsell, yet was vnwilling vve should forsake the place, fearing lest *Rodrigo* might at the instant possesse it, and that *Clara* vnaduertised, opening the window to call mee, and seeing two men there, vvithout distinction might make the signe, whereby *Rodrigo*

D 3

happely

happely would fall into the right suspicion, which was sufficient to make vs still keepe our place. A good while wee remained thus discoursing, and *Rodrigo* appeared not; till at last, when lest we thought of it, we might see him passe by: for hauing fetcht a large compasse, hee came at our backes thorow the same street; which much distasted mee, and *Fernando* no lesse; for wee were now engaged, and though we might haue departed without beeing knowne, (disguized) yet the aforelaid occasion enforced our stay. The time of my Mistresses approach was now neere, which *Rodrigo* (it seemed) little dreamt of, and made mee as fearefull as impatient, and perceiuing the like passion in my friend, seeing withall how dangerous it was for my loue to be discouered, and yet how hardly it could bee auoyded without some violence, we determined by dint of sword to rebate their vnmanly proceeding: and vvith this resolution, without giuing a word, clapping aside our Clokes, and laying hands to our swords and targets, wee suddenly flue vpon them; who perceiuing our intent, with no lesse forwardnesse met vs in the encounter. *Rodrigo* I hated deadly, who falling to my lot, without warding the point of his sword I ran on, and luckily clozing, (not sauoured by my aduersaries weaknesse, for to say truth, hee was a valiant Gentleman) gaue him some wounds, at which he fell, crying out for confession: which assoone as I heard, supposing I had made sure worke, I returned where I had left *Fernando* and the seruant, but found them retired further into the next street, (purposely done by my friend) where making a stand, he quickly ran my youth thorow the sword arme, and with a back-blow, sliced him ouer the noddle, leauing him to cry out as his Master had done before him. The noyse had raised many persons, as well at *Segundo Ollano's* windowes, as at the rest of the neighbourhood; from whence  
seeing

seeing some issue out, crossing thorow by-Lanes, and flying from those that followed, wee soone (without beeing knowne to any) got to our Lodgings.

*Rodrigo* (as you heard) was a gentleman wealthy, and well allied by blood in the Citie, so that by morning nothing was in mens mouths but this businesse: the sorrow was generall, each man heaping vp confused coniectures, but none could hit vpon the right: from himselfe nothing was to be gotten, for his wounds had made him yet senselesse, which (as we cunningly learnt) were diuers and dangerous; two especially, one that was thorow the right side of his bodie, and the other in his throte, accompanied with a terrible gash ouer the face.

My father vsed extraordinary diligence to finde out the authors, and so to punish them, but *Rodrigo's* man declaring the place, disguise, and disposition of the actors, hee was wary in his proceeding, as ghesling the businesse to haue bin premeditated, and the defamed honour of some person of equall merits interested in the same. Whilst this businesse was thus in the heate, by *Fernando's* aduice, in the night time, we came not into my *Clara's* street; and if in the day time, for my comfort I desired but to passe that way, 'twas like *Capuchines*, our eyes fixt on the earth; though now and then loue ouercame my feare, and would force me sometimes to looke vp for a sight of my Sunnes comfort from her Easterne window.

Within some twenty dayes *Rodrigo* being vpon the mending hand, gaue way to his friends to visite him: *Fernando* and my selfe (by good prouidence) beeing not the last, nor which least frequented his Lodging: and one time amongst others, finding him alone, wee earnestly requested him to make knowne to vs the cause of that vnluckie accident; and this aswell to bee assured of *Clara's* loyaltie, as also to dis-

seemle the matter. But *Rodrigo* in a manner refusing, yet seeing my earnestnesse and my friends desire, at last he began: Though it grieue me to the soule to renew the occasion and motiue of my wounds, yet relying on your secrecie, I will make it knowne vnto you. It is now fully fixe moneths, that I haue beene a true frequenter of *Segunda Octauio's* street, and a Suiter to his Neece *Clara* at his house; who, in respect of her rare beauty, I suppose, is not vnknown to either of you: in all which time, I haue vsed many seuerall diligences to make knowne my affection to her, which though she might easily haue read in my eyes, that haue expressed my inward passion, (besides the shewes and triumphes which I haue publicly for her sake set forth) yet my paines haue beene all bootlesse, neither had I euer so much as a looke from those faire eyes for a recompence. Who but a Prodigie of nature could haue neglected those lively and seruient demonstrations of mine? Who but she, blind to the teares that I haue shed, and deafe to my parching sighes, vvhich for her cruelty I haue scattered to the vvind? To bee brieft, all my hopes haue produc't no other fruit, then vvhat you now behold in me: for hauing assayed by diuers meanes, particularly by the sollicitation of a maid of hers, to effect my desire, I wrote vnto her by that partie, Lines, vvvhich had you seene, might haue deserued some compassion, euen from a brest of Adamant. This *Rodrigo* so feelingly vttered, as might haue caused pitie in any lesse interested then my selfe in the businesse: and so to a different intent, I interrupted him, saying; And receiued you Sir, any answer? if you did, me thinkes your suite should not haue beene so desperate. Marry did I, quoth he, and such an one as my seruices did merit. At this I quite lost footing, my iudgement was cleane rent off the hindges, supposing *Clara* now prooued false to me: but *Rodrigo* did  
soone

soone ridde me of that doubt and iealousie, saying ; These wounds, whose skarres you see, were my answer, and that which euer I expected : for the Messenger I imploide, ha- uing told mee I should repaire some certaine dayes after, for the resolution of my businesse to one of *Segundo's* win- dows (as my vnfortunate *Starres* would haue it ) going at the appointed time, I found two men at a corner of the street, muffled, whom I could not by any meanes I vsed force from the place, till fetching a compasse backe vpon them, I came so neere, that doubtlesse they knew me, for in- stantly they set vpon me, and gaue me these hackes, and had certainly sooner put their businesse in execution, if they had sooner knowne me, for it must needs bee, that they lay purposely in waite for me. By their valour (though it were darke, and they disguised) I ghesse'd them to bee per- sons of quality. Since my hurts, I came to notice of my Let- ters hard vsage, and how *Clara* threatned the Maid that de- liuered it; wherby I suppose, that *Segundo Octauio* hauing no- tice of what passed, caused some of his kindred to watch me. But heauen hath been pleased to free me from their murde- rous intent, and ere long I hope to be abroad, & not to want the help of friends that may returne them the like.

Gentle Sir, said *Fernando*, 'tis no fit circumstance you haue declared, to confirme your rash determination ; for *Segundo Octauio* (besides his pacifique goodnesse) is dis- creet (as we all know:) and put case *Clara* should informe, or he beleue his Neece, hee is not a man to bee moued so slightly, to the execution of such bloody rigour; besides, neither he, nor any one would presume that you would make court to any Pledge of his, otherwise, then to make her a Wife: & therefore giue no credit to a rash opinion, or ill grounded suspicion. I am at such a passe (quoth the sicke vvounded Gentleman) that though I haue had these, and  
other.



other considerations I am not to bee blamed, if I thinke or speake what you haue heard. In fine if vvhat I haue told you, touching *Segundo*, should be otherwise; it must bee, that either this Dame, or her kinf-woman had their Gallants vvhom it concerned, to turne mee out of the street; and it shall goe hard, (if Heauen fauour me) but one day I may meete vvith them. Ah (thought I to my selfe) 'twas a vvise fellow therefore, that said; *Better kill an enemy, then let him liue with a wrong*: and had I (as lay in my power) done so, I had neuer (friend *Leriano*) scene my selfe in this lamentable vvretched plight, in which your charitable presence found me. And before we left *Rodrigo*, he thinking his owne distastes were irksome to vs, desired to giue vs a pleasing farewell in this following Sonnet, vvich hee had made to expresse the rigour of his danger.

*If, of a vvretched state and all forlorne,  
That be the vvretched's st; not at all to be:  
( Since in condemned Pris'ners, we may see,  
Though they must die, they'd not, not haue beene borne.  
Then, (by obliuion) to be slowly torne,  
Or vext with absence in extremitie,  
Or plagu'd with rage of restless iealousie,  
These nothing are to not being lou'd (a scorne:)  
He that's forgotten, yet, a being had;  
He that is absent, may returne againe,  
He that is iealous, may finde constancie.  
But still to follow shadowes, lone, in vaine:  
Still to be hopelesse (worse then to be mad)  
That neuer was, is, or, shall happy be.*

In these Discourses we past a great part of the afternoon; when at length, taking leaue of *Rodrigo*, my deare friend and I marched to my Mistresses streete; debating by the way,

way, of the mischief our enemy might do vs, in the curiosity of his revenge, if happily time did not alter his mind. For this cause therefore, said *Fernando*, it were fit you talked with *Clara*, and contrived some better course for the privacy of your secret meetings. This, (said I) and my not knowing whether the past skirmish have caused any alteration in *Segundo Octavio's* house, makes me melancholly, and unfavoury to my selfe; this night therefore without doubt must I be resolved.

'Twere well (said he) your desire could take effect, though, for *Clara* to come to the window, without any advertisement, I hold it very difficult. Let vs but goe thither (quoth I) and perhaps my desire alone may bring her, and that which falls not out to day, may to morrow happen better.

Without thinking on our way, and busie in discourse, wee were (ere aware) got into my Mistresses streete, when my selfe (not thinking to be so happy) lifting vp my eyes toward the window, might see my Mistris leaning on the grate as sad and pensative as I was upon the way: she beckened me with her hand to stay; wherefore most ioyfully obeying, *Fernando* and I stood talking, and making as if we looked another way, till *Clara* returning to the window, brought a paper in her hand, and looking to see if the street were cleere of Spies, cast it downe; when taking it vp, and withall a short leave, we got vs two or three streets off, where opening the Ticket, I might reade these Contents.

I know not (deare loved Sir) what excuse you can make, for so long forgetfulness; neither can I attaine to the cause, that your most firme and true Slave hath given you, worthy such rigour, so great crueltie. 'Tis now twenty dayes since I last saw you, and two thousand yeeres, that my soule longs for you. May I deserve this night to see you, and know from your owne lips, what mortall distaste keeps you from me.

Scant.

Scantnesse of time (quoth *Fernando*) hath made her forget to firme her name : to which (said I.) Thinkes my best friend, that these lines haue not suell sufficient to adde to the flame that consumes me ? I am all sadnesse, till I satisfie her for my slacknesse. I v wonder (replide hee) that *Clara* should be ignorant, how important our absence is, though loue be painted blinde, and a very child, runnes thorow all hazzards, euen to cast his followers headlong.

By this time it grew to be night, and Moone-shine ; so by the accustomed time, we went toward the street, where we found my Mistris in expectation ; and looking about vs, to see if all were sure, with my friends vsuall helpe, I mounted, and taking my afflicted Mistris in mine Armes, soone satisfide her vniust complaints ; telling her withall, how impossible it was, to auoid the late encounter. Shee gaue me to vnderstand how much that businesse had scandaliz'd her friends, and how vehement *Segundo's* suspicion was, that the cause of *Rodrigo's* vvounds liued in his house, and other matters to this purpose that much troubled me : though desperate loue that bereaued me of my vnderstanding faculcies, made me set slightly by all accidents, and determined still to goe on in my loue, tooke leaue for the present, willing her thence-forward (to excuse such another bickering) that though she chanced to see any body vnder her window, she should neither call, nor make signe, till she perceiued the pulling out of a Handkerchiefe : so finding *Fernando*, who stayed for me, we returned to our seuerall homes.

In this manner, I repaired many nights after to my Mistresses shelter : but variable fortune, that began to shew her vsuall condition, holding it high time to cast me from the Throne, whither, to make my fall the greater, she had raised me, would not that my delights should any longer proceed

in

in the same calmenesse, that hitherto, and therefore bred a curious itching in the imagination of some neighbour, who, busied with thinking of the past conflict, his superfluous diligence gaue him an open view of my night-walke, and frequent entrance, which soone after, began to be common talke in euery mans mouth; howsoeuer, I presumed vpon the secret: and one time amongst others, being carelesse enough of any such matter, my good friend, taking me by the hand, told me how necessarie it was, to endeouour by all possible meanes, that the prosecution of our loues might be by some more hidden place; or, if this could not bee, that I should resolutely suffer; or altogether retire my selfe from *Clara's* friendship: for in the contrary, he fore-saw a Tragicall euent.

I much wondred, and was not a little angry at the speech: and so requested him to tell me plainly the cause that moued him to this harsh counsell, to forget her, without whom it was impossible for me to breathe a minut longer: and speaking this somewhat passionately: *Fernando* perceiving my sudden alteration, with his accustomed discretion thus stayd me: Friend *Gerardo*; If my true affection, and that you are perswaded of it, did not fully credit my intention, I would not so (rudely as you may thinke) diuert you from the dangerous course you hold; nor giue you those particular motiues I haue for doing so. If your loue, egresse, time, place, and each circumstance were not publike, I should not aduise you against what were iust & due to your Mistresses faith. Your loues, indeed (that you goe in & out at *Clara's* Chamber) are euery where notorious: Many haue told me so much, (though I fained to know nothing;) we are both forewarned, you are wise: thinke this to be a happy lot: and chiefly, my *Gerardo*, belecue that my care is onely of your safety: for, for mine owne part,  
if

If your minde bee to proceed, I must not leaue you till death. So he ended, leauing me in the confusion you may wel imagine. Doubt of my friend I had none, no more had I any answer. I heard how reasonably he spoke, and perceiued how fit it was I should follow reason: on the other side, her affection was so rooted in me, that but to thinke time might (as a thing mortall and perishable) consume it, strooke me into an Extasis of extremities. It was (mee thought) impossible to leaue her; nay, the least thought of her: so with a deepe sigh, sprung from my secret soule, I thus answered. My heart (best friend) hath not felt a blow of more wounding paine, then your reasons haue giuen it; besides, the despaire of remedy, hath brought mee to that wofull passe I know not what to say. I see a miserable and aduerse ruine threatens my affaires, nor finde I so much as a Prop, to stay vp my weake frame. I see I runne headlong, that my thoughts, my discourses, are all to pieces, and my cleere Iudgement, formerly guided by reason, now faint and feeble without a Superiour power: though I know this to be most true, yet know I not how to follow what you aduize.

Well, this night will I see whether *Clara* can light vpon any better sally for our businesse, and accordingly must we shape our course. With this resolution (day passing on) *Fernando* tooke leaue till the prefixed time, by when wee came better provided, then formerly to my Mistresses street.

The night was as cleere and calme as might be; so deafe and hush, as bred in me a most secure confidence. Euery thing (me thought) saged to the measure of my desire, as hauing neuer found lesse lets, fewer inconueniences: for where misfortune must come, till she be euen at hand, all is broad high-way, and delightful passage. *Clara* stayed longer

longer then she was vsed to doe; inſomuch that I was once about to haue turned back; but the Dice were caſt, and I muſt ſtand to my vnluckie chance. So at laſt ſhe appeares, and (the Signall giuen/vp I got; and being with her, without ſcruple gaue my ſelfe to her embraces, & thoſe Armes whoſe cloſe culling made mee mad with ioy. Yet I haue ſince thought with my ſelfe how diſquieted and troubled I found her when ſhe would ſpeake to mee; for ſhe would breake off abruptly in the miſt of her diſcourſe: Or when I aſked her a queſtion, ſhee would anſwere quite from the purpoſe. Yet blinded with my too true affection, I perceiued not her deceitfull hugges, nor marked thoſe cunning accidents. At firſt ſhe deſired mee to vndreſſe my ſelfe; and this, more earneſtly then at other times, yea, with ſuch importunitie, that any one, not mad like mee, had doubtleſſe knowne her diuellish minde. A while (ſeeing my vnwillingnes) ſhe left importuning, but plyed me againe, & not long after deſired to take of my ſtrong, ſure (which ſhe called troubleſome) Coate of Maile; for her eaſe (forſooth) and though in theſe, and other ſtrange demands, I ſatiſfide her, my breaſt could not harbour the leaſt ſuſpition, to think they were in my preiudice. When I conſider this Womans baſe intention, it maketh me rage like a mad-man, and call on Heauen for vengeance, for my ill recompenced affection. But assuredly (friend *Leriano*) ſhee will not faile of a due reward, that hangs ouer her diſloyall treacherous head.

To returne to my Story, not paſſing halfe an houte had I beene with her whom I tooke to bee my greateſt treaſure, ſureſt refuge: when with an vnlookt-for noiſe I might heare the doores fly off the Hindges, and ready to ſtart vp at the ſudden accident (as thinking now what might be the matter) it might well haue gone ill with me: for *Clara* cloſely imbra-



imbracing me, (I at length perceiuing her treacherie) before I could vnfasten my selfe from her, her Vnkle, and most of his seruants, were vpon mee, with more Armes and noise, then were fit to endanger a tender Youth of eighteene: So, that perceiuing the extreme danger I was in; and thinking to haue laid hold vpon a Pistoll at my girdle, I might see *Clara* haue it in her hand; wherefore knowing my ruine, and hearing her Vnkle cry, Kill him, Kill him: drawing my Sword, and recouering the doore by which I was to passe, in spight of all that withstood mee, I leaped out of the window into the street, helped onely with the butt of a Halberd, that made me come sooner to the ground, leauing my Hat, Cloke and Pistoll as spoiles behind me. As soone as I got vpon my legges, I bade *Fernando* (who heard all that passed) follow me; and in a trice Bird-like wee vanished.

I could not bragge of my escape, hauing layne in afterwards almost a moneths time of my hurts, with a cut in my Head, and a thrust into the Groine, which growing as then cold and stiffe vpon me, *Fernando* was forced to take me on his backe, and like another *Anclises*, conuey me to a Monastery of *Dominican* Fryers, where I was charitably receiued, and cured. *Fernando* at my request (for I feared to make him accessarie) went home to his lodging.

When this misfortune hapned, my Fathers trienniall Gouvernement was expired, and hee summoned to giue account of his behauiour to a seuerer Iudge, appointed (as the manner is) by the supreme Counsell. This party caused much search to be made, for the finding me out: and after many diligences vsed, there wanted not a Spy to informe him of the truth; so that notwithstanding the breach of Sacred priuiledge, and the protestations the Fryers made against him, he caused me to be fetcht in, and in a  
close

close Chaire, conueyed to a strong hold, where with sufficient guard he left me Prisoner. My louing Father much resenting this affront (though setting a good face on the matter) procured by aggrauations, censures, and excommunication, that I might be restored again to the Church, against which, much was alledged; and what in proofes and seuerall orders, I endured a tedious imprisonment.

All this while I could not light vpon the true cause, that so seduced *Clara* against me, whose declaration firmed vnder her owne hand, was shewed me by my Brother *Leoncio* to my greater confusion: in which, shee not onely accused me, but pretended also a Rape; and that (because shee sought to defend her selfe) I had violently set a Dagger to her brest; for feare of which (promise of marriage preceeding on my part) shee was content to condescend to my pleasure; (a thing so contrary as you haue heard, and Heauen can witnesse from the truth.) To this was added the breach of the house, and other circumstances, that left my businesse vpon so foule termes, that had not the holy Sanctuarie beene interposed, my life had been dangerously hazzarded.

The deposition of that rauenous Viper, was most fearfully cruell, intended onely to glut her selfe with my blood. The Paper I had in mine owne hand, and though I knew it to bee hers, I could scarce giue credit to mine eyes, as thinking they wanted their visible facultie. I was astonisht, amazed, my Iudgement vtterly lost, and in this moode requested those that were in my company to leaue me; and casting my selfe on my Bed, the most part of that day I spent in pittifull lamentation, growing vvith my griefe so desperate, that had I not stood in awe of a more eternall punishment, I should haue made quicke ridance of this fraile mortall life. At length considering I

was a Christian, and how vnworthy she was of this my resentment, I determined for euer to blot her abhorred remembrance out of my thoughts, as you may well perceiue in the ensuing Sonnet.

*Babel and Syren in thy tongue and tone,  
Chymæra in each monstrous diff'rent part;  
Hyena, Crocodile, in voice in mone;  
Sphinx in thy cruell and ambiguous Art.  
Thou Cane and Circes, Hear be to wound the heart,  
Hast Diomed quiet (till trod vpon  
Serpent vnseen in flow'rs, we feele thy smart.)  
Faile Spring to see to, that turn'st stickes to stone:  
Now I thy double-dealing plainly see,  
And like Vlysses, fixe on reasons Tree.*

Some two moneths after my imprisonment, my father vnderstanding the change of my affection, leauing my businesse vpon indifferent termes, and my Brother *Leoncio* with me, with his seruants and the rest of his Family went back to *Madrid*.

My stormes & shipwracke ceased not heere, rather from this instant took new beginning: for within a while after my Father came to the Court, it pleased Heauen to take him to mercy, bereauing me of my greatest worldly felicitie. As soone as newes was brought vs, my Brother straight tooke Post. And though now in *Talbor* we had many friends, whom as wel my Father, as *Leoncio* and my selfe had purchased: yet I soone felt and bewailed his absence; for when he was gone, *Rodrigo* declared himselfe my open enemy, and my Brother and me for Authors of his wounds. There wanted not some friends of mine, that mightily opposed him, and he that neuer faile me, was the good *Fernando*, in  
whose

whose discreet conuersation I found comfort in midst of my extremities; it was not the least that afflicted me, that *Clara* should againe put me in minde of her, by vvriting a Letter full of deceitfull excuses, & reasons wanting all foundation. Shee would haue indeed qualified her proceeding, and the manner of her confession. For the first, that she was betrayde by her kindred, who perswaded her, that, to be the onely way to soulder her lost honour, and to make mee her Husband, which I had promised her, as she (though falsely) affirmed. For the latter, she was enforst for feare of death, if she did not something to mitigate her past fault, by confessing in that manner against me. Yet the circumstances of my wounds, & her disposing them, on one side disarming me, on the other with new extremes securing me, the better to betray me into her friends clutches; these she could neither salue, nor free her selfe from a vehement suspicion; that, either frighted, or conuincd by her friends, she consented with them to my death, and the reuenge of her amorous wrong; which failing in the effect, accommodating themselves to the time, they were forced to direct her in the way of my imprisonment. And though as yet this my suspicion may seeme slight, by what followes you shall bee satisfide; since *Clara* in her after actions not onely confirmed it, but gaue further testimonies of her incontinency: for had shee been loyall, nothing could haue made her seeke my destruction; and were this pardonable, her libidinous leuity, how can that free her from blame? I will not (Noble friend) anticipate my griefes, with those wofull Lawes, you shal heare in my Relation; and therefore haue patience, till each circumstance come in it's proper ranke and place: Let mee onely tell you, that her Letter so stirred my offended brest, that hurried on with such a violent choler, I sent her a perpetual abhorring answer on the back side of it, as followeth.

*Base Pandora! thy curst minde  
 Is nor loste, nor unkinde,  
 Nor wil I a frowne allow  
 Once, vnto thy falsen brow:  
 These were termes might wel appeare  
 Where true loue just dealing were.  
 (Language for the chaster fit)  
 Such as you deserue not it.  
 Wooltish woman farewell: Place  
 Where I first her false embrace  
 Felt, farewell: Awake then, Fame,  
 Lowly my affront proclaime:  
 What though her lasciuious Fire,  
 Kindled once my rash desire,  
 And bereau'd my soule? Alas!  
 I like Flaxe or Paper was,  
 Or Bay-leaves that sindged were:  
 Yet, their Victors wreath I beare:  
 Once, (Adonis-like) mine eyes,  
 Lustfull Venus, were thy prize:  
 And, as she, the bloodlesse youth,  
 Reader flow'rs beheld in ruth.  
 So thou ioyd'st when as each vaine  
 Flow'd from me, and earth did staine.  
 But at length in safety, I  
 Snister thee then Daphne flie.*

I know, such anemie might deserue the bitterest fare-  
 vvell that could be, at least what I wrote, was enough to de-  
 terre her from prosecution, or persecuting vvith her vexing  
 Lines. Not long after, my brother *Leonis* seeing how  
 slowly my affaires vvent on, determined at last to put in ex-  
 ecution, vvhat he had long before purposed, but for dis-  
 quieting

quieting my mother: and so having beforehand given mee notice, vpon Twelſe-dayes Eue, he came vvith a couple of horſes to the Caſtle gate, and leauing a truſtie ſeruant to tend them, came vp ſtaires, vvhere I was expecting: and hauing ſeene him, nothing ſlacke to fetch a ſword ſecretly hidden in my chamber; and ſo amongſt the Keepers wee vvent, from whom vve ſoone freed our ſelues; for they vn-willing to hazard where the profit was ſmall, and the danger great, calling out for helpe onely in the Kings name, ranne haſtily into the ſtreet: So leaping into our Saddles, we ſoone left the Citie behind vs, onely I got my man vp behind me: at what time the Towne was euen now comming to the Keepers ayde vpon vs. That night, by the vvay toward *Toledo*, before morning vvee got to a Village called *Ocea*, where my brother had the greateſt part of his Lands and inheritance. There, more ſecurely, and free from the delayes of a lingring ſuite, ſome perſons of qualitie mediating, we began to take the ſpeedieſt courſe to end my buſi- neſſe; and being in ſome likelihood of agreement, the ſudden death of Captaine *Eſcobar*, *Clara's* father, marred all, our treaties and conditions for the time (as then) breaking off. Some moneth after this, I vnderſtood by a Letter from my loyall *Fernando*, how *Clara* one night had ſtolne out of *Segundo's* houſe, to the old Gentlemans great ſorrow, and whole Cities ſcandall; and the more, vvhen (all diligence vſed) there could be no tidings had of her. Touching this vnexpected accident, my friend vvrote mee diuers aduer- tiſements, vvwhich bred no ſmall trouble to me, muſing what violent fancie might mooue her to ſuch a leuitie and mad- neſſe: neither vvvas I perfectly my ſelfe, ſuppoſing, that vvhen I leaſt ſuſpected, I ſhould ſee her enter my Lodging: ſo that fearing ſuch an accident, vvithin two dayes after, I reſolved on a journey to the Citie of *Valladolid*; whither



some yeeres before, the Court vvas remooued, from the ancient seat, my loued Countrey. The aforesaid doubt clapt quicke spurres to my desire, vvhich made mee leaue *Ocea*, taking a faithfull seruant *Senabria* vvith mee, vvhom I much affected. I omit some ill-boding signes that that day happened to mee: and though I vv ere neuer that vvay superstitious, yet had I obserued, that vvhen being out of the towne in a plaine field, my horse stumbled and threw mee, I had neuer falne into the cruell and trecherous hands of mine enemies. But returning to my iourney, about Sun- set we trampled on the fiery flints of the ancient *Mantua*, leauing behind vs, on the fertile bankes of golden *Tagus*, and hidden *Xarama*, that rare celestially *Aranjuez*, viewing by those famous and Chrifall streames, the dry and withered flowers, how as well they, as the other, accompanied the swift and celebrated *Mansanares*, vvho in his low siluer margent, strewed in his patched *Prinet*, *Trifol*, *Ianiper*, and *Vernine*, the teares hee had distilled for the absence of his great Master: The very snowie cragg es, and staring mountaine *Guadarrama* teating it selfe; for euen rockes and insensible creatures, vvith their mourning made knowne their sorrow for so vnderferued a change. And to deale truly, my eyes accompanied the sad streames with teares: which effect was increast, by seeing the desert streetes, vn furnisht Market-places, doores turn'd to mud-walles, houses disinhabited, Barres broken, and Bay-windowes dammed vp, all topsie-turvie, all euen a *Chaos* of frightfull confusion; mourning, farewells, sighing and grieuing: so that I stood vpon thornes till I was gotten from my ruined *Troy*: And hauing seene my mother and home, the next day by Sunne- rising, I turned my backe to the Village, travelling on faire and softly, accompanied with a world of people, that left the motherlesse forsaken Court: for so in misery, mens

owne children, euen their owne flesh leaue them.

No sooner was I out of the intangling Groue of the Kings royall House called *Del Campo*, when one of a reasonable handfomnesse ouertooke mee, riding vpon a well-paced, flea-bitten horse; who saluting vs, asked mee, if I trauelled toward *Valladolid*; and telling him, I did: expressing some signes of gladnesse, he told me he went the same way; and that (if so I pleased) would bee glad of my company. I that desired nothing more, (for hee seemed a good fellow by his fashion) with no lesse courtesie returned my acceptance, and we agreed. That day we dined at a little Village; where finding house-roome and Viſtuals scarce, after we had a little rested, (fearing to light vpon no better conueniencie for lodging at night) I commanded *Senabria* to make haste before to the Hill-towne, and take vp lodging early for vs: and my companion that counsell'd him to this, hastening him forward, obtained his desire: so wee two remaining alone in the coole of the euening, then took horse & went on our way: and amongst other discourse, my companion demanded accidentally (as it were) of me, if I had euer trauelled that way before. I answered, not; not dreaming of the plot prepared for mee; which fell out pat for him, as to mee vnfortunately. It grew to bee towards night, when my guide leading on in a blind path, I supposing we were out of the rode-way, told him so much: his answer was, that this was a shorter cut to the Towne whither we were to goe; with vvhich way, out of long experience, and often iourneying, hee was vvell acquainted. Behind me I might heare some trampling of horses; and therefore thought what he affirmed vvas true, and so beleeu'd it. This foolish confidence made mee vvholly lose that ayme, which one encompassed with so late troublesome affaires might haue had: for in stead of that warinesse with

vvhich I vsed to be fore-armed , not considering now with vvhat vigilancie mine enemies might come vpon me, I ran my selfe into a thicket with one I knew nor, and in a Countrey I was vnacquainted with. But my misfortune was directed by a superiour power, and it was not possible for me to auoid it. Let mee tell you, Signior *Leriano*, wee had scarce trauelled a short league in the narrow path, when three on horsebacke ouertooke vs; which, to my seeming, were the same that a good while followed vs behind. My companion went somewhat aloofe , so that I remained in midst of the foure , encompassed on both sides with the close darke Mountaine : and thus we went silently on, till night came on vs; and when I least thought of the future successe, I might heare my selfe called by my name : and certainly (were it not ridiculous to thinke so) I should sweare, it was the very voyce of *Clara* I heard; and with the sudden alteration this apprehension begat in me, about to turne my horse, my trecherous companion turned his vpon me more nimble, and before I was aware, stricke fiercely at me : the blow (doubtlesse) saued my life; for cutting my horses raines, when I looked about, I had nothing left to guide him with , so the other three had leysure to fasten some wounds vpon me : yet standing with my sword to my defence, as well as I was able, one of the three (whom by the falling off of his Vizard, I knew to be *Rodrigo*) discharged a Pistoll; but Heauen was pleased to keepe the bullet from me; which (I suppose) wounded my horse : for the beast at the very instant , (I vnable for want of a Bridle to rule him) like a whirl-wind rusht into those brakes and thickets; and (though they followed) ranne so fast , that 'twas impossible to ouertake him : or happely they imagined his owner was deadly wounded; for I my selfe too thought so, perceiuing my spirits faile me, and my extreme fainting,

with

with which (I remember) I fell from my horse, and so remained, till such time as I found my selfe in your company: and that which makes mee most wonder, is, your finding me so farre from the Mountaine, in the mid-way to this citie, on such a kind of Cariage as you described: whereby I ghesse, that some or other before your arriqall, began to do me that charitable office, though to be left in such manner, quite passeth my intelligence; onely assured I am of your most affectionate care, for which I owe the seruice of my vnfortunate life, as restored by your selfe (next heauen) to your vnhappy seruant. Here *Gerardo* ended his dolefull relation, whom *Leriano* re-embrac't, and condoling with him his hard successe; teares standing in his eyes, hee thus cuts him off: No more ceremonies betwixt vs, deare Sir, your mishaps make me as compassionate, as desirous to helpe you (as I haue promised) in your reuenge. Certaine I am (quoth he) that be it neuer so bitter on the traitour *Rodrigo*, none will condemne mee, time onely must produce the euent; for as yet, I thinke it best to dissemble my wrongs.

*Gerardo's* long discourse had made it time for his friend and him to suppe; which ended, and they passing the rest of the night in sleepe, as soone as it was day, their Oast awaked them, wishing them to get vp, if they pleased to see the execution of three famous prisoners in the Citie: which when *Leriano* heard, hee demanded what their crime was, but the Oast could giue them no certaine knowledge; onely he said, the common report was, that for a strange robbery they had committed: vvhercupon the two calling a seruant for their Clothes, and mine Oast seeing their care to rise, told them they need not make so much haste, for that they were to passe by his doore, and hee would giue them notice: not long after they might see an infinit number,

ber, and some religious persons, passe by the window; and amongst them, the wretched delinquents; behinde them followed a reasonable handsome Youth well clad, making most extreme moane: and the two Gentlemen looking somewhat wistly on him, he vvas presently knowne to *Gerardo*: for you must know, that this vvas the loued *Senabria*, vvhom (if you remember) the afternoone before his misfortune, he sent before to take vp lodging; vvwhich when he had done, and seeing his Master came not, neither imagining vvhat might cause his so long stay, presaging some disastrous accident, before day-breake, hee returned backe the vvay he came; asking as many as he met withall, for his lost Master. As fortune vvould, at length a poore shepherd crossed the same way that *Senabria* came; vvho hearing his demand, to his no small admiration, told him, that not passing an houre before, he saw certaine men dragged out of the Mountaine, and carried by a troupe of Keepers and Country fellowes, with their armes bound (as prisoners) to a Village some two leagues from that place; and the reason (as hee heard) was, that in the thicket they had killed a Gentleman for his Mony; who (it seemed) had euer-night lost his way on horsebacke: which vvhen the afflicted Youth vnderstood, crying out like one distracted, & beleeuing 'twas his Master they had slaine, without more enquiry of the shepherd, he spurred his horse what vvay he with his hand directed him. The fellow that thus informed *Senabria*, was not mistaken, if you call to mind the three compassionate shepherds, that in the beginning of this Discourse, vve left rushing into the thicket, followed by those rude and sauage Mountainiers: they could not so nimblely escape, but that before day-breake, (being shrewdly baited) in spite of their teeth, they were by their persecuters taken; and some of these barbarous people that  
were



were scattered to and fro in quest of them, lighted on the horse, which the night before had frightened the poore prisoners, and others returning to the selfe-same place, where *Gerardo* fell, seeing the ground and green grasse enamelled with fresh blood, could not but be troubled at the novelty: and desirous to know more, prying about the neere trees, they found a laced Cloke, and faire embroidered Hat, with a naked hackt sword; at which their wonder increasing, without farther search, they ranne to the rest of their company, who by this time with much ado, had seized vpon the poore horse; which they might easily doe, by reason of the Pistoll-shot and wound that now grew stiffe vpon him: they also vvere amazed to see the spoyles that their copanions brought, & were now all of opinion, that their prisoners had robbed & slaine the owner of them for his goods; and though the poore innocent men with the truth would haue giuen their discharge, 'twas but lost labour to those barbarous people; and though some vvere their kindred and allies, yet for feare of the Keepers, and the hainousnesse of their crimes, they durst not set them at libertie: so that, deafe to all pittie, vwith cryes and outrage, they dragged them on, at what time the vvolfull *Senabria*, hasting as speedily as his sorrow would permit him, hearing the noyse, and directed by those rascals clamours, without the thicket ouertooke, and hauing saluted them, asked the hindermost touching his charge; but he straight knew the swift horse, that was now led by one of them, and with a grieuous scricke, bereaued of his senses, he fell to the ground, inso-much that some of them which vvere neereest, going to helpe him, flew backe; seeing that, quickly raised, with his sword in hand, he ranne towards them, crying out to shew him the villaines that had slaine his Master. Whereupon the Keepers had no small ado to pacifie him: but at last  
with



with foure of those fellowes that were skilfullest (hauing promised to reward them) he went backe to looke for him whom hee now accounted in another world: but vnable to finde the least tracke of him, he tooke his way toward *Segouia*, where giuing notice to the Gouvernour of the Citty, of what passed within his iurisdiction, and also making knowne who the murdered party was, without taking any rest, hee trauelled all that night, and the next day artiuied at the widdow *Gerardo's* mothers house, who (as you heard) liued in *Madrid*. Heere was mourning indeed, true sorrow, penetrating sighes, sad groanes, from the wofull Gentlewoman, whose heart euen bled, while others eyes ran teares.

With all speed shee dispatcht a Messenger to her valiant sonne *Leoncio*, who was still at his Village of *Ocea*, where hee and all thereabouts with new teares celebrated their sorrow and the sad newes: but the louing Brother, knowing that such tendernesse vvas not the vway to his reuenge, vvith infinite speed taking continual Postes, arriued at *Segouia*, where he was by *Don Manuel de Oxanto*, the Cities Gouvernour, more particularly informed of the Tragicall successe, and also that the homicides (innocents indeed) were in fast hold. *Leoncio* now present, and strong euidence brought in against them, shortly after they were put vpon the Racke, and their courages failing, all three plainly confessed as much as was required of them, and were legally condemned to suffer for the fact, and carrying them thorow the streets to the place of execution, as their good lucke, or rather innocency vvould haue it, the vvounded *Gerardo* knowing his trusty *Senabria*, astonisht at his vncredible moane, caused a seruant with all haste to call him; vvhich vvhen the afflicted Youth heard, (for hee well knew *Gerardo's* tongue) hee cast vp his eyes, and seeing him in  
the

the window, stood stocke still, like one in an extasie, stirring neither hand nor foote. But comming quickly to himselfe, leauing hat and cloake in midst of the streete, hee ran and prostrated himselfe at *Gerardo's* feete, who was now gotten downe to the Inne dore, vvhether an infinite company of people were flocked about them, that drawne thither by the nouelty of *Senabria's* extremes, drew neere to see what would bee the issue of the matter. And is it possible (said the faithfull seruant, crying out) that you are my beloued *Gerardo*? Is it true that my eyes behold you, my hands feele you, and eares heare your loued voyce? Oh deare Master, and are you that dead hee, whose losse hath beene so much deplored by your kindred, seruants and friends? Yet why doubt I, since these hands touch, and eyes not blinde really behold you? Heauen, that hath had compassion on your misfortunes, hath discovered the traytous villaines that vvould haue slaine you, allotting a iust punishment vnto them.

These, and such Phrases vsed *Senabria*, moued by extremity of ioy, at the sight of his Master, who vvondring to heare vvhat hee said, touching the Authors of his wounds, thinking they were apprehended, retyring to his Chamber with the noble *Andalusian* Gentleman, his friend; hee demanded more particularly of him vvhat hee knew touching the businesse? who declaring to him all that hath been formerly related, knowing in vvhat danger the poore innocent men vv ere, vvith teares in his eyes, full of soft compassion, hauing (as well as his vvounds vvould giue him leaue) gotten on horsebacke, and *Leriano* likewise, they hasted out of the Inne, and galloping on, with their good speed saued the poore Shepheards liues, that were now at the Gallowes foote.

When the Officers of Iustice saw this troope with seruants.

uants and others that followed them, thinking they meant to haue disturbed the fatall execution, crying out for helpe in the Kings name, they went to oppose them, whereby no small uproare arose in the Market-place, and whole Cittie; which comming to the Gouvernours eare, he came, accompanied with many Gentlemen; and amongst them, the noble *Leoncio*, into the place; where hearing the iust demand of the two friends, they began to bee in more quietnesse, and *Leoncio* hauing knowne his Brother with open armes, bathing his cheekes in ioyfull teares, on horsebacke all as he was, ran to imbrace him, and after him the discrete *Don Manuel*, and the rest of the Gentlemen in order: and so *Gerardo's* declaration being taken (in all saue discouering *Rodrigo*) and the Shepheards also telling in what manner they found him, and vpon what termes they left him: Their innocence knowne, to the great ioy of the two Brothers, as also of the worthy Gouverneur, and whole Citie, they were stripped out of their moumfull weeds, and were carried to *Don Mannels* house, where *Leoncio* also lodged, and by *Gerardo's* bounty, they were carefully cured of the hurt they receiued vpon the Racke, and after by him plentifully rewarded for their trouble, and losses. The two Brothers consulted next how they might be reuenged; but thought it best to deferre it for the present, giuing their enemies first leaue to bee secure. And taking leaue of the Gouverneur and the Gentlemen of that famous Citie, they trauelled toward *Madrid*, (where by this time the happy newes was diuulged) and with them the good *Leriano*, who importuned by his friends could not but consent to the Iourney.

Being arriued, consider how her fortunate *Gerardo* might be welcommed by his Mother, who hugged him like one newly raised from death, and with no lesse loue, at least,  
with

with like demonstration his *Andaluzian* restorer, to whom the whole family with vnspeakable ioy applide themselves. But fortune that loues no long quiet, would not that this ioy should long continue in *Gerardo's* ioyfull mansion, who with his deare friend was the happiest man (as he thought) aliue, expecting shortly the returne of his Brother *Leoncio*, that with some friends and kinsmen of his, were gone to the Village of *Otea*, to prepare some sports and pastimes for *Leriano's* entertainment.

One night amongst others, the two friends wanting *Leoncio's* company hauing retired to bedward sooner then their accustomed houre, about the dead of night, (the whole household asleepe) the two, vvhhen they least dreame of any such thing, were beset and apprehended by a Iudge; vvhō, with store of officers, the supream Councel had sent to that purpose; which exceedingly amazed them, though their innocēce made them couragiously to suffer the blow. The subtil Iudge straight bestowed thē in seuerall Prisons; and to auoid delayes, without giuing them time once to deliberate, examined *Gerardo*, laying to his charge his enemy *Roderigo's* death, and his intent likewise to haue slaine *Clara*, with such sharpe and bitter language as extreemely troubled the poore Gentleman, not so much for the bloudy crime laid to his charge, as for that the Iudge told him *Clara* had beene married to his trecherous enemy; for though hee were dead and shee long agoe giuen ouer, yet such was his rage and vnreasonableness of ieaiousie, a passion that pardons not the dead. To vvhhat was vrged against him, hee knew no better answer then the story of his owne wounds and *Roderigo's* treachery, alleaging withall how much more iustly he might haue vsed his best diligence against the other, since his wickedness and baseness  
de.

deserued it: these and the like reasons hee vitered, which euen satisfide, or at least somewhat abated the seueritie of the rigorous Iudge.

Touching *Clara* he spoke indifferently, as not onely ignorant of her marriage, but whether she were alieue or no: yet he was still kept in strong hold, with store of Keepers about him, whilst the cunning & active Iudge in the meane time busied himselfe in priuy searches, sisting of witnesses and the like. But these exquisite endeouours had all proou'd fruitlesse, if heauen (when they least expected) had not maruellously discovered the whole businesse.

The loyall *Fernando*, *Gerardo's* intimate friend, arriuing with heavy newes, he brought from *Talbor*, dispersed these clouds, that thus blinded them in amazement and ignorance; who casting his valorous armes about his imprisoned friends necke; and with his ancient past loue, arming him to patience, sitting him downe betwixt the compassionate *Andaluzian*, and the Noble *Leonio* now returned from *Ocea*, with his knowne stayednesse and modestie, hee thus began:

As soone, my *Gerardo* (as you had left my Country and me) I endeououred like a true friend, to doe my best deuoir in your absence and seruice, seeking to pierce and discover the impenetrable designes and stratagems of your Aduersaries, chiefly *Rodrigo*, and to give you frequent aduertisement by Letters; and amongst other things (if you remember) I wrote you of the dayly visits, night-walkes, and extraordinarie diligence he vsed in *Clara's* seruice, more eagerly, and with more passion, then at any time formerly. Wherevpon Captaine *Esconar* her father dying, to the whole Cities great admiration, one night shee was missing in her Vnkles house, and consequently *Rodrigo* in his, some nine or ten dayes after this, hapned the sorrowfull newes of your



treacherous death was bruted in *Talbor* for certain, which I at that time much bewailed, suspecting no other to bee the Author of it then *Rodrigo*: and to this presumption, the shortnesse of his returne serued as a stronger moriue, together with his marriage: for, taking *Clara* out of a Monastrie, where he gaue out she was put by his order; seeking to effect his desire, he was much withstood by all his friends: but he saying he married *Gerardo's* widdow, passing through all inconueniences, made vp the match, and all vs his acquaintance to wonder, considering what wee knew of her infamie: Some sixe weekes since wee heard of your reuerie, and not passing three, *Rodrigo* was found dead in his bed, with seuen deepe and dangerous wounds, and his wife by him with two in her breast, crying grievously out, that you were the bloody homicide. All *Rodrigo's* people were presently clapt vp, and the High-ways laid for you; the poore seruants had the Rack, to know vvvhich of them gaue you entrance into the house. Neither had they till this time ceased tormenting them, had not *Clara*, finding her selfe mortally vvounded (willing to excuse the neuer-dying death of her soule, aduised by her Confessor) told the true cause of that horrible disaster, and the rest; of which she made an admirable declaration, beginning from your first loues, and proceeding to the cause for vvvhich with so much rigour you left her, she said, That seeing how much she vvvas by you despised, and how impossible it vvvas for her to returne to your fauour (these things forcing her to a despaire) she conuerted that loue and affection, which till then she had borne you into mortall hatred (so much the greater, by how much our loues are violent) and so looking to nothing more then a bloody reuenge, she vsed as an instrument, the bold breast of the offended *Rodrigo*, of vvvhose loue she vvvas confident, being as then more earnestly



ly then euer courted by him : and therefore sending secretly for him ; ( all comforts, promises, and teares that his desire could wish preceding ) shee proposed the businesse, telling him how much shee was bound to him, and onely deferred her recompence, till shee saw what might become of her Husband *Gerardo*, ( that name she still afforded you ) saying, that you ( as the onely let remoued ) she forthwith protested to bee his Wife, giuing him her hand to boote : besides this ( though to so blinde a Louer any part of this had been sufficient ) she put him in minde of his disgracefull hurts, the more to incense him, and withall of your securenesse that made the matter so much the more facile : which effected, without prejudice to her honour, she might yeeld her selfe to his pleasure.

At this *Rodrigo* sufficiently incited, and stirred vp with the remembrance of his wounds, without further delaies, & with a determined courage, promised to fulfil her commands, though in the accomplishment hee lost both honor, life and fortunes : and so thorowly agreed, she resolved to commit her selfe to *Rodrigo's* company, as the insuing night she did ; and a few dayes after with three seruants, tall fellows, and well-armed, they rode towards your Village of *Ocea*, where hauing enquired after you, and hearing you were to goe to the Court, keeping alwayes in kenning, they followed you to *Madrid*, which place you left, after you had seene and taken leaue of your loued Mother ; and being on your way, neere the Kings House *Del Campo*, one of the seruants came into your company, whom trusting as your guide, you were by him conducted that night, into the traine that was laid for your death, ( her husband and the rest of his seruants, setting vpon you in that rough and thicke Mountaine ) where ( the also present ) they left you,

you, to their thinking, slain with many cruel wounds, which vvas also soone published thorow all the Prouince, as soon as they arrived at *Talbora*. The marriage was after strooke vp betweene them, and the Traytor received the reward of his bloody seruice: but not long after, he had one more deserued; for (the sad newes of your death cryed downe againe) when *Clara* heard it, she vvas ready to haue killed her selfe, such was the dolour of her afflicted heart, to think that for the price of your death (vneffected) she was now married to one she euer mortally abhorred: and thus cheated, her rancour more increased, making her fall vpon a piece of the most barbarous inhumane crueltie that hath beene inuented, to kill her Husband, and wound her selfe; that with that diuellish deuice, she might, without all spot or taint, free her selfe from the indissoluble knot, and likewise be reuenged on you, with saying, *Gerardo* hid within the Curtaines, stabbed her husband and her; but the diuine iustice (for an exemplary punishment) brought her by her owne hands to this end, which she confessed; and closing vp her Discourse, a while after, her wounds fistulated, and their venome pierced euē to the secret vertue of her afflicted macerated heart, at what time the vitall spirits failing, weary of struggling with her latest pangs, that Gallant sprightly corps gaue vp the reuengefull spirit, vvhose sad and speedy report no sooner came to my notice; vvhē knowing how much your life depended vpon the Narration, I tooke this Postling-iourney.

Here *Gerardo* with true signes of sorrow, and soules torment, shewed the pure and effectuall loue hee once bore her, that was his *Clara*, since all those rude wrongs vvere not sufficient yet to change him, rather as soone as euer hee heard the fatall report of her miserable vntimely end; his

tender heart vnable to sustaine such a tormenting stroke;  
and his strength failing, with a pittifull profound grone,  
in the sight of his friends, none able to relieue him,  
dismaid and swouning, hee sunke downe  
to the cold earth.

*Here ends the first Tragical Discourse.*

---

GERARDO:

---



GERARDO:  
 THE  
 VNFORTVNATE  
 SPANIARD.

*The second Discourse.*



Like some happy Passenger escaped from a violent storme, our *Gerardo* at length came to himselfe out of a deep trance, into which the sad and Funerall newes of the deceased *Clara* had cast him, once his soules inestimable pledge; but now the Originall of all his woes, imprisonment, setters and chaines that incompassed him; from which, yet in short time (the truth of all discovered) to the great reioycing of his kindred, friends, and his much loued *Lerismo*, hee was at wished libertie; though extremely oppressed with melancholly, which made him wholly ruine himselfe, which hee so wilfully affected, that his amiable and pleasing condition was quite chang'd, being burdensome to his very seruants and whole Family, which bred no small grieffe to his Mother, Brother

and friends, that intirely loued him; euen so *Leriano*, who in midst of the triumphes that were prepared for his entertainment (leauing his friends) returned to his formerly commenced Voyage; the like did *Fernando*, to his Cittie, where leaue we them, till swift time restore vs, the one with an end no lesse Tragicall then the present. Time, that must now serue as a wholesom *Physician*, blotting with his various course out of *Gerardo's* remembrance, the torment that so rigorously possessed him, time onely could consume, and extinguish it in him; yet not so thorowly, but a long time after, the ashes of his former fire sent forth some smoke.

*Gerardo* now vndoubtedly beleueed, that in *Clara*, all the Treasons and deceits of women were deciphered, but his want of yeeres, and shallow experience, sooth'd him on in this opinion. Time brought him further on shore, and at euery step, made him discouer new and greater precipices, beset with flatterie, vaine shewes, false dealing, and dissembled affection; which seruing to coole his youthfull bloud, and hot affections, with new misfortunes, gaue matter to this second Tragicall Discourse.

Long the late accident of his sad loue kept him in this retirement, in which he longer had remain'd; but that the generall noise of extraordinarie triumphs at Court, rowzed vp his drowzy spirits. 'Twas now in the yeere sixe hundredreth and fve, the eighth day of Aprils moneth, when our wished Prince, *Don Philip* the fourth, of this most famous name, was borne, to the wonderfull ioy of the third *Philip* his Father, and no lesse of that inestimable Australl *Margaret* his Mother, and in generall of all their Subiects, vwho with sumptuous preparations, set forth their true affections, by celebrating the birth-day, with what shewes of vnfained loyaltie their hearts could excite them to. To these vniuersall solemnities, the forgotten *Gerardo*, accompanied by his  
Brother,

Brother, some kinsmen and other friends arriv'd at *Valladolid*, mov'd as well through his owne desire, as importuned by his friends and allies ; or indeede by his melancholly thoughts, which by the greatnesse of that renowned Citie were diverted, drowned in the tempestuous Sea of his past misfortunes ; for here euery looke, each step, presented him with new and severall objects. I omit the description of those Festivall Triumphs, as magnificent as stately, worthy a nimbler quill then mine, my wings dare not soare to so high a pitch : onely the present subiect, forced me to touch vpon this Summarie Relation and mention.

*Gerardo* liued neere that street, which takes name from the ancient stocke of the Illustrious *Ziungas*, in an honest priuate lodging, together with the rest of his company, where, by their diligent and carefull Oast, they were obserued with particular respect (no small happinesse in so great a concourse to bee so well accommodated.) One time amongst others, *Gerardo*, after he had dined, finding himselfe not halfe currant, excusing him to his kindred and company, laid him downe to rest : his indisposition though vvvas not so great, but that within an houre or so, beeing better refreshed, he could get him to one of the iron grates of his Chamber window, where, to his no little admiration, to the sound of a shrill Harpe, he might heare (though vndistinctly) something sung with a voice, whose melody euen rapt his senses, yet he was not able to ghesse from whence those celestially notes should proceed ; nor the place, or beeing, that concealed this Angelicall *Orpheus* that thus attracted him ; till the suddennesse of it passing ouer, with more vigilancy he might perceiue, that it came from a neighbouring opposite window, but 'twas not possible to see the party, by reason of a close greene Lettice that was betweene the



barres & the inside: yet he ghesse it vvas a vvoman, as well by the sweetnesse of her trebble, as a kinde of blush of her presence, vvhich he might confusedly behold.

The pleasing tone ended; at what time *Gerardo* more violently longed to re-enioy it; and hauing a glimpse yet of the Harpe, and presuming that in such occasions 'twas no impudence to begge a curtesie, he was bold by an amorous signe to re-sollicite the celestially harmony. The hidden Dame was nothing squeamish; so for his signe, returning him a condisending nod, with a sprightly carelesnes, she once againe strooke vp the Royal Instrument, and to it as to *Gerardo's* incredible delight, suted this excellent Söner,

*Winglesse to mount, or saile' gainst winde,  
 Extract from worm-wood Nectar pure,  
 Imprison'd in a Cae obscure,  
 Or thinke the Sunne's light we see (blinde:)  
 An Antidote in prison finde,  
 In midst of danger most secure,  
 (Laughing) the Torture to endure,  
 To say that Lightning's light is kinde,  
 Or that dead men do liue:  
 Such pow'r sole Loue can giue.*

The vnknowne courtly voice had cleane transported him, and suspended the very streetes passengers; but something in the Song inwardly affected him, as if he should be the subiect of it: but (being a stranger) it straight seemed impossible. He could not but shew himselfe thankfull, as the shortnesse of time, and distance of places would permit him; for iust now his Brother and Kinsmen were gotten in vnto him, so he was forced to an Adieu, for feare of being by them espied, and the concealed Lady, answering with  
 the

the like, he turned backe to *Leonio*, whom onely hee acquainted with what hapned, whereat hee receiued no small content, (as desiring infinitely to see him some way diuerted from his former griefes) though whither, or to whom the present suite was directed, hee was viterly ignorant. Some three or foure dayes next following, *Gerardo*, by reason of some vrgent occasions, was still from home, till one faire and cleere morning (as hee was dressing himselfe at his window) he might heare one in an amorous Key, with a low Hiss call him; and looking vp, saw (though a little imperfectly) yet better in respect of the Sunne-beames then the first afternoone, a well-shap't-bodied Dame, and to his seeming, a liuely countenance; whom with a low obeysance, saluting, she returned him her cur'sie. He was perswaded, that though hee wanted either Voice or Musicke, the party could not but be the same; especially when peering from an Alabaster hand, hee might perceiue two smooth (like-Art-turned) fingers, which was the most reall sight the wood-wouen net would affoord him: shee beckned him to descend to her window, which hee did; when taking vp a Paper she dropped, with vnspokeable ioy returning to his Chamber, he opened it, and viewed the following Contents.

*'Tis now a moneth since my happie Starre (I carelesse of the blessed occasion it reserved for mee) brought mee to this Grate, from whence I saw you alight at your lodging doore, and from that very instant (though it may seeme loose sense, thus soone to declare my selfe, and a thing so contrary to our sexe) you had free admission into my tender heart, which, whether I would or not, you possessest as absolute ouer it; and the Owner, who most earnestly desires you, to accept of her affection with like recompence.*

YOUR IACINTA.

Much was required of *GERARDO* in this present  
Ticket,

Ticket, of whose Contents as carelesse, as loth to equall the affection the Letter charged him with, hee had recourse to his past misfortunes, and so feared to intangle himselfe in others that might proue of like condition. Yet in respect his answer was required, more for Courtship then necessitie or obligation, after hee had dined, taking pen and Inke, he framed this reply :

*'Tis not the least part of my debt to gracious Heauen, for in-  
duing me with some measure of humilitie: for had the Superiour  
powers been scarce in this to me, well might the soothing of your  
discreete Letter, faire Mistresse, haue made me arrogant. But I  
acknowledge my meane parts, and so rather in curtesie, then foo-  
lish confidence beleene you. Yet let me request your beliefe of this,  
that besides your obliging me by the present fauour, such a trea-  
sure, and so admirable a Voice hath heretofore wholly surprized  
me. And therefore since I am your Prisoner, let me be so happy as  
to haue a sight of the Soueraigne Taylor that must guard mee, o-  
therwise it had beene rashnesse to submit my selfe voluntarily to  
the danger, and you your selfe would impute my determination to  
madnesse.*

YOUR GERARDO.

Such was *Iacinta's* Letter, and such *Gerardo's* answer, which she receiued, tyed to a slight Ribbon cast downe from her window, that serued as a Messenger to these new Louers, and vvithout helpe of any third partie, they made frequent vse of this deuice.

*Iacinta* was much importuned by her Louer to be seene; but it was long ere his desire could take effect. Some daies after, as he was greedy of a sight of her, hee might heare a voice againe to the Harpe, with these Verses.

*How*

*How doe I lue, if I haue lost my heart ?  
If I lue not, whence feele I all this fire ?  
If so much heate torment my forc't desire,  
why, of my glory doe I make it part ?  
If I be all on fire, what need I Art  
To dry my teares, or make wet grieffe retire ?  
Or if a Sea of Teares, what, to require  
water, to quench the flame made by Loues dart ?  
If looking and a sight may satisfie,  
why doe I then so much abhorre the light ?  
If I abhorre, why doe I seeke it so ?  
Mirac'lous Loue; the more (in vaine) I trie  
To loosen the hard knot, thy cunning slight,  
The more I labour mine owne overthrow.*

And the end of the Song was quauered out with an harmonious sigh, which *Gerardo* at the instant could speedily answer with no bad *Eccho*; as one that had beene well beaten to such passion. But night comming swiftly on, threatened to part them, which awhile after it did; and giuing a pause to their outward senses, though not to their inward thoughts, brought on day and morning: at which time comming both early to the visuall stands, after their mutuall salutations, *Gerardo* taking a paper out of his pocker, went downe and tyed it to the String at her window, and so left her to reade the gladsome ensuing Verses:

*Sweet Voyce ! I heare thy pleasing harmonie,  
Though Aire resist it, and rebellious winde:  
O that the glorious Angell I could see,  
That thus enchants mine eare, suspends my mind!  
Loue, sure, is no bare Voyce, no fancie blind,*

*Nor fain'd intention, but realitie ;  
 A substance and ingendred Deitie,  
 'Twixt Mars and Venus in adul't rate kind.  
 Then, if not wholly Voyce, since Body too;  
 Or, yet, if Eccho, hearke: so may thy faire  
 Narcissus soft relent and learne to woo:  
 But why concealed thus do'st thou declare  
 Thy selfe like him, selfe-louing? if not so,  
 Why art thou nought but Voyce wrap't vp in ayre?*

Sure I am, that, could *Iacinta* conuert her selfe into  
 tongues like *Eccho*, or into eyes like *Argus*, shee would not  
 haue spared these transformations, the more to haue obli-  
 ged *Gerardo* with them: but now day was spent, and night  
 came on, that forced them to part, and giue way to the pri-  
 uacy of their amorous thoughts; in which, passing the grea-  
 rest part of darknesse and the ensuing day, they returned to-  
 ward the ordinary stand; and after their vsuall louing salu-  
 tations, *Iacinta* (taking a paper out of her pocket, and ma-  
 king signes to *Gerardo* to come downe: he did so, and recei-  
 ued it with his vsuall content, and (*Iacinta* going in) ope-  
 ning it, he read these following Contents:

*Your importunity, loued Gerardo, to see me is such, that I am  
 willing at length to giue you the content, (confident) that when  
 you haue beheld my meane parts, your woorth and my affection  
 must make vp their defects. At this Grate it is not possible,  
 without the danger of our iealous houshold; you must of force turn  
 then to the next street, to which the great doore of our house opens,  
 where to morrow in the afternoone at the Bay-window you shall  
 see me, clad in the colour that my heart affects, which shall assure  
 you, I am there the same that here tels you so.*

Your *Iacinta*.

With

With exceeding gladnesse *Gerardo* read the paper, and satisfied with the promise, the brieve minutes were long dayes; and the short houres, lasting ages; till time, not varying his naturall course, though hee thought him slower, brought on the prefixed moment; by vvhhen, mounted vpon a goodly vvell-rein'd Bay, set out and trapped vvith rich furniture, and himselfe clad in fresh brauery, vvith a heart futeable, aduanced toward the next street; vvhere hauing turned, he soone tooke notice of the Grate and Bay-vvindow before him; though as then he saw not his Mistris in the appointed place; vvhereat his mind vvas not a little disquieted, and hauing paced a prety way on, hee thought to returne in despaire to his Lodging; and putting it in execution, as he came backe iust against *Iacinta's* doore, looking vp, he might see where, at the guilded Barres she expected him, accompanied vvith so singular Beauty, as might haue amazed the strongest-hearted beholder; an aspect so awfully maiesticall, as might breed an amorous fearefull respect, as of some powerfull Deitie; the effect beeing soone manifest in *Gerardo*: for no sooner by the cut-greene of her attire, had hee a view of her celestially countenance, when loosening the reines, and his legges loosening the stirrops, he remained like Iasper, or an Image; so deprived of memory, that he wanted it to salute her: neither had his fault so ceased, but that the free Giner, finding the flexible reines at libertie, without leaue of his bereaued Master, trotted on somewhat faster then the state of his vsuall prancing required; at vvwhose vneasie pace *Gerardo* awaked, and himselfe extremely abashed, drew vp the reines, and re-settled in his stirrops, performed (though a little vnseasonably) a courtly salutation; and taking a turne backe againe, meant fully to recompence that amorous neglect, (if vvhere loue raignes, any may be so termed.) It grew toward the Evening,



ning, to our new Louer glad with the sight of his Mistris, and his good dayes worke, returned home, and many a time after vvas fauoured in this kind, as also with her Letters and Songs full of sweetnesse and conceited harmonic. Many a time after he saw her at a Monasterie, vvhither shee vsed to repaire, accompanied vvith her mother and family. All this vvhile he had leysure to informe himselfe secretly of her friends qualities and meanes, vvwhich he vnderstood to be such, and her selfe euery vvay so complete, that the happinesse of his loue began to delude his hopes: though the gentle *Jacinta*, vvith her many fauours, more and more encreast and nourisht them. The greatest part of the Summer vvas spent in this contemplatiue affection, he as carefull to conceale it frō his friends, as she frō her household seruants: for this secret vigilancie vvas the Sanctuary of their reputation, indeed of both their liues, as shall farther appeare in this Tragicall Relation; vvwhich euen now drew on, vvpon the small hope *Gerardo* conceiued of his happinesse; since too, vvhen he least suspected, hee vvas assaulted vvith one of the accustomed thwarts of his aduerse fortune, vvwhich raised a new trouble, *Jacinta* giuing him to vnderstand by a Letter, that her Parents in all haste meant to marry her, perhappes presaging some vnluckinesse to betide her. The knowledge of this filled *Gerardo* vvith seare, as her with griefe, though she were resolute to oppose her parents desires, since hers to *Gerardo* vv ere so settled, that she would rather endure a torturing death, then make any other the Owner of her life. And though with this newes, and with what was added by her, *Gerardo's* passion daily increased, yet he neuer vsed so much as the least perswasion, to dissuade her from a iust filiall obedience: for beeing altogether vnresolved yet to turne married man, he would not openly hinder the partie that pretended, neither yet till he saw the issue, desist from his

his owne loves pretension. *Iacinta's* parents were so bent vpon the match, that without her consent, the vnhappy nuptials with a kinsman of hers were to be performed: to which effect the day of the *Annunciation* of our *Lady* was appointed.

I cannot (though with some digression) but here take notice how foolishly stupid those parents are, that so rashly thrust their children into an estate, that onely death can separate them from; since such matches haue seldome produced other then some pitifull end, or shamefull effect, as the present will demonstrate, making the faire *Iacinta* so desperate, as rather resolute to die then to marry; of which her purpose, though she gaue daily notice to *Gerardo*, yet he, seeing things come to that extremitie, giuing small credit to his hopes, endeouored now by little and little to weane himselfe from his affection; which coldnesse of his, his Mistress perceiuing, and the vngratefull requittall; her tear<sup>e</sup> and moanes strongly increased in such sort, that void of all comfort, with the resentment of her new griefe and iealous torment, taking pen and inke, accompanied with the flowing streames of her faire eyes, she thus writes to her forgetfull Louer.

*If the facilitie with which thou becamest Lord ouer my life, haue made thee so hard-hearted, as neglectfull to forget me, false and vnconstant man! thy proceeding is as base, as needes must be thy birth; since, if thy dissembling brest did nourish any noble blood, reason would teach thee to repay my affection, laying before thee my true and constant loue, which onely forced me to so sudden madnesse, that by my licentious doting on thee, our sexe should lose their principall glory and ornament. But, ay me, foolishly blind! I my selfe gaue thee power, and thrust those armes into thy hands, that will be my death, which euery moment threa-*

*tens me; since I shall be forced, rather then any possesse that place which my heart first gave to thee, with my owne hands to inslit it on my selfe; and rest assured, that though my unfortunate marriage bee upon the neereſt termes that may bee, neither friends, kindred, or parents shall make it on my part take effect, nor shall that false faith, with which thou haſt ſold me, make mee leſſe vnderaſure thee firme and loyall mine Owne.*

Largelier would ſhe haue written, but it ſeemed, the violence of her paſſion both tyed her hands, and troubled her inuention: poore creature! ſhee weepes, ſighes, and laments, and ſuddenly refraining ſuch paſſion, checkes thoſe teares, and her ſorrow propoſeth and diſpoſeth herſelfe to forget; and in an inſtant abhorres, and repenting her lightneſſe, (reſolued now on a permanent affection, and determined on a more ſettled eſtate) meanes to obey her parents ſtraight againe. Without conſulting with her laſt purpoſe, ſhe outrageouſly cries out vpon her ſelfe, and as if ſhe were really transformed into her *Gerardo*, as effectually alledgeth for him, excuſeth his forgetfulneſſe: and concluding thus (fearefull to offend her Louer) teares the Letter ſhe hath written: not long after, all in a rage, puniſhing the Starres, ſhee curſes their influence; and bepearing the ſmooth Criſtall of her face, bedewes the paper ſhe writes, and the wrought Ebone Yuory Deſke on which it reſted, with her teares; from whence ſpeedily ſtarting, and reſolued laſtly on her iuſt choler, ſhee went to the window, from whence ſhe might eſpy *Gerardo*; who with like care ſtood at his, and ſo without expecting the leaſt ſigne, or liſting vp her grieued countenance, ſhee let fall a Paper without further ſtay; and by the ſhutting of her window gaue ſufficient teſtimony of her paſſionate diſtaſte. All which *Gerardo* felt within himſelf, and fearefull of ſome new change

in his Mistrisse, hauing soone caught vp the Letter, and as hastily read it, the angry contents gaue him rather content then trouble, since those rigorous Lines assured his hopes, which was the ground of his answere to *Iacinta*, whereby her iealous sorrow was well abated.

But now the appointed time came on, as acceptable to *Iacinta's* parents, and the whole household, as miserable and bewailed by her in such extremitie, that vnable to sustaine her woes, she fell into seuerall swoonings, into her mothers lappe, and armes of diuers Dames her kinswomen and friends, that were then assembled to see her nuptials performed; which by reason of her indisposition were then necessarily, till the next day deferred.

These things passed in *Iacinta's* house, whilst the afflicted *Gerardo*, vnable to rest in any one place, with vnquietnesse of his thoughts, one whiles on horsebacke takes seuerall turnes in his Mistrisses street, and then returning home, gets him to his window another vsuall way to his Loue; till night comming on, with his owne habite and darkenesse doubly masked, without feare of being knowne, hee might safely enter into the ouer-joyed house of *Iacinta*, which was now all feasting and musicke: and increased in *Gerardo's* brest a more strong suspition, that his Mistris at length, like a very woman, had beene wanting to her word and promise; and so with a carelesse carefulnesse, he sought to informe himselfe of an old seruing creature, (whose vnpleasing age had freed him from being one of the Iouiall company) sate downe in a chaire, who hearing *Gerardo* demand the occasion of their iollitie, told him in his slow manner, the whole matter; confirming his former suspition: for indeed *Iacinta* overcome by the continuall importunities of her Parents and kindred, did as at that time yeeld her hand and consent to her Cousin and husband. Scarce had the

melting *Gerardo* heard the last accents of the tedious Servingman his discourse; when, his faint body covered all o-  
uer with a cold sweate, he was forced to leane to the neere  
wall; dissembling as much as in him lay, his sad passion, but  
perceiuing the violence of it to increase, leaving the house,  
he returned to his owne, where his brother *Leonio* expected  
him, with the same care, and equall desire to know the suc-  
cesse of his affaires. But he needed no further information  
then *Gerardo's* lookes; so shutting the chamber doore, com-  
forting his brother with a cheerefull countenance, thus he  
begins to set vpon him.

Deare Brother, 'Tis needlesse to increase your distem-  
per, this day we expected the euent of *Isacinta's* vows, in  
which, if, (as I suppose) she haue failed, 'tis right Woman.  
If well you note, vvhhat becomes your griefe, you may make  
your comfort; for being now reclaimed, you shall see, hea-  
uens blessing, breaking with the frailty of an vnconstant o-  
pinion, the strong chaines of your oppressed liberty, an  
eternall slavery, perpetuall, ever-living, neuer-dying griefe,  
subiect to the vngrateful proceeding of a light house-wife,  
whose most common practice, is, to recompence our loue  
with change, our remembrance with neglect, toile with  
disdaine, truth with falshood, and our firme good-wil with  
their fading affection; all their thoughts, words, and deeds,  
full of continuall mutabilitie, tending to our latest destru-  
ction, that being the ayme and scope of all their naturall  
dissimulation And this truth, the present case may make  
you not deny, nor due thanks to heauen for so remarkea-  
ble a benefit; take comfort then, since no reason it is, so hap-  
py a successe should deprive you of it. The afflicted *Gerar-  
do* vvas about to haue replide something; at what time one  
of his seruants interrupting him, said; There vvas a stran-  
ger, at doore would speak with him, which made him (brea-  
king



king off the discourse) goe out; where when hee came, hee might see one with his face muffled in his Cloke; but by the habit seeming some person of qualitie, and commanding his man to leaue them, desirous to know the party, and what his occasion was, courteously demanded the one and the other of him. But in stead of an answer, the concealed Gallant threw himselfe forward to haue embraced him; which beeing sudden as vnexpected, might haue cost him deare; for at the instant *Gerardo* fearing to be clozed withal, drew backe his left foot, and his sword with his right hand, and the point clapt forward, missed little of running the other thorow; besides, *Leoncio* (suspecting something) by this time was come, if need had beene, to his brothers defence. And doubtlesse it had gone heauily with the disguised partie, if, seeing what happened, and *Gerardo's* misdoubt of him, he had not vnmasked himselfe, and retired, saying; How now, *Gerardo*? is this the entertainment you giue me? is this the harbour I finde in your brest? haue I this contradiction from your Armes? is my loyalty thus recompenced? my dangerous boldnesse thus? Ah, deceitfull man, that I should thus be caught by thy flatteries! but, farewell: I may arriue in some place, where perhaps I shal haue entrance. And the party abruptly breaking off, would faine haue departed; which when *Gerardo* saw, (for no sooner had the disguised person discovered that faire face, when it was knowne, for no lesse then the rare Originall of the most beautifull *Iacinta*) & into what errour (though vnwillingly) he had falne, hastily ouertaking her, he brought her backe to his chamber; and there with his Brother, priuately locked themselues together, *Leoncio* desirous to bee rid of the doubt, with which the strangenesse of this successe had possesst him. *Gerardo* thus infinitely obliged to his offended Mistris, falling passionately at her feet, begs humbly



ble pardon for his fault and forgetfulness, since his owne vnworthinesse of so great a glory might serue for his excuse. And though this and other speeches passed, yet he still thought himselfe in a dreame, which onely represented to him such a fantastical shape, as vvas indeed really before him: and in this sleepe frenzie, he could doe nothing but feele *Jacinta's* body with his hands; who in no lesse content and excesse of ioy, raising her Louer from the ground, and ioyning lippes, could hardly beleue it was *Gerardo* she had in her armes.

A prettie while these two Louers remained in this amorous conflict, their content making them minde nothing else, till *Leoncio* satisfide by these extremes in the truth of which he was before doubtfull, wondring at *Jacinta's* resolute determination, approched, dissoluing the streight knot that bound them in their close embraces, and though hee could not but apprehend much hazard from this act of hers, yet beheld such beauty and attractive merit in her person, that *Gerardo's* affection, which before to him seemed blinde, vvas now blamelesse: and considering that in so dangerous a businesse it was fit to take a mature course, without more delay, he desired to know of *Jacinta*, vvhats shift she had made to get thither, that accordingly their after-proceeding might succeed the better. To which the faire Dame made answer, assuring him shee had no other counsellour, but her owne secret thoughts, to which no creature was priuy; wherefore by mutuall consent it was agreed, that *Gerardo* and *Jacinta* should take a journey towards *Arragon*, and in the interim, *Leoncio* to aduize them of the proceeding of her friends; who, hauing instantly (as she was wanting) missed her, vsed all diligence round about the house in her search, where they least suspected the mischief, in the garden they found a little doore that opened

ned to the street; and nere it a table couered with greene and wouen myrtles, where her Gowne and Clothes lay, which should haue beene the ornaments of her Nuptials, but were now the Reliques of a sad remembrance: For know, that as *Iacinta*, at the fond importunity of her Parents, had vnwillingly giuen her hand to her offended Spouse; so repēting as quickly, and in an amorous vehemency, shutting the eyes of reason to all inconueniences, dissembling her discontent, by saying she was not well, she betooke her selfe to her chamber, and stealing from thence by a lower window into the fore-mentioned Garden, and suddenly clapping on the mans attire which shee had in a readinesse, leauing her owne in the place, shee vnder-went the course here related; so much preuailed the memory of *Gerardo* in her tender heart, and the wrong done him, by giuing her word to another.

'Twere needlesse to describe the whole families lamentation for the losse, or the exquisit paines vsed in her search: suffice it, vve bring these Louers to a safe and quiet Port; vwho now vpon their hasty departing, by the good care and ordering of the prudent *Leoncio*, before midnight, without beeing by any espied, well furnished with Iewels and Crownes, tooke their way from that populous City, toward the auncient vnconquered *Numantia*, vvhich they thought at present to be the securest way, and in few daies after, they ioyfully there arriued; and hauing rested awhile, returned againe to their travell, and at length came to their iourneys end, the desired City of *Zaragoza*, to the no little ioy and comfort of the two Louers.

So many and excellent gifts of nature adorne this great City, that deseruedly, aboue the most famous of the renowned style, it merits the royall name of *Cesar Augusta*. Here *Gerardo* for some yeeres was settled, and in respect of the

content he enioyed in his loued company, would not haue changed his condition of life for a farre greater; so confor-  
mable were both their affections, or indeed so superiour *Iacinta's*, admitting no comparifon.

*Gerardo* had with his noble and generous carriage, in short time gained on the best affections in that City, whereby he was as equally beloued, as the best of the Gentry or Inhabitants: to expresse it, in all their Meetings, Masks, Shewes, and what euer Solemnities, aswell priuate as publicke, he still made one, and was chosen as an Vmpire or Stickler amongst all his friends: his most especially professed, was one *Don Iayme de Aragon*, a worthy branch of that royall Name, and landed in the best part of that Kingdom; from whom *Gerardo* concealed not his inmost thoughts, nor the occasions about *Iacinta*, (parties onely spared.) This Gentleman, amongst other possessions that were of his inheritance, not past seuen leagues from *Zaragoza*, had a pretty Village, as well peopled as most in that Countrey, and the best for Summer and shade abounding in dainties, of all *Arragon*; where for his recreation, and fresh coolenesse, he oft vsed to passe the scorching heates: and purposing a iourney thither, with much intreaty, or rather daily importunity, he wonne *Gerardo* at length to accompany him: which chiefly in respect of the great obligations he had to his friendship, he could not but consent to, though it were not possible that *Iacinta* should be left one minute alone, so that after some debating, it was resolved, that all three should goe the iourney. The same day they parted, in delightful conuersation they at night about Sun-set arrived at a Castle which belonged to a Kinsman of *Don Iayme's*, where alighting, they were heartily welcommed, inst at the instant that by another way two Pilgrims also entred, vvho by their fashon and manner of salutation, seemed to  
be

be others then what their course habits made shew of, who in respect they were like to haue beene benighted, vvere forced to intreat the Owner of the Castle to bee pleased to affoord them for that night a lodging; to which he willingly condescended, and shewed the way in to the whole company. *Gerardo* demanded of them (for they seemed to be *Cassilians*) of what part they were, and which way their Pilgrimage lay; to which, one of them answered, that they were of *Andaluzia*, and Inhabitants of the famous Citie of *Seuill*, from whence they trauelled purposely on Deuotion to the best Churches and Monasteries of *Spaine*, whose Patron, they had already seene at *Compostella*, and were going at present to the miraculous Lady of *Zaragoza*.

When *Gerardo* heard him name *Seuill*, he would not (as hauing the good *Leriano* in mind) but ask if they knew such a one, presuming that a Gentleman of his qualitie, could not but haue come to their notice. But no sooner had *Gerardo* breathed out the final accents of his friends name, when the Pilgrim that had spoken to him, vnable to re-fraine, burst into teares, and with weeping sighes made him see, what passion the name of *Leriano* had stirred in him, which also caused no lesse alteration in *Gerardos* mis-giuing brest: and so sitting him downe in the fore-part of a goodly Bay-window looking to the Garden, whilst Supper was preparing (together with *Don Iayme* & the rest) he earnestly requested him, whose griefe made him shed those fresh teares, to declare the cause of such distastefull sorrow, since it must needs be extraordinary, by the resentment it had forced him to.

The wofull man hearing himselfe thus importuned, with a deepe fetcht groane (true signe of his interior anguish) thus vvent on.

Wonder not, gentle Sir, nor thinke it vwomanish in me,  
that

that mine eyes shew this present weakenesse, since the party you mentioned, vvhom I aboue the world affected, may with his remembrance cause in mee farre greater effects: and therefore I most humbly beseech you, not to afflict my wearied spirits, by any further inquiries into that particular: when ending, vvith a new beginning of teares, his griefe serued as sharpe spurres to hasten *Gerardo's* desires, vvho for the same cause that retarded the Pilgrims Narration, was more earnestly perswaded, that some disastrous accident had befallne his old acquaintance: and with the like sorrow (though dissembling it in his looks) hee once againe aduentured. The strict friendship which hath beene betwixt *Leriano* and my selfe, more then impertinent curiositie, obligeth me, that (not obeying your command) I re-intreat you, to deliuer mee from the mortall doubt in which I remaine, by satisfying mee, (though it bee something painfull) since I dare assure you that to giue you ease, I would hazard my person for you, as also for my deare and louing friend I aske for; and let mee tell you that *Leriano* hath not a greater in the vvorld then my selfe, nor one that more vnfaignedly owes him seruice; for such are my engagements, as extend to no lesse then debt of life.

If that be so, said the sad Pilgrim somewhat more cheerefully, you are (doubtlesse) *Gerardo*, of whose maruellous Story I haue often heard our deare friend make mention. Though I purposed (said *Gerardo*) whilst a stranger in these parts, to haue concealed my name, (beeing but in Pilgrimage as it were like you) yet that you may not deny me the fauour I require, I must not hide the truth from you: and therefore you may know mee for the same party, your seruant; and since wee are both true profest friends to *Leriano*, I should be glad you would esteeme me so, and not excuse what I haue so earnestly entreated. Here the Pil-

grime



grime rose vp, and with a lesse cloudy countenance, spreading both Armes, came toward *Gerardo*, saying, Beleeue me, Noblest Sir, As great was my desire of knowing, as the happinesse comfortable of seeing you; giue mee those valorous Armes of yours, let mee embrace the liuely Representer of my true Friend, whom, bootelesse I at present bewaile; 'twere idle in mee now not to obey before you should command (though I must indure a rigorous Torment in the recounting of past accidents) and the greater, since of necessitie: for introduction to your friends sad disaster, I must mention one of the wofullest Tragedies that hath truely and really happened to mortall man in these times: and so saying, ready he was to haue begun, but notice being giuen that Supper was comming, by common consent, the story was deferred till after, to the suspicious *Gerardo's* grieffe, and the rest of the companies, though in different respects. So supper ended, the boord taken away, and all of them attentiuely silent, the mournfull Pilgrime thus began:

Though I may well (illustrious company) bee discouraged to proceed in my promised Enterprise, as well for renewing my immense sorrow, as also for the danger I may vndergoe, there beeing some one amongst you, that may iustly for his friend taxe me of wrong; yet relying on the innocence of mine owne brest, and the noblenesse of yours, I shall make good my purpose, giuing a strict account of my vnfortunate successes; yea, the whole progresse of my life, euen to the instant you behold me in.

First, know then, that my Mother in her vnhappy labour, after her deliuerie of me, dyed: (I not deseruing to know her) so from my tender infancy, I was subiect to all the discomforts, that children are, wanting the carefull eye of a louing Mother, howsoeuer my education beeing in the plen-



plentifull house of *Angelo Milanes* my father, that want was vvell qualified. The hearty affection hee euer bore his loyall Spouse, produced so heauy effects in his sad remembrance by her fatall abfence, that no company or entertainment able to yeeld him comfort, he became (like one of another world) extremely penfatiue; but finding that the place where he was, where he had paff his youth with a louing Wife, might bee the chiefest renuer of his frequent forrow; he determined with himfelfe to haue this inconuenience farther off, by putting the fpacious Ocean betwixt him and home: for hauing fold the beft part of his rich poffeffions, and turning the monies into Merchandize, he imbarqued himfelfe in a tall well-rigged Ship for the West-Indies, and fo to the rich Province of *Pern*, where being with prosperous Gales, after a double Voyage, fafely arrived, landing his commodities, hee made of them a ftrangely gainefull returne, and loading his Ship backe (himfelfe remaining behinde) he configned her to *Senil*, where the goods aboard, the remainder of his Eftate at home, and my felfe, were committed to the charge of a Brother of his my Vnkle; and now (by reafon of his riches & content in thofe remote parts) we defpaired of his returne for a long time; and furely there he might haue till this time ftaid, if heauen had not changed his purpofe, as you fhall fee the occafion of this alteration proceeding from a certaine *Caftilian* Gentleman, of the Imperiall Citie of *Toledo* (called *Leonardo Argentino*) who, hauing prodigally wafte a faire Eftate his inheritance, feeing himfelfe almoft ruined, and his Noble Family haue fcarce wherewithall to paffe a moderate being (taking vp in time before all was confumed) with good (though neceffitous aduice) he refolued vpon the fame Voyage that my Father had formerly done before him, leauing the loued company of  
his

his Wife, with a grieued heart for his departure, and a beautifull young Daughter called *Isdara*, the onely Pledge and comfort of his cares; and though her teares and tender sighes might in the occasion haue melted euen Marble; yet, in the resolute *Leonardo*, they workt no effect; so his afflicted Wife was forced to licence him, for a limited time of seuen yeeres: and then putting the halfe of his estate into stocke and goods, the rest with his Wife and Daughter, he made ouer to the charge and fidelitie, of an old trusty seruant, whom hee loued as an adopted sonne, which, and the being a loyall *Biscayner* by birth, made the discomfortable Gentleman rely the more vpon his faith and honesty.

His good fortune afterward, or rather my ill starres, brought him to the end of his intended Voyage: and hauing made sale of his few commodities, seeking vvitball some kinde of imployment, as presuming vpon the ability of his good parts, he came in a fit coniuncture, at such time as my Father (hauing lost his Bailiffe and Overseer of his Herds, newly dead) was hearkening after another, and by accident they both met (my Father as well satisfide vwith *Leonardo's* person and presence, as the other with his affable and generous disposition:) wherefore striking vp on both sides, for the manner of seruice and recompence, he remained with him, and so carefully discharged his dutie, that in short time my Father might see the increase of that estate that was vnder his hands, with so plentifull an income, that now he himselfe (though present) began to forget and giue ouer all toile, dis-burdening his cares vpon *Leonardo's* shoulders, with whose vigilancie hee liued at ease.

All this while our Bayliffe forgets not the intent of his Voyage, nor those Pledges that expected him at home; for

for with his owne stocke, together with my Farthers bountie, he had now gotten a good estate of money and goods together, multiplying the same yeerely, by the great and rich fraights that yeerely passed betwixt *Spaine* and the *Indies*: so that before his seuen yeeres were accomplished, he was esteemed one of the richest men in the Kingdome, which made him thinke vpon his returne and Countrey: and in this minde, one-day as my Father and he were alone, he made knowne his purpose vnto him; which vwhen hee heard, I cannot expresse the resentment it caused in his passion; and hoping yet that his entreaties might dissuade *Leonardo*, he sought all he could (all in vaine) to diuert him: and yet the other fearing to bee thought vngratefull for so many benefits receiued, if he should not something satisfie with the iust cause of his departure, after hee had made knowne his right name and qualitie; withall, what Pledges he had left behinde, that long looked for his returne; so effectually and powerfull were his reasons, that my Father had not a vword to reply against them: and the discharge hee gaue, caused not this effect alone in my Father, but obliged him also to beare him company, awaking in his heart the dead affection of his house and home. And so resolu'd on their Voyage, against the going of the next Fleete; in the *Interim*, they had leifure, to exchange, sell and put off, all their goods and cattell, which to an incredible number they had in those parts; so that not long after, with two Ships richly laden, and a prosperous Voyage, they arriued at the famous Port of Saint *Lucar*, of which we his kindred hauing had former notice, by the arriuall of a Barke of aduice, vvere there in a readinesse to receiue him. My Father, before they came on shore, taking him, whom hee held as his best friend, to him in priuate thus discoursed:

Most assured I am, friend *Leonardo*, that you are sufficiently

ently perswaded of my loue and affection, as I of yours, in which particular you cannot exceede me ; I would therefore that no humane accident should dislinke this our amity, or that by absence it should any way be slackned. To make it the more lasting and perfect : I haue thought vpon a meanes, your selfe consenting, that shall make that, not onely whilst we liue, firme, but strengthen it in our posterity, by mixing our blouds, and conforming with my desire, by giuing your only daughter to my only son *Roberto Milanes* (for such is my vnfortunate name) to Wife ; which may soon take effect, if Heauen haue been pleased to blesse these our Pledges, with the life that we desire : I shall bee glad herein to receiue your resolution.

*Leonardo's* answer was, to cast himselfe at my Fathers feete (his eyes starting out teares of content) and mustering vp the seuerall delights of his soule, with words worthy his noblenesse, after he had extolled my Father in his actions, he not onely offered him his onely Daughter, which he demanded for me; but ioynd to it a new & transcendent protestation, of goods, life and honour: and so embracing each other, on shore they came, to our infinite content that expected him, who had now beene eightene yeeres from his natie soyle, my selfe being about sixe yeeres of Age when he left *Spaine*. I forbore to expresse my owne ioy, which he may onely conceiue, that knowes what it is to bee the sole sonne of a Father.

Wee stayed not long in the Port; for such was my Fathers longing, to see his desired home, that we were quickly at *Senil*, where, I being acquainted with his minde, touching the match, disposed my selfe like a dutifull sonne, to obey his command, preparing my selfe, yvith all alacritie to the iourney; in the meane time, that a Post was now returned, sent by *Leonardo*, as soone as he came on shore, to his

his City, and home, with the newes of his landing, and the Posts returne as it gaue my Father-in-Law infinite content by hearing of his deare Wife and Daughter ; so it caused no lesse in me to bee informed by the Messenger to the full of my desire, of my Spouse her excellent parts, and admirable beautie ; which made mee stand vpon thornes till I might depart, though my Father-in-law lost no time for vs both : and sending before him the best part of his goods and treasure , and after taking a passionate leaue of his dearly intimate friend my Father, setting downe the day of my setting forward, by such time as we should heare of his arriuall at home, hee betooke him to his way ; and comming in few dayes to his iourneys end. Consider, worthy Gentles, if, at his welcomming, those ancient teares for his departure might be renewed, though producing at present a more different effect.

My Father-in-law with the generall encrease he found in his house, as well of the small estate hee left , as the rare beauty and discretion of his beloved *Isaura*, health , and content of his Wife, seruants and whole Familie ; Iudge whether he could chuse but rest most thankfully obliged to gracious Heauen, to whose goodnesse , yeelding a due acknowledgement, he gaue notice to his Wife, of the intended match ; and finding her, conformable to his wish, to the generall gladnesse of his household, and friends, hee began to prepare for the ensuing Nuptials. The day of my departure now at hand, with my Fathers blessing , and a leaue taken of yours and my deare friend *Leriano*, accompanied with a seruant or two, in foure dayes Posts, I came in sight of the ancient walles of *Toledo*, my Wife and her Father, Countrey and Mansion, where beeing arriued and at the house, in stead of a ioyfull receptacle, I found it nothing but a harbour of griefe, teares, and confused sadnesse  
(a thing



(a thing that caused great amazement in mee) though when the owners knew of my arriual, I was by them ioyfully welcomed ( my presence being an euident comfort to the sorrow that afflicted them ) of which I needed no other information, then to see the dead body of their old seruant, the trustie *Bispeyner* shewed me, which was laid vnder a blacke Horse, strooke thorow with fise cruell wounds, found early that morning, laid at the street doores threshold, and wrapped in a bloody sheete, not any so much as imagining, who, how, or when hee should be thus lamentably butchered, though extraordinary search had been made to finde out the Author. They told mee how they had brought him vp from a little one, how much they loued him for his good seruice, how faithfull hee had beene in his Masters absence, and what a misse by his death they were like to haue of him; so that (all considered) me thought their griefe was not exorbitant, and satisfide, for that which otherwise had been somewhat of the slightest, my welcome. Thus by this accident, my marriage was two dayes longer adiourned, which to me were yeeres of tedious prolixitie: for hauing gotten a gracious sight of my new Mistris, my ardent desires, incited by so much beauty, increast in me with more violence.

At length the prefixed day came, together with the wished night, in which hauing to my vnspeakeable ioy reaped from my Bride the sweet fruit, amorously passing the rest of it, at length (our bodies mutually in each others Armes enterlaced) we fell asleepe. But not long were our weary limmes laid to soft rest, when my Wife with her hands and sudden affrighting shriekes awoke mee, and lowd lowd cries raised mee to the helpe of her Fathers house, that was now all on a light flame; at which I was so astonisht, that without so much as a question, taking my  
night.



night-gowne, I nimble leapt out of the Chamber, vvhether the smoake and sparkles of the vntamed Element, that euen now mounted vp to it's owne Sphere, euen blinded me; and running vvhether the flame was greatest, I might see my Father and Mother gotten thither, and the rest of the house also, by which time the Bels had giuen their accustomed signall of the danger; whereupon (the neighbourhood and Citie all in a confused uproare) vvith their helpe, the mercilesse flames vv ere soone humbled. All our house vv as nothing but noife, vvringing and wailing; in midst of vv hich, I might most lowdly heare my wiu es screeches, that, fearing lest some disa ster had besalne her, finding her quickly out by the eccho of her shrill cryes, I might view her supported by her Mother, haui ng falne in a deepe swoone into her Armes, not farre from a deep Well, about vv hich, diuers of the seruants were gotten together vvith much stirre; vvhereupon, seeing my *Isaura* in so sad plight, my torment increast, and the more, vvhen they told me the cause of her sudden dismaying, no lesse vvofull then the lamentable end of the vv unhappie *Biscayner*; for a handsome discreet maid-seruant of hers, following his vv luckie fate, a little before I came, haui ng been earnest to draw water to quench the fire ( vv whether vvith some fright or other accident falling in ) in an instant ( there being no meanes to saue her ) vv as drowned: and beeing vvithin a vv hile after drawne vp, my Wife and Mothers moanes were againe renewed, and so extremely, in respect of their loue to the poore Wench brought vp frō a child by them, that I thought it impossible to comfort them, especially for me, that in such cases needed it as vv ell, as much my selfe.

But time cured in them their griefes, though vvith mee they are still present; neither can I forget those propheticall boadings of my vvretched marriage ( vv hich thus accomplished )

complished) and not long after, my Father with diuers Letters hastning our departure, taking leaue of my *Isdaura's* friends, with much grieffe wee parted, hauing the good *Leriano* in our company, who vvas now (returned from Court) bound vvith vs for *Seuil*, from whence some little vvhile after me, he had formerly absented himselfe. Hee came thus seasonably to *Toledo*, and so we had a most pleasing journey, vnderstanding from him, by the vvay, your vnhappy misfortunes. At last wee arriued at our home, where we were still expected, and by my Father welcomed, vvhere *Isdaura*, with the dainties and varietie of the place, quickly forgot her absent Parents and kindred.

And hauing for our better freedome taken a house to liue in apart from my Father, we vv ere often visited by my worthy friend *Leriano*: so vv ell and happily liued I with my loued wife, that I could scarce be from her sight a minute; those faire eyes beeing the Adamants that attracted my vv hole content. But cruell fortune would not allow mee many yeeres of this prosperous estate, as, enuious of the firmenesse of our amorous quiet.

At this time *Leriano's* friendship and mine vvas as strict, as on both sides equally required, not a day escaped vs, in which one of vs saluted not the other, either he coming to my house, or I going to his lodging; our loue so reciprocally, as had one vvombe at first owned vs, or the selfe-same blood giuen vs nourishment.

One day amongst others, in which it was not possible for *Leriano* to see me, or for me to meeete with him, each of vs (Louer-like) iecalous of each other, and both attributing to neglect, were willing with the same intent to meet in our obligations.

So somewhat late at night, I went to stay for him at his lodging, & he to my home to expect me, where he found that

H

my

my loued *Isaura*, hauing not beene very well, was gone to bed, and entertaining the time with her in my absence, stayed thus expecting mee till night beganne to bee very farre spent; when I (perceiuing also his stay) remitted for that time my hope of seeing him; and returning to my house, found the doore locked, (a thing vnusuall, I from home) and hauing diuers times knocked, wondring at the delays, and suspicious for so slight a matter, I peeped at a small chinke of the doore to see what might bee the cause: but would Heauen, I had beene blinde, vvhē I was thus curious; a shee-slauē I might see comming downe staires to let mee in, and behinde her a man, vvho being beneath, crossed toward my Garden doore, which bred such an astonishing alteration within mee as you may easily suppose; in this amazement, as soone as I was entred, I rushed after into the Garden, where I might perceiue the partie running to hide himselfe amongst certaine thicke Myrtles, which sooner then my speed were the cause of his vntimely death; for being intangled in those thicke boughes, vnable to stand vpon his Guard, with my sword drawne, I gaue him three desperate thrusts, not heeding his calling me by name, or crying out to hold, till falling to the ground, I knew him, whom so inhumanely I had laid at my feete to be my best of friends, my *Leriano*. And being fully assured of it, letting fall the weapon from my angry arme, I remained as neere death, as hee that lay before mee, who now with a faint and languishing voice, desired me to get a Confessor to him; I lost my senses, and with the wicked Act was readie to runne madde, at such time as in these last accents of his, I might heare mine owne mischiese, and my friends innocence.

How hath heauen suffered, deare *Roberto*, that at this time your friendly sword should become my homicide?

in

in what had your *Leriano* offended you, that you should take so rash a reuenge on him ? But alas, why complaine I of you, whom I pardon my death? an vnnecessary diligence of mine owne gaue way to it, sprung from a wary care of your vvife, vvwhose faith to you hath equalled my loyalty, the vvwhich, (heauen can witnesse) towards you, hath euer been intiolable. But his swift Fate, allowing him not a minute longer to expound his intricate meaning, clozing his eclipsed eyes, he gaue vp his spirits in my armes, mine being so much tormented, that sure I had then followed him, had I beene fully satisfied in the icalous doubts that afflicted me; to vvwhich end leauing my dead friend, to my Wifes chamber I went, whom neither there, nor any where else I could find, onely the squeaking and noyse of her maydes euen rent my heart, who crying out on their Mistris, doubled my distraction, and still increast it, when one of them said, *Isaura* had cast her selfe out of the vvindow in her smocke, as soone as she heard the good *Leriano* cry out, and the vnhappy newes of his innocent death, fearing iustly her owne, from my indignation, vvwhich (though faultlesse) might light vpon her. I began to demand the cause, why *Leriano* hid himselfe: they told me, 'twas at her instance; for being (as you heard) in discourse vvith her, when she heard me knocke at the doore, knowing it to bee shut (though through the forgetfulnesse of her seruants) thinking the noueltie, and *Leriano's* vnreasonable company might ingender some base suspition against her honesty; not calling to mind, that brotherly affection betweene vs, she grew so timorous, that (vvithout better aduice) by pure intreaties she commanded the vvwilling *Leriano* to that miserable shift: for thus euer rashnesse drawes on such heavy mischiefes. Consider, Gentlemen, I beseech you, whether my hand were faulty, or his indiscretion rather, that vvould suffer it

selfe to be guided by the fearefull counsell of an afflicted vvoman.

Heauen can witnes for me, that as oft as I resoluë in my sad fancie, the disastrous end of my deare friend, I am willing to inflict the like on my selfe, (though in all equity and rigour I am reserved from it.) But the loue I bore him, obligeth me to such a determination, since I may truly affirm, that the knowne affection I ought my louing vvife, had no aduantage ouer his and mine : of her I neither heard or knew any thing; and for inquiring was saued a labour, being necessarily inforced to shift for mine owne life; which I did, getting as soone as I could, out of my troubled house into a charitable Couent of *Carthusian* Monkes; by whom I was most courteously receiued; assuring mee, that I should remaine in quiet Sanctuary with them, free from any trouble for my misfortune. There I was for some dayes visited by my friends, as well as spied and hearkened after by mine enemies: for though euen in their passion my innocence might haue saued me, yet they would not affoord mee the least credit in my accidentall mishap.

Awhile after I had thus rested in Sanctuary, my wife I heard had also taken refuge at a Monastery of Nunnes, called *Bethlem*; for hauing (as you heard) that night leapt into the street, not knowing whither to go, shee entred the first house she saw open, and being receiued by the owner, when they knew her, and vnderstood of the pitifull accident; and vvithall, the strict search, that as well by my order, as necessary obligation of Iustice was made for her, they thought best to conduct her to that Monastery; from whence I had present notice, and then my mind began to recover some small rest; though it continued but awhile, considering how my hard fortune began againe to torment me. These grieuous, and scarce to bee imagined disasters,



so vvrung the tender heart of my beloued *Isdaura*, that hastened by the terrible bruiſe ſhe receiued in her fall, vnable now to auoid Heauens decree, ſhee fell into a desperate ſickneſſe; vvith vvhich, and the continuall remembrance of her tormenting thoughts terribly aſſaulted, conſidering her ſelfe now in the tongues of the giddy Multitude, her honour and reputation in the duſt, the pangs of death haſtened vpon her; a little before her end ſhe called the Abbeſſe to her, and giuing her a Letter cloſely ſealed, earneſtly deſired, it might be ſafely conueyed vnto me, vvhereſoeuer I vv ere; vvhich came to my hands, iuſt as the newes of her lamentable death to my care. I need not here paint out my ſoules grieve, or loſſe of ſences; for certainly the beeing de- priued of them, vv as the defence of my life, vv hich as yet is but a liuing death, for the owners greater puniſhment: and now to giue ſome reliefe to my memory, vvith the deſired end of this miſerable Story, the remainder you ſhall haue in theſe laſt Lines of hers; vv hich Paper, for a deare pledge, in remembrance of the Writer, ſhall ſerue me as a companion, till Deſtiny vvith her mortall ſtroke diuide vs. And this ſaid, to the wonderfull cōpaſſion of the ſuſpence- full Auditors, vnbuttoning his coorſe haire-cloth weed, he drew out of his boſome, a neatly-wrought ſiluer Boxe; and from vvithin that, a Letter; vv hich vnwrapping, and vvith ſome ſad teares kiſſing, he read out in this manner follow- ing:

*Isdaura to Roberts.*

**T**He time at length is come, Deare Spouſe, that I muſt pay that vnpardonable debt, from vvhoſe rigorous execution none can be exempted; and though (as mortall) I feele and feare the affrighting trance, yet he knowes, vvho



expects to be my Iudge, that the for-euer leaving your amiable company, is the greatest torment that on earth afflicts my soule, vvhich vveepes at this bitter farewell, it cannot see yet, and a little inioy your selfe; the better to satisfie your doubtfull opinion, and confirme my inculpable loyalty, vvhich from the first houre of our Matrimony hath euer beene inuiolable. And since it is now high time to deliuer truthes, (the discouery of my sad hearts secrets being so necessary to my soules saluation) it shall be fitting, loued Owner mine, that the vvorld and you, now at length, be priuy to a secret; which, to the too long preiudice of my soule and conscience, I haue hitherto concealed. Passie but your eyes ouer these last Lines, and you shall be satisfied touching an offence of mine, (if that might be thought so to your honour, vvhich was executed against my will and consent, and without the interuention of Matrimony) though I part assured of your good construction, and mine owne innocence in this particular; for vvith you and the world, mine honour shall rest in its true worth vnblemished.

I presume, loued *Roberto*, you haue not forgotten your first heauy welcome to my fathers house, (the sad forerunner happely of these present ills.) You may also remember what diligence was vsed to find out the murderer of our Steward and seruant the *Biscayner*, though to small purpose, since it was neuer knowne, nor would till the day of Iudgement, if mine now, swiftly approaching, did not menace me; for this last eternall danger enforceth mee to declare my selfe his murtheresse. I shall carry to the Soueraigne Tribunall for my discharge, (though my repentance be the greatest) his bold and trecherous attempt: Know then, my best Signior, that no sooner came the arriual of my Father, together with the resolution of my intended Matrimony to that mans notice; vvhen, to our no small admiration, he fell  
sud-

suddenly sicke in bed of a flow, but tormenting Feuer: my Parents, that loued him as their owne, perceiuing his danger, sought to get him some helpe, though no Phisician in *Toledo* could apply the least remedy: they concluded, that his sicknesse was onely of Melancholy, vvhich making vs so in generall for him, increased in the sicke man more and more, till the night before your arriual, he broke his mind to me, and to my cost, made knowne his infirmity.

About midnight, mine eyes willing to rest, as being long kept waking with the thought of your arriual, I might heare some paces in my Chamber, and calling my drowisie senses together, lifting vp my face, it had like to haue encountered with the sicke mans; at whose sudden approach, I was nothing dismayed, as nothing misdoubting his intents, rather like a sister I fel a chiding him for this excesse (ignorant of his purpose) to which, with an inward grone, and furious lookes nail'd to my eyes, he thus answered:

Howeuer, *Isdaura*, there be no helpe for mee, but what must come from those tender hands, (my life lying in them) thou that owest me so much, wilt not prooue vngratefull to my good deedes and seruice, though thy cruel parents thus hardly intreat me. Who would haue thought of thy Father, that hee should so vnthankfully haue recompenced the paines, which in thy education, and honest sustaining his family in his absence, I haue vndergone: onely because I hoped to reape the benefit in thy amiable desired companie, which vniustly, my *Isdaura*, he deprives mee of? This is my torment, the mischiefe and sicknesse that afflicts me; which, as time runnes on, so that increaseth; and the more, by thy growing neerer to bee in anothers power: I come therefore, prepared, not to leaue this roome, till I haue health, by hauing thee for mine, though it cost me my life, if in thy presence I must lose it, which is the antidote and

wholesome Phisician to my mind. Thy husband I must be, since Heauen to mee alone hath reserued the happinesse : thy faire hand must be the answer, deferre not then my blessing, for I feare no refusall, since in mine owne will lies the satisfaction of my desire. I shall make no doubt with this Ponyard to kill you, if I perceiue but the least contradiction; and drawing a sharpe Dagger, claps it to my brest, to my no small amazement : for scarce could I giue credit to the successe of what I saw before me : the very Chamber seemed to shake with my feare ; and long it was, ere my tongue could vtter so much as the least Syllable : on one side mine honours danger tormented me, on the other, a female cowardize : I began to thinke on some sleight that might either deferre my death, or preserue my chastity : and to this purpose sought to dissuade him from his, not so much as vilifying his treachery, rather making him a thousand promises, with fained oathes, to be his wife, and ioyntly (because I supposed that might content him) gaue him my hand; which he no sooner got, but mee withall in his armes; till at last, wanting breath and courage to defend my selfe, he had his will, making mee subiect to his lust. But iust Heauens, to whose soueraigne goodnesse the dumbe complaints of my wofull heart had now ascended, would not permit a due punishment for so base a fact to be deferred; of which, my hands and his dagger were the executioners : for no sooner had soft rest taken truce with his lasciuious fury, (secure that hee slept in his wiues armes) when, strengthened by my dishonour, and the dolorous resentment of my Parents, my feminine feare putting on a masculine courage, and wholly disposed to a bloody reuenge, taking the sharpe dagger, which before was a bridle to my resistance, and thrusting him to the heart, thwarting also his body with many other wounds, I opened a wide  
passage

passage to that infidell soule; and dragging the wretched bodie, weltring in goare-blood, wrapping it (as well as I could without being perceiued) in a sheet, left it vpon the threshold of our street doore. My misfortunes so stopped not, rather with your comming they increast, in such manner, that but for feare of hell fire, I had sacrificed mine owne life, seeing my selfe so neere a knowne infamy. But the comfort of a maid of mine, changed that desperate imagination; one, that was my companion from a child, and as then Secretary to my most hidden thoughts: though this (as being of so great consequence) I feared to make knowne vnto her; but shee perceiuing my extreme vexation, wondred much, (as thinking I had now most reason to be ioyfull) and so with louing intreaties requested the cause of my grieffe, and I (for now necessitie had no law with me) making choice of *Iulia* for a dead list, satisfied of her true affection, told her the occasion of my distraction, but without any mention of the *Biscayner*, laid my dishonour to anothers charge, relying wholly vpon her person for my liues remedy; and so with the pittifullest reasons that the necessity of time would permit me, I reduced her to my will, preparing her to make good my defect, with the integritie of her honesty, which (I nothing doubted) but was entire. *Iulia* could not but refuse the danger, aswell for her losse, as other vncertainties of the successe. But to free mee (out of her loue) from such a strait, made her shut her eyes; and so my plot tooke effect: for hauing the night of our marriage, placed *Iulia* behind our bed Curtaines, and faining modestie, commanded the lights to be put out, darknesse fauouring, and *Iulia* supplying my roome; neither was the deceit knowne, nor you perceiued the exchange.

Not long after, she belike either wearied, or taken with  
the

the sweet of so much pleasure, contrary to the order I had giuen, fell asleepe, and now I knew not which in mee was most, my iealousie or feare, and my rage increased the more, when (hearing the Clocke strike three) I saw so little memory in her of my danger. This and the difficulty of waking her, without being perceiued by you, made me vndergo as desperate a course, as that of the *Biscayner*: for without better aduice, or more delay, beginning at the dining roomes Tapisstry, with a Torch, I by chance found lighted, I set it all on fire, til it was almost consumed; and hoping that with the vprore, (my Father and the whole house raised) you would take no notice of ought but my cries, embracing you closely, and crying, Fire, fire: you awoke, and frightfully leapt out of your bed and the chamber; leauing me with *Iulia*, and so sensible of the mischiefe, that (by her neglect) I was forced to, that I was ready to haue runne her thorow with your sword. This iust anger of mine was furthered with the remembrance of what might hereafter ensue, to thinke I should haue her a Corriual in my desires, and (taking her to be too shallow a vessel for my secrets) the matter at least was doubtfull, and I like to become a slaue to her litle constancie, which necessity had made me subiect to. This sorrowful thought still pursued me, whilst you and the rest of the Family were quenching the violent flames; and so vnder colour of helping, taking *Iulia* by the hand, we went downe, vwhere the seruants were hastily drawing vwater; and as they went and came, laying hold vpon a fit opportunity, to be free from the confusion I was in, bidding *Iulia* draw me a little water; whilst she vvas performing it, with a small push I toppled her into the deepe Well; where giuing her leaue awhile to struggle with her last agonie, when I supposed her to be thoroughly dead, dissembling my cruell ingratitude, crying out vvith fained teares, aswell to my



my parents, as your selfe and the rest, I made *Julia's* misfortune as casuall, and my sorrow to bee true, infallibly beleueed. This diuellish act, this horrid sinne, is that which now lights to her shame, and heauy dishonour, on your vnfortunate vvife, vvho hath euer truly loued and obeyed you, as Heauen can witnesse. And therefore vvith this last Adieu, deare Signior, liue happy and assured, that by mee, your honour hath no whit beene blemished; rather, notwithstanding my affront, I haue giuen this latest testimony, desiring about all things, that you should be fully satisfied: which if you be, (if in this grieuous departure there may be comfort) my sad soule shall haue it; the care of which I recommend to your loue and Christian zeale, by giuing the clearest satisfaction you can, for the two former murders, as also for the last accident which not least torments me.

Here ceased that happy soule, here it left the rare and beautifull Vrne her Corps: and here, noble Gentlemen, my patience quite spunne out, in this habit you see, and this company, I left *Seuil*, determining in this peregrination to end my loathed life; if, worthy *Gerardo*, you pretend not to reuenge your deare friends misfortunes on my head, that willingly layes it selfe at your feer. With these words the grieved *Roberto* ended his mournfull tale, vvith such plenty of teares, that the spectators could not but beare him a little company with theirs; till awhile after, *Gerardo*, drying his eyes, vttered these words:

You haue taken, Signior, so cruell a reuenge vpon your selfe, with so lamentable successe, that, had you beene most faulty in *Leriano's* death, you haue left no one part about you whole, where a satisfaction may be had: For my part rest secure, that though my friends sad fate haue grieved my very soule, yet your griefes are so great, that I had rather



ther seeke to assuage them, then adde more affliction to you: Heauen comfort you, and giue you ease to your woes: and so retiring heauily out of the roome, hee gaue way to the rest, to entertaine and comfort the poore Pilgrim, who passed a good part of the night with him in discourse, till it was time to betake them to their rest.

The next morning the two Pilgrims taking their leaues, went on, and *Don Layme* and *Gerardo* did the like, still wondering at the pitifull relation they had heard. That day they came to a pleasant Village to passe the heate, where they agreed to leaue *Iacinta* (as being the iust halfe way of their iourney) in a Monastery of Nunnes, of which *Don Layme's* Aunt was Abbesse, till such time as they had cleared a certaine doubt; which was, that hauing met a seruant sent to *Don Layme* purposely from his owne towne, they vnderstood, that as that day, a Commissioner arriued there, sent from the King, in great secrecy to performe some piece of diligence: a thing that much perplexed these Gentlemen; the one, in respect of the dangerous party that came with him; the other, for the confusion hee was in, ignorant of what that diligence might produce in his Lordship. And though the occasion was after knowne to bee little concerning either of them, (for that the Iudge was sent by the *Supreme Councell of Orders*, concerning a certaine Order of Knighthood) yet they thought fit, till they were fully satisfied, to leaue *Iacinta* there: who when she heard it, suspecting some other intent, grew to such extreme contradiction, and pitifull intreaties, that her Louer seeing them accompanied with her teares, vvas ready to haue returned backe with her, but that *Don Layme*, somewhat discontented, dissuaded him: and so being vnable to reduce her to their aduice with her good-will, against it (*Don Layme* making knowne the reason to his Aunt at the Couent) they there left

left her; so grieved, as were she to haue taken her latest leaue of her *Gerardo*, or had seene him strooke dead with wounds before her. This was the first breach that dislink't these two affections: *Iacinta* perswaded that *Gerardo* had forsaken her; a suspicion that (take it but once hold) can neuer be remooued; as from this instant, this Dames example will plainly demonstrate. The enamoured Gentleman was no lesse troubled, till he came to the end of his iourney, though they were not slacke to returne, hauing beene first surely informed of the occasion of the Commissioner, which was the same formerly set downe: so the next morning by tenne a clocke, they were backe, and alighted at the Monastery doore, with such seruent desire in *Gerardo* to see his *Iacinta*; that euery minute of deferring it, seemed an age of absence, and last, calling in the Porch at the Grate, the Abbesse hearing of their beeing there, came forth; whom, when they had saluted, they requested, the faire *Iacinta* might be called; which, when one of the Nunnes went to performe, returning a pretty while after backe, and with the Abbesses leaue, turning to *Gerardo*, she thus said: How-focuer I being but a messenger and commanded, might be freed from any distaste I am like to giue, yet I beseech your pardon, Signior *Gerardo*, in respect of the message I returne you, vvhich will necessarily offend you. The faire *Iacinta*, whom I went to call, requested mee on her behalfe, to intreat that you would be pleased to condescend to her will; which is, resolutely to remaine in this Monastery, and with the habit of our sacred Order. Shee likewise willed me to beseech you, to vouchsafe, since you haue Gold and Jewels of hers to good value, to supply with part of them her wants, and withall, to pay a portion for her admittance into the holy House, that so she may be quietly settled to her deuotion and prayer for your soules health. This shee  
withedi

wished me to make knowne vnto you; you, Signior, like a Christian, and a Gentleman, may now determine on what this Dame demands, and so much concerne her felicitie. Here the religious Nunne ceased, neither did *Gerardo's* sudden passion allow her a further preamble: for his heart ready to burst within him, and his very eyes sending forth sparkles of liuely fire, turning to the Abbess, he said, It is not possible, Lady, that such discourse could proceed from my *Iacinta*, neither can I from so long, so true a friendship as hath beene betwixt vs, beleue so slight, so forgetfull a farewell; so assured am I of her firmenesse, that though mine eares were witnesses to the sound of such words from her selfe, I should hardly giue credit vnto them: I cannot but thinke her too innocent of such a noueltie, and therefore beseech you to resolue me in the truth of this busines, though indeed *Iacinta's* sight will be my hearts more effectuall satisfaction. Here *Don Iayme* taking his turne, (no lesse angry then his friend) desired the same of his Aunt; who told them, that what they heard of *Iacinta*, was infallibly true; and withall, how no longer agoe then last night, she receiued so much from her owne mouth; and shee requested her also, not to suffer her to be taken out of the Conuent, which in all religious and Christian obligation shee was tyed not to consent to. But neuerthelesse importuned by the two friends, she endeouored to haue her appeare; and so leauing them in the porch, where at the doore their ready horses awaited them, shee went to make good her promise, though it tooke no effect; or perhaps her selfe was vnwilling, that *Iacinta* should come to *Gerardo*, whom striving with her best language to comfort, shee endeouored withall to blot his Mistress out of his remembrance.

But so forcible was this disdainefull blowe in his sad and sicke fancy, that regardlesse of lifes danger, heauens offence,  
and

and the hazzard of his honour, hurried on with furious rage, not once considering the sacrilegious act hee attempted, (turning to *Don Iayme*, his right foot clapt to the Monasterie doore) he vsed this succinct Discourse:

Companion and friend, the fire that flames within mee, is immense, my passion terrible, *Iacinta's* wrong aboue both. I haue oft counselled her to this course, when had she heretofore taken it, my weary life had been secured, and her friends with the glad newes comforted, but I could neuer get her consent; which assures me, that her leauing me now, is other then Deuotion: I must not therefore giue way to it: you are a Gentleman, and I am your friend, and such, that vpon any occasion of yours, would hazzard a life at least once for you. Let this engage you to make good the entrance at this doore, whilst I enter in and effect my purpose, or dye in the demand. Which said, not expecting any answer, nor so much as harkening to the exclamations of the Nunnes, taking her in one hand that brought him the message, and his sword in the other, he cast himselfe into the forbidden Couent; where quickly, with his Guides helpe, comming into a spacious Cloyster, he saw the occasion of his crime, set very iocundly amongst some others of the Nunnes. They that were with her, and shee that came with *Gerardo*, seeing him so outrageous, in a moment vanished: but *Iacinta* had not the power to follow, not so much as to stirre from her seare: for *Gerardo's* sudden surprisall and sight had left her euen now like a dead body, who lifting her vp by one arme from ground, his tongue vnable to expresse the least part of his minde, without speaking one word, the way he came, but more speedily, he conueyed her out: for by this, the noise and clamour of the Nunnes increased so fearefully, as if the walles or whole building had beene ready to come vpon them: whereupon the vproare  
of

of the neighbourhood and Village was no lesse, and in an instant, almost a hundreth persons were gotten to the doore that *Don Iayme* kept: though most, or all of them vnarmed, with small defence the two friends made shift to get to Horse: *Gerardo* setting *Jacinta* ( who was euen in a dead traunce) on the saddle Bow before him: and the valiant *Aragonian* breaking thorow the presse that hindered him, made way with his sword, enlarging an open passage to his friend that came after, and none able to stop or stay them, they galloped on; and seeing some follow, mended their pace, and betooke them to their full speed (*Gerardo* now got formost) till such time as they might bee somewhat freer from the danger: but in this distracted flight, as in all things else, *Gerardo* was infinitely vnfortunate: for night shutting in darke vpon them, *Don Iayme* losing sight of him, and he his way, they were both vnluckily separated, neither could after, so much as by Letters meet.

*Gerardo*, that had thus lost his friend, though not his iourney (for now all the world was his way) perceiuing *Jacinta's* weakenesse, settled her as easily as he could, and faire and softly, not knowing whether he went backward or forward, rode on till the next morning, till such time as he found himselfe inclosed in a rough & thick Mountaine, in which hauing des-piteously wandred, til towards noon, (*Jacinta* now extremely heavy with drowsinesse) at length as good lucke would, hee came to a Shepherds cottage, where both being welcomed by the owners, alighted, and *Gerardo* endeououred all he could, to giue ease and refreshment to his vngratefull Mistris; whose wearinesse as much afflicted the poore Gentleman, as the apprehension of his danger; though from that, hee were secure enough, as well in respect of the desert Mountaine, as for that he was farther fiō the Monastery then he imagined:  
for



for in this yet he was happy, that knowing no foot of the way, he was from thence, at least ten leagues distant : and *Iacinta* that afternoone being somewhat more cheerefully reuiued, taking direction for the neereſt good towne, they returned to their iourney, and that night arrived where they deſired, where *Gerardo* tooke a priuate lodging, that he might the better and more commodiouſly cure his Miſtreſſes indiſpoſition, which was not ſo ſlight, but it kept them almoſt a moneth from a iourney hee intended to the Citie of *Valencia* ; at length they ſet forward againe, and trauelled toward that pleaſant and plentiful Citie. So when they were gotten within a dayes iourney, the two (as ſeemed to *Gerardo*, but not to the warie Dame) as louing a couple as euer, ( the morning beeing freſh ) to preuent the Sunnes heate, they were on horſebacke before day-broke. They treated of ſuch ſucceſſes as came into their mindes, and *Gerardo* thus diuerſed in the ſweet (though diſſembled) conuerſation of his *Iacinta*, looking about, ſaw he was out of his way, got into a thick Groene of ſtrong Oakes, from whence willing to get out toward the loſt path, he was more cunningly intangled in this other : ſo that riding on, thus loſt and melancholly, it was not long ere certaine ſad and pitifull groanes came to his eares, which by ſits and ſhort intermiſſions ſtrooke him to the heart.

The further he went on, the neerer hee grew to this moane ; ſo ſuppoſing it muſt needs not be farre off, he haſtened all he could, though now broad day was come vpon him ; by whoſe ſplendour, hee might plainely ſee all round about him ; as alſo a little brooke, on whoſe Margent he trauelled, part of which was ſtained with ſome freſh drops of bloud, the red framing in that greene, variouſ, (though ſcarefull) formes of enamelling : at which



he and *Iacinta* were not a little amazed : but calling to minde those former successes of his owne Tragical Story, constant to all danger, he kept on his way, led on by the sound of the voice, euen to the very source of the water ; till beeing come amongst certaine thornie Bryers (within which was a little Meddow) he might see in midst of it a confus'd shape and Bulke, that onely by the groanes it sent forth, he ghesse'd to be a humane creature. It lay there without motion in a very Lake of bloud, with which all the neere grasse was sprinkled, and the Riuer participated of the improper tribute.

The Noble *Gerardo* was so affected with the sight, that he threw himselfe in an instant from the Saddle, and *Iacinta* also leauing hers, they made toward the wounded corps, which they found left naked, and saw that shee was a woman, which made their compassion the greater. She seemed to them (though now pale and disfigured) young and handsome : though they were much troubled and hopelesse of her lifes remedy : her body was full of wounds, (and which caused most horror) left barbarously disrobed. The tender eyes of the two Louers could not but shed teares, and wound the ayre with their sighs. But since grieve was but a meane remedy to the present mischiefe ; *Gerardo*, supposing they were not farre from some towne, determined to conuey the bloody creature to the neere place : and to this effect taking off his riding Coat) which he wore ouer a strong Buffe Ierkin (and Belt of Pistols, together with some of her owne cloathes laid by, lapped her in them, and as easily as he could, sate her vpon his Horse, on which hee and *Iacinta* sustaining her on both sides vp, they went faire and softly, getting out of the thick Groue, Heauen ere long permitting them to fall into the high-way, from whence they might espy (to their seeming)

a good

a good populous towne, about some halfe a league from them. *Gerardo* was much grieued to see the parties continuing losse of blood; and seeing how softly they went, fear'd shee might dye before they could get her a Confessor: Whereupon he determined to leaue her with *Jacinta*; to whom making knowne his intent, and shee approving it, leaping into the Saddle, and taking the neereſt way to the towne, in all diligence he haſtned toward it.

About this time (the Sunne newly mounted) two Religious *Ieronimite* Fryers came riding toward him vpon their strong & lusty Moyles, whom, when he saw, he fancied them to be rather then humane soules, Cherubins; and so, with a ioyfull countenance, stopping his Horse, he stayed till they approached: and having courteously saluted them, intreated them to goe with him not farre off, where, by their helpe, in a case of necessitie, they might gain a Soule, whose saluation consisted in their brieſe approach: but in ſtead of an answer, hee might see that both Masters and men, looking and staring vpon each other, were all dumbe: which, being duely weighed, they were not to bee blamed for their slackneſſe; for who would not (conſidering his Armes) but at the leaſt haue ſuſpected him to haue been a Captaine of ſome Theeues, frequent in that Prouince, notwithstanding the care of our Viceroyes to ſcower the coaſt?

But returning to my purpoſe, thoſe Religious men did verily belecue what is rehearſed; and ſuppoſing his crue not to be farre off, cryed out for mercy, and liſting their hands to Heaven, requested him that vvas farre from a thought of wronging them, to haue pitie vpon them, laying before him their profeſſion, and how much hee ſhould offend God in iniuring them: and laſtly taking their well-ſtuffed purſes out of their pockets, & ſome of their cloathes

to boote, they offered them vnto him, vvho was ashamed of their base feare; and yet on the other side, not knowing how to perswade vvith them; and seeing the fellows that came with them runne speedily backe toward the towne, more fearfull though of the poore wounded creature, then his owne danger, shewing more fury and indignation, then his pious minde vvvas willing, he threatned to kill them, if they performed not his request, and facing one of them with his Pistoll; so terrible were both their feares, that without a word answering they now followed him; vvhich they had done, even to Hell it selfe, could he haue conducted them, such vvvas their miserable cowardize: soone vvve they come to the place where *Gerardo* left the bloudlesse Trunke, vvhich they found as yet struggling vvith Destiny. Heere one of the Fryers alighting began to speake to her, when *Gerardo's* heart (vvho in all this vvhile had not discovered *Iacinta*) vnable to be at quiet vvithin him, thinking perhaps she had hidden her selfe neere thereabout, not willing to be seene by any passengers, vvithout bidding the Friars Adieu, hee began to search her out, not leaving an inch of ground in all those quarters vsought; so that after much time spent, and small hope of recouerie, the poore Gentleman ran vp and downe some two dayes, raging in the Mountaine like a mad-man, still crying and calling on *Iacinta*, vvwhose remembrance onely was sufficient (as appeared by the following Stanzas) to keep him so long fasting.

*If the hard flint Steele-strucken vomit fire,  
 (As if it lifes blond were,  
 And wounded with complaints) those sparkes expresse  
 In the blinde body, eyes, red-swolne with ire,  
 Eyes, more of rage then feare;  
 Why then breath he not flames? (my wound no lesse)*

*Since*

Since griefe and blacke distresse  
 (Steeles) strike my captiue heart?  
 Griefe, to be all forlorne in absence thus,  
 From whence, all sorts of mischiefes venomous,  
 Beyond the cure of Art,  
 Loue to a pow'rfull quint-essence hath brought,  
 Either by fire of Hell, or absence wrought.

Goe, spirits of fire and poison then, prepare  
 To mount with speedy flight  
 Some into Tongues, but most, to searching eyes.  
 Visit those winged dwellers in the Aire  
 O're yon faire Region quite;  
 And each wilde Beast that in his darke den lyes,  
 And those dumbe sleepers (eyes :)  
 Lull'd by the bubbling brooke,  
 In Crystall Couches soft and naturall :  
 Perceiue the aqull sacrifice may all,  
 That he (whom Loue forsooke)  
 For Holocaust of blinde affection,  
 Smoke offers in his sighes, flames in his moane.

Mount then, and scale that fourth last Element,  
 (But oh, theyle be too slow!)  
 For hauing beene the matter to my paine.  
 (I feare) backe to my thoughts incontinent  
 They'le fly, whence now they flow;  
 And so conuert themselves to bloud againe.  
 No: en'ry my full veine  
 Runnes in bad humours high,  
 From the continuall current of my ill,  
 So that, for want of, some let vm soare still  
 Vp to the lofty sky.

Or, with their torrid heat (where they forsake  
Their wings) a second fiery Region make.

If thus the wounded Aire on a light blaze,  
Some thunderbolt chance frame,  
Vn-erring let it strike (where euer fall)  
Iacinta; Ah no: but may the noise amaze,  
As if it spoke her name:  
Or backe againe did warne, or loudly call,  
And flash on her withall.  
Birds, change your warbling notes,  
That, as my sighs oretake you in the aire,  
Learning those chirping Songs: you may prepare  
Your more vn-tuned throates  
With sadder accents, as you fly along,  
To publish the curst Author of my wrong.

You quivering Leaues, that shaken with the wind,  
Each other gently kisse,  
While the Sunne enuious to behold your shade,  
Pries to and fro, till (for his beames) he finde  
where freest entrance is:  
Then, way from bough to bough his rayes hane made;  
Though some boughes thicker, staid  
And stopt his piercing eye:  
Griue with your murmur, at my wretched moane,  
When with the frequent hoarcenesse of your tone,  
(Best, lesse melodiously)  
You boughes; when Zephirus doth make you meet,  
And (winde) each other, with your kisses greet.

You, little Peebles of the Fountaine, late  
Teeth, of Narcissus, white;

Then

*Them, Iurie, but hard ned now to stome,  
Now are you no Tongue-helpers to relate,  
Ought of that cruell sight:  
How, by red veines turn'd to a spring, was shewne  
A fault, selfe-lone to owne.  
(Beauty) short Tyrannie;  
Oh let the Echo's of your Center cold  
Repeate no stranger griefes, but mine unfold,  
My lost felicitie.  
Without Iacinta, iealousie, disdaine  
My present ill, make all past goods secue paine:*

Thus he lamented the absence of his fugitiue Mistris, till seeing his folly, and the impossibilitie of finding her there, he determined to goe backe to the place where he missed her, where when he came, he was as farre to seeke: but at last casting more temperately with himselfe, hee supposed, that the morning he left her, she seeing his long stay, her womanish feare in that dispeopled place might cause her to retire to the towne, there to expect her *Gerardo*, whither with this new vnprofitable ghesse of his, he resolued forthwith to go (and putting it in practise) about Sun-set arriued there, and in the distraction you may imagine, lest not a street or house vnasked for his Loue, till weary of trudging, or rather of knowing no more then hee did, his faint body forcing him to desire some rest, hee alighted at an Innedoor, within which, he was no sooner entred, whē suddenly at least twenty men grappled with him, and crying out for more aide, without hearing him a word, dragged him along to a strong Prison; where when he came, the cause of his apprehension was made knowne, and imputed to him, that he was not onely a high-way Robber, but particularly the Author also of those cruell and barbarous wounds, gi-



uen the poore woman, whom he left in confession with the Fryers: they, seeing he returned not, assured of their suspicion, resolved to conuey her to the towne: and to give account to the Iustice of what hapned: which they did, leauing all the people thereabouts much scandalized with the terrible fact: though iust Heaven permitted not that the poore Wench should dye of her wounds, since they also of the towne caused her health to bee carefully looked to. And so as *Gerardo*, lesse carefull of his present danger then his former afflictions, went to and fro, enquiring thorow the vproar'd towne for his Mistris, and many knew, by the Fryers Relations, the signes and habit he wore (his enquiry too being for a woman) one suspicion ioynd with another, gaue them warrant enough to lay wait for, and, as you haue heard, apprehend him.

*Gerardo* was much troubled at his new imprisonment, not so much for his lifes danger, as being hindred from his search and inquirie. But since there was no helpe for his misfortune, (a punishment hee acknowledged due for his sacriledge) he endeououred the best hee could to giue his discharge, and not to suffer himselfe perish in that vvreched manner; but his endeours had been fruitlesse, had the wounded Maid dyed in this occasion of her misfortune: but heauen giuing her life, his trouble soone ended, and the cause was knowne by her declaring two of her Brothers accessarie to the wounds, who angry that a fellow of meane condition had enioyed their Sister, and after, to their publike affront, demanded her to Wife, bent wholly to reuenge, the better to effect their purpose, drew their Sister from the Citie frō *Barcelona* (of whence they all were) to go with them towards *Denia*, to see (as they pretended) certaine kindred of theirs; and comming one night to that Mountaine, stripping her there naked, they performed that

bar:

barbarous piece of crueltie related. For all this, the Iudges would not giue *Gerardo* present libertie, rather (besides making him purge himselfe cleerely of the suspitions his habit and Pistols of being a Thiefe brought against him) they to his cost enforced him (for the verifying her confession) to send to *Catalunia*, which being not long after confirm'd for certaine, by the absence of her Brothers from *Barcelona*, they thought fit to set him at liberty. Heere hee remained foure moneths in this lingring, in which time, all hee had to any value, was consumed and spent: so that being to depart, hee could hardly make shift for so much money as might fit him with a Moyle, which hauing at length euen scarcely effected, proposing his iourney to some friends he knew, at a place not farre off, called *Denia*, one morning he forsooke the towne, sufficiently warned by the wracke of his fortunes there; and though hee were on his way, hee could scarce thinke himselfe yet thorowly at libertie. All that day hee went on with a Boy his Guide, till the next (that neere a lone Inne) he ouertooke one, who alone was traouelling, his way; so, after they had dined, and passed the dayes heat together in that house, they kept vpon the way in good conuersation, and hoped that night, by spurring a little the harder, to arriue at their journeyes end *Denia*.

In all that way (as being indeed no great Roade) they met not a creature, till towards foure of Clocke in the afternoon, in midst of certaine thicke Brambles (as they carelessly rode on) two men slept before them, who as well by their persons, as fashion and Armes, soone made knowne what they were. One of the two, that indeed seemed rather an infermall Minister, then a mortall man, bade stand: and fastning on *Gerardo's* reines, with his Pistoll clapt to his brest, gaue way to his companion to doe the like to the other. When the foot-boyes saw this, & perceiued the dan-

ger

ger of their Masters, not expecting the event, they betooke them to their flight. The good *Gerardo*, doubtlesse, (though in so knowne a hazzard) would haue aduentured his person, if at the very instant hee had not seene other fixe rise out of the thicket of those bushes; one of which, as vvell by his difference of habit, as goodly presence, seemed to be the Captain of the rest, vvho thinking the poore trauellers vvere somewhat of the slowest in forsaking their Saddles, with a hoarse and dismall voice, turning to the two first, said, Raskals, what doe you with those wretches? do you carry your Pistols for shew only? would you haue me kill the poore snakes? And thus saying, and aduancing his *Petronell* in the same instant, the poore couple tumbling at those speeches to the earth, gaue way to those furious men to disarme them, with such violent search also, as had they beene their mortall enemies: lastly, they stripped them euen to their shirts. Yet this cruell proceeding neuer so much as wrought the least impression of resentment in *Gerardo*, who now as much desired to die, as to liue in his miseries; and in this hardie resolution, concealing his present hard vsage, with a firme and constant behauiour, expected the issue of this sad accident: all which in his companion was quite contrary, who in a thousand wo-full extremes (his eyes flowing teares) sought to mollifie the bloody flint-hearted Capitaine, who looking somewhat wistly on his face, straight knew him; and seeing him prostrate at his feet, vvith an arrogant and haughty licence bade him rise, saying: Art not thou happely *Vincente Arbias*? for if mine eyes do not deceiue mee, I haue here before me the party to vvhom I owe no lesse then life. To this the quivering *Valencian*, like one raised out of a trance, lifted vp his eyes, and hearing himselfe called by his name, somewhat more encouraged, vvith a faint voyce made answer,

swer, that he was that party, and by profession an Atturney for Causes in *Valencia*; though in all this while it vvas not possible for him to call to his remembrance him, that spoke thus to him: vvhoe obseruing his feare, replied, Let not the seeing me affright thee, nor the beholding these my companions, for thou mayest safely go thy vvaies: And know, that now thy friend *Pedrasa*, hath (for it is hee that speakes to thee) complied vvith the obligation he had, since by thy honest care hee vvas freed from prison in *Valencia*: take thy garments, and turning to his company, proceeded: And you, returne him the money taken from him to a denier, and accompanying him to his safety, leaue mee to your recompence. These words vv ere like Angelicall salutations, in the fearefull *Vincent's* eares, and vvanting sufficient phrase (as he thought) for his gratefulnessse, he recast himselfe againe at the Captaines feet, and in a trice cloathing himselfe, got afterward to his Moyle, and returned to his iourney, accompanied part of his way by those ministers of *Cacus*.

*Gerardo* thought verily, that since thus they retained him, they meant to make a bloody sacrifice of his youth, and in this imagination, lifting his eyes to all-pittyng Heaven, vvith his heart hee begged mercy and releasement from those present mischiefes: and hearing those men command him to follow them, he began to goe after, thorow the thicket, and roughest part of the Mountaine, iust as the Sunne was declining to the West. They had scarce gone halfe a League in that Defart, vvhen comming to a deepe and hidden Brooke, that on one side serued as a ditch to a clouen Rocke thereby, and keeping their vway on the brinke of the same, vvithin a while they entred into a Strait; from vvence crossing a little, they mounted the staring Rocke, in midst whereof vv ere certaine thatched Cottages, which

which serued them as a harbour and bulwarke against all weathers. Assoone as their trampling and noise was heard by those vvithin, there issued out some doozen persons of the same hiew and profession vvith the rest; and foremost amongst these, one of a briske and liuely presence, who with his pleasing sight gaue no small comfort to *Gerardo*, though as then hee could not vvell perceiue whether his countenance vv ere answerable to his presence; for besides the broad brimme of a military Hat, that shadowed his face, the being darkish too did hide it.

The party was clad in a rich cloth of siluer doublet, and ouer it a Gaberdine of greene Veluet, set thicke vvith Buttons and Loopes of siluer, suteable, hauing on the top of his right shoulder sloping, a faire Belt studded and embroidered with Gold, two curiously vvrought Petronels hanging at it, his Breeches were suteable, Damaske, his Stocking, shooe and garter, white, Plumes of feathers white and greene: all which so set out his gracefull personage, that, *Gerardo*, forgetting his troubles, vv as now wholly fixt vpon the gallant obiekt. To whom the Captaine with open armes directing himselfe, the pretty Youth offering his hand, with a kind of neglect, at his brest, stopping his proceeding, said, Why how now, *Pedrasa*, so empty, and craue an embrace? Forbeare: for since you returne without a Prize, I am not indebted the least fauour. To this hee smilingly replied: No more, *my Generall*, be not too rigorous till you heare my discharge, and turne but your eyes to my company, in their increase you shall see a spoile, from whose woorth, I dedicate to those faire fingers, a rich Ruby. At this, the comely Youth more heedily looking backe, might perceiue the vnfortunate Gentleman; who from the instant that he heard that voice, supposing he knew it, his sorrowfull heart was ready to leape from his brest. But when hee plainly



plainely saw, the disguised Youth was his *Jacinta*, hee had like to haue falne to the earth, where (as his couragious mind was deeply stricke) he but (faining wearinesse) sate downe. The vngratefull cruell woman had not forgotten the countenance and presence of him she once loued, Lord of her affection : but she made no shew of change at all, rather seeing him thus disrobed, halfe naked, was not a iot moued; but making as if shee had not knowne him, turning to her new Louer, said, I like him well, 'tis a good handsome stripling; your gaines will bee the greater, and our friends that buy him, will haue no bad penniwoorth; Away with him to the Caue, in the meane time let vs thinke of supping. And so taking the Captaine by the hand, they returned to Kennell together.

Oh, passe not on, compassionate Reader, but suspend a while thy griued eyes; and now that with thy presence it is impossible, supply yet with thy imagination, so great woe, as at present, the sad and dis-consolate Gentleman might feele. Thinke but how basely now, his once best treasure is imployd : Behold him poore, disrobed, deiefted, in the hands of homicides, bloud-suckers, Land-Pyrats: apprehend but truly this, and each line, nay, each letter may attract a teare.

Many a time was *Gerardo* ready to haue flung himselfe amidst that brutish rowt, and could haue torne them peice-meale vvith his teeth for reuenge, were it not that despaire, more then feare, stopped his resolution, prevented also by foure of those fellows, who raising him from the place vvhere he sate, carried him along with them, and descending towards the bottome of the Rocke, one of them disioyning a broad blacke Slate, which serued as a stopple to the Caues mouth (though so euen set in, the cunning, could scarce be perceiued) commanding him to enter; they, with-  
out,



out, shutting the doore, returned from whence they came, leaving *Gerardo* in that darke and dismall den, so straightned, and afflicted, that he verily supposed they meant there to starue him to death: which made him heartily repent he had not put his vengeance in execution. Thus he remained a long houre at least vvithout passing on, thinking there was no more danger saue vvhere he vvvas. But at the instant hee might heare some speaking further in; and vvithall, a voice fearefully resounding thorow the whole Caue, insomuch that he verily beleeued himselfe to be at Hells mouth. The voice seemed to come neerer, so that hee might more distinctly heare these vvords:

To all this howling, Captiue, miserable man, giuest thou no answer? why com'st not downe vnto vs, since thy unhappy starres directed thee to be our vvofull companion? what doest thou, what canst thou expect? hath thy vitall breath failed thee? or beginnest thou to repine at the taste of such bitter foode, as is our best comfort in this blacke mansion? Wonder not, for this is but a beginning of misery, yet thou shalt haue the chiefeest comfort, companions. These finall accents of the voice came to *Gerardo's* eares, iust as a man appeared before him, vvith a lighted Brand of Rosind. Pine in his left hand flaming, and a small-fruit Reece in his right, that serued him for a Rest and Guide, so leane, pale and altred, that the suddennesse amazed him. Hee thought verily the Ghost of his dead enemy *Rodrigo* was transformed into that Goblin: for in such cases, feare doth neuer present lesse horrid affrightments to the imagination. Hee knew not what to answer, neither could hee vnfold his lips; which hee that rose from the Caue perceiving, and how much he was astonisht, beholding him, with some pitie, drew neere, and taking him by the hand, said; Let not my faint presence, vnforgotten Young man, dismay

may you: for how-euer you see me in this most miserable plight, not long since you might haue known me as strong, as able as your selfe: but the wretched Mansion where wee liue, and the barbarous crueltie and scarfitie with vvhich the cursed Owners entreat vs (who by ounces giue vs a miserable and nasty sustenance) doth cause in me, and twenty others that there below expect vs; the same effect that your eyes behold.

Blame me not (replide the vnfortunate *Gerardo*) that your presence hath so daunted me, since the nouelty of this place may well excuse me: & therefore pardon me I beseech you, the trouble I haue put you to in calling me; & since (as you say) I haue so many companions in my misery: let vs (on Gods name) goe where they expect vs.

This said, they both began faire and softly to descend, passing at least twenty winding staires, ere they came to the Caues bottome: in which spacious dungeon, *Gerardo* saw at least twenty persons of the same hiew, and in no better plight then hee that accompanied him: (all of them set about a poore, almost extinguisht fire) by whom (if any ioy may be in such grieffe) he was ioyfully receiued. Euery one particularly demanded his ill fortune, *Gerardo* satisfide all: vnderstanding from them likewise their vnhappy successes, which had brought them to so great extremitie; hee likewise knew of them how they came so speedily to heare of his imprisonment: (being so farre as he perceiued from any commerce) which was, that receiuing at a small hole, from the top of the Caue, their ordinarie allowance of Rye-bread for their sustenance, there beeing a Loafe extraordinarie, they knew they had some new companion; and now the time of rest drawing neere, all of them lay downe on certaine heapes of strawe, that serued them in stead of daintier beds: onely *Gerardo*, though he most needed, yet slept  
not;

not, nor tooke any rest in all that night, the most tedious that euer he passed.

There wanted not one to accompany him in this waking, and in a manner with equall sorrow, one of his most vnderstanding companions; whom (as it oft falls out) by particular sympathy he did most affect. Hee then, that lay neerest our poore Gentleman, seeing him much disquieted, moued to pitie, and interrupting his owne calamities, said, 'I were fondnesse, my new friend, and companion, to demand the cause which keepes you thus waking: for where there are indeed so many, euident it is, that, any one were sufficient to breed the greatest discomfort. I am onely desirous to know, if any particular accident doe adde to this your knowne misfortune; if so, by communicating the same, the greatest inconuenience, that can happen, is, to oblige me to your succour, as much as lies in this poore and weake abilitie of mine: therefore let me request you in some sort to grant my desire. With which the captiue was silent: when *Gerardo*, not a little admiring his piety and good language (with a low voice, not to disturbe such as tooke their rest) thus answered, Discreet companion, though our fortunes be equall in the present misery I bewaile, yet assuredly, in the circumstances that brought me to it, they are farre different; these make me madde, impatient, full of griefe, soule and body, so increasing vpon me, that nothing but death may ridde me of my paines. I giue you all possible thanks for your desires: God giue you your merits, and so you shall be sure not to want.

In him (said the Prisoner) I am onely confident; though when I consider that this punishment is iustly for my sinnes inflicted, doth cause in me a sad discomfort, and perswades me that the qualitie of them being so odious, they are past all helpe.

These

These last words he vttered so passionately, that the curious *Gerardo* laying hold on them (as thinking them to saue him from despair) cut him off, saying, The opinion of your wisdom yet wils me to desire you not so speedily to forget the same: and it is much more necessarie for your soules health, not to be cast headlong with such thoughts, for relying (as you first noted) on heauens mercy; from that let me safely promise you (as a remedy to greater misfortunes) pardon for very great sinnes: repent the committing them, that truly performed, Heauen will dispose all for the best. Heauen comfort you, said the Prisoner, as I am by you comforted. And *Gerardo* willing to know more of his griefes, extended his comfort, by giuing him a Summary Relation of his owne, as thinking by that meanes, diuerting and cheering him ioyntly, he might oblige him to make knowne his life vnto him, as indeed his discreet presumption succeeded right: for hauing past some time in his owne brieue discourse; the afflicted Captiue wondring at such remarkable euents, after hee had with no small commiseration endeared *Gerardo's* mishaps, inuited by them, hee could not but begin to set forth his owne, at such time as the calme night was in the midst of her sad course; and so drawing neerer to *Gerardo* with his faint limbes, he began:

When it were not as congruous as vsuall for poore Prisoners in such occasions, my good friend, as the present to giue each other account of their misfortunes in generall (as by this meanes beguiling solitude, and diuerting the memory of their griefes) the noble freeness you haue shewed in the disposing your Story, might iustly engage me to the like, to repay the debt I owe; and therefore if you be pleased to supply my weake stile in my lifes deliuey with your attention, I shall venter to giue it, beginning, where the Barbarian Moores of our *Spaine* had ending.

My Ancettors serued. our first (so stiled, Catholique Princes) Founders of this great Monarchy, so valiantly in their last conquests, that for a Noble recompence, they bestowed an inheritance vpon them, in the flourishing Citie of *Granada*, where my house, or rather of my Parents at this day standeth: Gentlemen, (though for me in this misery to speake it, may seeme vaine-glory) as well knowne for noblenesse of blood, as wealth, and charitie to their poore towne-borne neighbours: happy enough, though doubtlesse since this misfortune of mine, that happinesse is much diminished: for besides that, it hath fallen vpon their heire, I am their onely sonne and child, vvhom as the light of their eyes, their sole darling, they brought vp in all laudable qualities, as a sonne of such Parents.

About twenty yeeres was I of age, vvhhen the best part of *Spaines* Nobilitie, mooued to serue our Great Monarch in that first iourney of *Alarache* (incited by friends, and chiefly licenced by my vvilling Parents, to their great contents, gallantly furnished with Armes, brauerie and seruants) I made one of the Troopes. The effect and taking that towne, or rather buying of it, you vvell know, and so the companies were dissolued; but before I would returne home, I spent a little time with some kindred of mine in the Citie of *Cadix*, which was then, as, plentiful in provisions & dainties, so populously furnished with valiant Souldiers, and frequented by faire Dames; whereby (*Mars* taking truce) *Venus* began her pleasing warres; at whose fire in part I vvarmed my selfe, for one day some slight discourse passing betwixt me and a Dame of *Senill*, the flaxe taking hold so inflamed, that within a vvhile I found my selfe all in a light fire.

I considered not, that (as she was a Curtizan) I possessing her, in such a concourse also others might doe the like)



like) but, watched and iealously hid her, as warily as if wee had long liued together man and wife. The Lady vvas not vsed to such wakings, and therefore my girdle soone waxt too little for her waste; shee grew to a loathing, ate little, forbore her comming to my lodging, in fine, purposed to giue me the slip, as indeed she did, though left in my custodie two Trunkes of her apparell. I cannot expresse how much I was grieued: for, these kinde of creatures, besides their ordinarie sweetnesse of Discourse, have a strange kinde of fascinating, that makes them to bee affected: I sought her, and so did some friends of mine, with no small diligence: but (for shee resolved not to appeare) all vvas bootlesse. Howsoever, those pawnes I had, gaue mee some hope to heare of her, as after it fell out; for the next day, next my heart, in stead of breakfast, I receiued a Challenge, which, a certaine Gallant, vpon whose account my woman was kept, sent me; in which he demanded the Trunkes, or in case of rebellion, that we should meet, (the place appointed) where he would expect me: whither, carried with desire and gladnesse to heare of my Mistris, together with iealousie that fired me, rashly all alone I went. And too'e we went (our bodies the markes) each aiming at his contrarie, I quickly had the aduantage: for mine enemy stumbling, fell flat along backward; but two friends of his, falling instantly out of certaine neere Trenches, crying out to me to hold, I obeying he rising vp in the *Interim*, and violently flying at me, on the sudden reached mee a cut vpon one side of my face. The haste that I made to be reuenged vpon such cowardize, was the same that my Aduersaries vsed for their safety; who thinking their friend had left me for dead, soone vanisht out of sight, and (I beleeue) out of the Iland. I afterward, to the generall sorrow of my friends, caused my selfe to be cured, and for the



present dissembled the receiued iniury ; whose Author I knew to be a *Seuillian* Gentleman, that had long kept my lasciuious Curtizan, whose loue I quickly forgot, yet sent her, as soone as I knew where, for feare she had taken Sanctuary, her Trunkes.

And now I returned toward *Granada*, where I was some time before expected. Where when I arriued, the first few dayes (with the licence that the name of Souldier giues to the variety of colours, Skarfe and Feather) I walked in some friends companies, tacking and steering about the Citie ; neither know I whether in this time my militarie brauerie, or perhaps contrarie fortune inclined the eyes of a certaine Dame to look vpon me, one, faire in extremitie, & alike Noble, as I soone learnt ; but a stranger, that accompanied her Parents, who had an important Law-suite in this Citties Chancerie. My new loue tooke hold as did the former, and as that increast, and my experience suting but with my yeeres, I inconsiderately cast my selfe after my blind affection ; which though it receiued not so soone, my pretended recompence, yet in lesse then moneths was so cherished, that few nights I was absent from *Felicianas* street (such was my Dames name) and at last I aduentured to send her a Letter vvith the following Sonnet:

*Rash Phaeton, more bold then wise, or blest ;  
Once long'd the reins and Dayes bright Coach to guide ;  
But, for a punishment to empty pride  
(Setting) he falls in his untimely East:  
Young Icarus mounts to the burning Sphere,  
Forc'd by the winde that his Art's wings doth drive,  
Till, when he once to the Sunnes height would strine,  
Those waxt sailes, for his downe-fall melted were.  
Loues Thunderbolt dasht Phaetons designe*

*Which into nothing with the owner fell:  
Blinde Icarus the Sea waues washt to death.  
Aye me! euen so, you lofty thoughts of mine  
Like Phaetons, my loue-flames are your hell,  
And like Icarian feat, grieve stops my breath.*

In stead of an answer, shee willed me by word of mouth the night following, to speake with her beneath a Bay window shee appointed. This happy comfort begot swift wings to my desires, which (contained in the limit of her promise) the ensuing night, were accomplished: at which time I enioyed my mistrisses sweete conuersation. I shall not need to relate what amorous sopperies I vsed, and the forcible perswasions of my loues discourse, together with the returne of her fauours: onely let me tell you, my hopes had more encouragement from her, then either I could expect, or shee in honesty promise; telling mee withall, that the feare of her household spies, was the cause of her former suspension and not speaking with me: so that now (wholly inflamed in her loue) I tooke leaue, our conuersation holding constantly many a night after in the same place; til when I least suspected any such intent, in mid'st of our greatest affection, not knowing the cause, (as not hauing on my part giuen any) shee wholly retired her selfe, from either seeing, or speaking with me.

What could you haue thought, noble Sir, of this new disdain? or what shall I tell you of my extreames? my anguish? my diligence? aboue all, the firmenesse of my affection; which more violently encreased then her vniust forgetfulnesse; from whom I could not so much as vnderstand the least occasion of my mishap: though for all this, I forsooke not the streete, but the most nights with musicke, and voices in some pretty sonnet, gaue a touch vpon her

ingratitude: for as my intent was directed to an honest end, which she had diuers times formerly vnderstood from me, I was not nice to conceale my priuatest thoughts: but none of all these left the least impression in her ingratefull brest, which made mee not a litle suspitious, that this sudden change might proceed from some new affection; so like a second *Argus* watchfully waking, I played the carefull Sentinel, and one night among the rest, conforming my voice with a viole, I tooke occasion to expresse the softnesse of my affection, and the flintinesse of her rigour, in the following Sonnet, which you may not repent to heare.

*How art thou, Loue, a childe, if Giant tall?*

*How, watchfull Lynceus, if still painted blinde?*

*How, sometimes frozen, if, all fire by kinde?*

*How, wax, since hard as Diamond withall?*

*How, Atlas art thou, if of suffering small?*

*How, tyrannous, if of so soft a minde?*

*How, absent, if we still thee present finde?*

*How, Mydas? Alexander liberall?*

*Loue then, if Loue thou be? why selfe-same Loue?*

*Louing and loue-lesse art thou? (contraries)*

*That one should hate, when th' other doth adore?*

*Darke thy Enigma's are, Let none then prooue,*

*what thy confused Babel mysteries*

*Be, since who knowes thee most, needs know thee more.*

But all my labour was vaine, as being neuer able to finde the least shew of dishonesty, or ought illicite throughout that so great familie: and this the more emboldened mee, that sometimes I freely entred euen to the secretst parts of the house, and one night among others, that I inconsiderately desired to see my *Felisciana*, I entred at a garden doore,

doore, whither shee vsed much to descend, and whither I might soone approach, as being neere the houses court: So when I least dreamt of it, I might see, that in the midst of a great Parlor, she was set vpon the knee of a yong gallant, and (to my seeming) louingly courted by him. This was an ouerture, that had I not spared to raise the whole house, would haue incited mee to a violent courle; and in my raging icalousie I drew neere to a grate, whereby I might the better heare their discourse: in which (though confusedly) me thought the names of brother and sister passed betwixt them: here my heart was a little more reuiued, and not long after I vnderstood the truth, that the Gentleman was newly arriued from *Senil*, where before this occasion, I knew hee was, as receiuing it from my Mistris her owne mouth.

The house vpon his arriuall was lesse heeded, and with greater concourse frequented, though I for my part, knowing how little security I had there, would haue slid faire and softly away: to which purpose I had scarce turned my back, when, I might behold how two men crossing from the streete doore towards me, came leading a woman betwixt them; so that shunning the being espied by them, I was forced to get me on one side, shadowing my selfe in an entrie, till such time as they were past: one of them stepping before, went to the garden window, and called (as I might plainly heare) my mistresses brother, who instantly came into the court, and with open armes receiued that woman, with whom, (the whole family being retired to rest) hee ascended into certaine higher roomes, in likelyhood, his owne lodgings: and I seeing all hush and quiet, meant to haue returned vnto mine, but being come to the streete doore, to my greefe I found it shut, which much troubled me; and ignorant what course to take, at last I looked about

mee, and in a neere entrie might see a stable doore open: so without more delay I entred there, and kept companie with three or foure horses, taking vp my lodging betwixt one of them and the wall, where I was no sooner laide downe, and rested vpon my buckler, when a fellow comming with a light in his hād, the horsekeeper belike, without spying me, first barring the doore, began next to vndresse himselfe, and by vertue of the light before me, I might see the partie a lusty *Barbarian Mulatto*, that was slaue to *Felicianas* father; for her sake I was forced to passe a hard night thus, as I had often done. Whilest I was busied in my thoughts, the slaue had got him to his bed, a poore one (heauen knowes) which standing against a lath-wall right opposite to me, I might perceiue him softly listen to heare what passed on the other side thereof: and not long after, (being still attentīue to his care,) might see that leauing to hearken, rising hastily vp, and kneeling vpon his bed, he began to take out some bricks which had bene set into the wal, and afterward, one within asking if there were roome to enter at, and he answering yes; by little and little, I saw him helpe in a woman, and (being entred) claspe her fast in his armes. My ioynts began presently to tremble, and my heart furiously leapt within mee, as if it meant to haue left my brest: and not long after, my sad soule fully knew the cause of these effectes; for the lustfull woman not contented with embraces, but longing to see her barbarous leacher naked, taking the candle from whence it hung, shee no sooner beheld her tawnie sweet-heart, but I in her, the faire foule-minded *Felicianas* (to my sorrow,) the base subiect of this slaues lust. But the home-drawne arrow, flies not so swift from crooked bowe of the fierce *Canibal*, as powerlesse I with furie started from vp the horses feete, and setting vpon the worthlesse couple with my dagger, bent wholly

wholly on reuenge, and blinde with confirmed iealousie, without resistance thrust the poniard foure seuerall times thorow the *Moors* body: and seeing that in the *interim*, *Felliciana* stroue to be gone, leauing him, and thinking with my selfe, that the intent of making her my wife, obliged me to as much as had she beene so, catching hold of her arme, I stabbed her in as many parts of her body as I could reach, and (doubtlesse) had there ended her life, if the cries of both (for the slaue by this time made shift to get into the entry) had not preuented mee: for instantly at the vprore all the seruants were gotten to the stable doore, which I (to my ruine, quickly perceiuing) resisted and their entrance, hauing the slaue now dead at my feete for a bulwarke.

In mid'st of this confusion came my mistrisses brother with lights before him, whom I no sooner fully saw, but knew to be the author of my former wound: and hee likewise beholding, knew me, whereby suspecting that I (hauing notice of his arriuall) came to kill him, hee began lowdly to make it manifest. No lesse by this time was the noyse and howling where *Felliciana* was: which, her brother fearing would be a cause of raising the watch, in respect of the partie in his chamber, (for hee was ignorant of his sisters mishap) hee commanded his seruants to shift her away; but their lucke was such, that at going out of the streete doore, they met with the Constable, who drawne by the noise he heard, was newly come thither, so that my selfe now (seeing my mistrisses brother for his wenches danger gotten amongst the watch, ) laying hold vpon the oportunitie, with incredible haste mixing with the troupe, freed my self from danger, leauing the master and seruants there to shift as well as they could for their faire Ladie, whom with sorrow (hauing once loued her) I beheld to bee the *Senillian Dame* of *Cadiz*. But time hastening mee on, in a trice I was got  
out



out of the street, passing as I went vnder *Felictana's* bay windowe, by whose groanes, accompanied with the noise and howling of her mother and maides, I might plainly heare some crying for Phisicians, others a Confessor, which made me, without more delays, get me out of the Citie, and before day-breake, aduance two leagues vpon my way, to a towne that belonged to an especiall good friend of my Father, from whom, receiuing a horse and some moncies, (considering my danger) I hasted speedily, and crossing the *Alpujayan* mountaines, came to the Kingdome of *Murcia*, and at last to the Citie of *Valencia*, where (my soule full of bitter and intolerable sadnesse) without further consultations, I turned Frier, and betooke my selfe to one of the most retired orders of that Citie, where hauing remained some nine moneths of my *Probationership*, time curing me of my amorous sore, and vweary of that strict life, vvith as easie a determination as I vndertooke it, I quickly left it, and some month since, returning tovvard *Andaluzia*, desirous to see in vvhat state my affaires vvent, vvhen I least thought of it, by the vvay these *Sbanditi* fell vpon me, and taking my monie and a Pilgrims vveede vvich I vvore (for my more safetie) from mee, brought me to this place, vvwhose extremitie makes mee thinke this vvretched misfortune hath be-falne me, not more for my former offences, then cutting the thred of the Religious profession I made choice of.

This vvvas the end of the poore imprisoned Gentlemans sad story, vvwhich accompanied vvith *Gerardo's* sorrow, to his sighes comforting each other, and re-estabbling their commenced friendship the necessitie of the time; made them by mutuall accord addresse themselues to some rest.

Some fifteene dayes remained these poore Gentlemen after in this place; in vvwhich time *Gerardo* vnderstood  
from

from his *Camierada's*, the intention of their keeping in this darke Prison, vvhich was, to sell them to the first Barbarian Frigor that should arriue vpon the Coast, vvith whose Owner *Pedraça* had made agreement, and sold his Prisoners for some twenty, some thirty crownes a man. This not a little comforted *Gerardo*, the sale assuring him of his libertie, since he presumed his Brother or friends would ransom him; and with this new hope, giuing more alacritie to his late despised life, hee disposed himselfe with a manly and contagious heart, to expect the end and vpsshot of his misfortunes: seeking withall to ridde and blot out of his minde, the loathed remembrance of the vile *Iacinta*, who now knew how shee came amongst those Rogues: for one of his companions informed by one of the other, told him, that foure moneths since, they met her, lost or rather flying in a Mountaine (as shee gaue to vnderstand) from a Brother of hers; and that their Captaine enamoured on her beauty, tooke her along with him, causing her to change her womans habit, and his followers to obey and respect her equally as him their Master; and surely this was the Religious Order she so truely longed after. A strange kind of change & variety in womā was this, a lightnesse beyond beliefe, where my vnderstanding hath quite lost footing, and my iudgement is past wading. I thinke it needlesse to search curiously into the reason, why this creature grew so prodigall of her honour: for since *Gerardo*, whom it most concerned, could not vnderstand it, it may vvell bee let alone; yet it is not amisse to set downe his description of vvomans various condition in this brieft Sonnet.

*He*

*He, in a Viot the Sunnes Atomes takes,  
 Retorting ech raylingly offends,  
 To tame with flati'ring, high growne seas pretends,  
 Or nimbler winde with running swift oretakes,  
 Or whips, to scourge the flames, his hands he makes,  
 Clouds in a Net to catch, time precious spends,  
 Or in a circle lookes (where none are) ends  
 In Aetna weepes and thinks that heat he flakes :  
 A mad-mans counsell, or a dumbe t' expresse  
 A smile from death, from fortune constancie,  
 Truth from a Poet, from a sicke man taste,  
 Quiet from Prisons, troopes from Wildernesse,  
 From Angels teares, from dreames a certaintie,  
 Askes he, shat toyles, to finde a woman chaste.*

To turne to the present: Some fifteene dayes after he had remained in this Cauerne, himselfe and his enforced company, being one night fast asleepe, with a huge noise of people that seemed to descend the Caue, suddenly awoke, and straight imagining their enormous sale was contriued with some Moorish Pyrate, each man began to prepare himselfe. They were no whit deceiued, as being soone beset with Moorish cryes, and Arabicke Souldiours, that with their drawne Scimitars, together with a confused babbling, began to fast binde, and (turning them out of their Dungeon) to guide them toward the Sea-side, vvhether they imbarke them in a well-man'd Frigot, that lay there hid in a close creeke.

But scarce had *Gerardo* set foote a-board, when hee saw most of the Theeues, and their Captaine, together with the vngratefull *Iacinta*, well fettered and manacled, whereat he was not a little astonished, though, to see her and that base

crue in such estate, tempered with some ioy, his admiration assuring himselie that iust Heaven had reuenged him sufficiently on his enemies. For you must know that *Alibacem* a famous Pyrat, and *Pedraça's* dissembled friend, hauing that afternoone arriued on the coast, and landed on the nearest shore a hundreth of his best Souldiers, he resolued like an Infidell as he was, to breake his word and promise; or happely, incited by the Diuine Prouidence, that his Infidelitie might be a due punishment to theirs, that being Christians, sold their deare Country-men to the barbarous enemies of our Sacred Faith: and so in the night stole vpon their Cabbins, when they were most secure, and seized on them and *Pedraça* in *Iacinta's* imbraces; and notwithstanding their complaints, and threats, leauing them well bound and sure in the Frigor, the subrill Pyrat returned with one of them for his Guide, to shew him the Caue where the Prisoners were; and so elapping his whole booty a-boord, before day he set sayle, steering toward the clayie Wharfe of *Argiers*; which course to their great content, but our poore Christians their greater discomfort, with a prosperous gale they held on, till towards nine of clocke the next morning; at what time a forcible *Leuant* encreasing vpon them, the sky was instantly covered with blacke clouds, threatening those that cut the surging waues, with an approaching storme: the angry vvinde still re-inforcing, and the pregnant clouds, spowting out streames of water, the skie likewise with confused claps, Thunder and Lightning appeared all on a light flame. Here, those that should haue gouerned the storme-drouen Frigor, seeing their danger, and wanting all courage, clapping vp their Oares, and turning the Sailes to their Stead, they yeelded themselues to the fury of the mercilesse Windes.

Every minute the brackish waues, gaping to the Seas

very

very center, seemed to swallow the vngouerned Barke; in which, nothing was now heard, but moane, vowes and promises, aswell from the Pagan Turkes, as miserable Christians, increasing with the night, that now with ominous darknesse came vpon them, together with a terrible distrust in their afflicted hearts, especially in the faire *Iacinta's*, who so tooke on (as might haue prouoked Marble to pitie) and indeed all of vs pittied her, such exquisite force and vertue hath beauty, that as well from foes as friends, in the customary Lawes of Nature, findes pitie in extremities. *Gerardo's* chiefe care in this confusion, was to quit himselfe of a great chaine which he was tyed with, that if the worst should happen, whether beeing out of their course they should split vpon Rockes, or being neere the Coast, runne on a Shelse, he might freely shift for himselfe.

In this manner, and hurried on with the swift *Leuant*, with much danger they sailed backe againe in the Straights (not being able to helpe it) till towards day-break; and so the storme a little ceasing, doubling a point and Cape called *Gata*, vpon a sudden they fell vpon three Ships of the Armada Royall of *Spaine*, who tost vp and downe in that storme, came also thither to take shelter. But no sooner tooke the *Frigot* notice of the danger, when presently with Oares in hand, they began to tugge amaine from the enemy, who also began to giue them chase, the Admirall foremost which was one of them. But seeing the Prize almost ready to outstrip them, giuing them a Peece from her fore-castle, it lighted so happily vpon the *Frigot*, that together with the Seas violence in the storme, that made her in many parts leaky; in a trice the hurt she receiued by the bullet was perceiued: for the water entred her so fast, that for all the pittious cryes they within her made, & before the Ship could come to her succour, in a moment she began to sinke,  
and



and as many as were in her to perish; at least all such as with the affrightment of the storme, had not the happinesse, to get into the Shallop; in which, some of the Captiues, with the Barbarians, escaped the ships danger, & present death.

*Gerardo* might also have ran the same hazard, had he not courageously foreseene it; for wise men in neither fortune are deprived of provident foresight. But he (as Heaven permitted) laying hold vpon a Chest that was next him, kept himselfe vpon top of the salt waues, till such time as the Admirall drew neere; and casting out a Ropes end, he and the *Granadinian* Gentleman were saued.

*Gerardo* could no longer support the iust anger of his wronged heart, but suffered himselfe at last to be vanquished by his amorous resentment, by seeing her, whom hee once feruently affected, before his eyes (helplesse) perish: and though her hatefull leuity worthily deserued a more rigorous punishment; yet this last, which he thought heauen inflicted by the deuouring waues, so compassionately moued him, that he could easily haue followed her fate, were it not too great an ingratitude to his miraculous deliuerance, from a sudden death, or at least seruile bondage. It was no small comfort to see himselfe now safe amongst so many valiant Souldiers of his Nation; who, out of a Noble generosity, seeing him as it were naked, taking some of their owne cloathes from their backs (not knowing who or whence he was) clad and vsed him as a Brother or particular friend: till arriuing at the Port of Saint *Lucar*, taking

leauē of the Generall & his Noble company, as also of the *Granadinian* Gentleman, who travelled another way, he went on shore, as full of interiour sorrow, as void of comfortable reliefe.

*The end of the second Discourse.*





# GERARDO:

THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD:

*The third Discourse.*



H. a Tragical end of *Clara*, and the lamentable successe of *Iacinta*, had brought the vnfortunate Gentleman to such a miserable passe, that he was now wholly determined to conclude the remainder of his vwearied life in the barren solitude of those vntilled fields, refusing for euer in his free choise, the enticing and dangerous aboade in great and populous Cities, shunning and retiring himselfe from their very names, as the pestiferous occasion and contagious venime, from which his minde and bodie both so worne escaped. And certainly let this resolution of his be duely weighed, any one may easily conceiue how happily *Gerardo* fell into such consideration, since to auoid his disastrous fortune, hee could not chuse

chuse a fitter remedy, nor on his owne behalfe, take a course more worthy his manly resolution. But vvho can prevent his owne vnhappy fate or fortune? who can resist what high Heauen hath once ordained? So that *Gerardo*, where hee most forcibly strove to shunne the Diuine Planets, there he grew neereſt to their maleuolent influence, and his owne misfortunes.

He seemed to be transformed into another *Epimetheus*, or one that had tasted of *Pandoras* box. Well, he had scarce imprinted his steps in the siluer Sand and Margent of that Port-inundation of the famous and swift *Betis*, when led by his solitary cogitations, leaving the Citie on his left hand, he prosecuted a way, in which his free will (an vncertaine guide) cōducted him ouer Vallies, Pastures, vn-euen waies, Hills, and vnaccessible high Mountaines: till one after-noon about Sun-set (after he had spent some two dayes in this kinde of wearinesse) desirous to giue a little refreshing to his tired Body, and prying to and fro for a conuenient shelter to passe the approaching night in, (carelesse of any mortall encounter) it was his chance to espy a Shepheards Cottage, which seated at the foote of a spreading Oake, made the place and situation more delightfull.

*Gerardo* was nothing sorry to haue lighted on so good a harbour, rather out of gladnesse, willing to draw neere, he went on, but quickly made a mannerly stand, fearing to interrupt the sweet Voice of a comely Swaine, that sat vpon the euer-greene fruitfull grasse, was at this time singing, or rather closing vp of the Song, to the Musicke of an ill-shap't Rebecke.

*When fixt Calisto giues vp ber cleere light,  
And Courtiers lye like Lead  
In sinking Featherbed;*

L

Them

*Then make I ready nets for my delight;  
 And with the smiling morne take glad some flight:  
 Setting each bait and ginne,  
 That Fish and Fowles doth ninne,  
 To nibble (caught and coozen'd with my sight.  
 Then doe I finde and follow too,  
 Greyhound and flying Hare; Ho-loo  
 Grey-hound) that scarce leau'st print in grasse;  
 Let them th' ambitious flatt'rer his time spend,  
 (waiting) on foote: so (like a Taper) end.  
 He enuies me (I know) poore Asse.*

The Song ended, had not our Gentleman beene on his legges, his eyes broad-waking, and his whole selfe leaning to the Barke of a greene Willow, doubtlesse his fancie might (as a fained dreame) haue shaped, the Cottage, Shepheard, Voice, and Song, which suited well to his liking, as hearing it conclude with the praise of a Country. life: but this was not the greatest effect it wrought, for he, transported with the tones eleuation, beganne to fall backe into the remembrance of his past misfortunes, and losing himselfe, as being wholly intangled in them, without all helpe (vanquished by the oppression of his woes) fetching a deepe sigh, his senses forsaking him, hee fell downe vpon the springing Grasse; causing no small alteration in the carelesse Swaine, with the sudden noise of his fall; who after some pawse, and thinking on the cause of it, casting the shrill Instrument away, straight ranne to him: that was false, and (settling his head on his knee) considering withall his goodly presence, solitarinesse and dismay-ing, could not but much relent, and desire to know the party, together with the cause of his malady: and so leauing him a while vpon the ground, entring his Cottage,

and

and bringing out with him, a neat cup of Red *Tamariske*, he filled it from the Cristalline Fountaine, which not farre off sprung frō the center of a stony Rock : and turning speedily to the fainting Gentleman, sprinkling part of the water on his meager cheekes, hee brought him by degrees to himselfe, crying out with inward grones, and this following, with a faint voice. How long, confused thoughts ! will you torment my sad soule, representing still her past griefes ? More he would haue said, if, taking notice of the charitable company, and vvondring at his owne successe, he had not turned his commenced sorrow into gratitude for his succour, giuing the Swaine due thanks, who with the following discourse, and a smiling countenance, cut him off, saying: Truly, Gallant Youth, your sudden distemper hath caused such a resentment in my heart, that I could well beare a part with you, so I thought it might any way ease you of the inward griefe, with which I see you afflicted : take courage, man, and (if possible) expell the originall of your sad complaints ; for knowing how hurtfull they are, you doe ill to admit of their vniust company : and (if you please) let vs in, to my Cottage ; where, as well to me, as to the rest of my company (who wil not be long from vs) with our homely plainenesse, you shall be heartily welcome, and this I can freely promise.

*Gerardo* was not a little pleased with so louing an offer ; and therefore returning his best thanks, to so worthy a courtesie, he thus made answer :

Impute not ( courteous Shepheard ) my hearts weaknesse, any way to want of courage in my minde ; nor that my late accident grew from a corporall necessitie : for such ( were they neuer so painefull ) my patience vvould weare them out, or time might in time happily relieue them.

Onely beleeue and pardon this as a passion and infirmity

of my soule, in which it is so anciently rooted, so entirely the very selfesame thing with it, that it is past all remedie, euen growne eternally incurable. But not all the griefe I feele, or sorrow I must lastingly endure, shall make me euer forget: how much I owe to your fauour done me; though my slender abilities must leaue to the Superiour powers the due recompence and satisfaction for your good will, in offering me your company, or rather accepting mine, which since you please to esteeme of, my faithfull protestation shall be to serue you as long as you like to admit me. The ouer-ioy'd Shepheard would haue replide, when not farre from the Cottage, fise men appeared, who drawing nearer, all gaue a kinde of reuerence to him that was with *Gerardo*, which made him perceiue hee was their chiefe (as true it was) for he had many great flockes, to vvhich those fise looked too; and many Herds of Cattell, that grazed vp and down in the Forrest where they were. Now all of them beeing set at the doore of the thatcht Cottage, hauing the naturall pleasant greene, in stead of more olorous Diaper, they fell cheerefully to Supper, so merrily welcoming their new ghest, as, his fare had beene lesse contentfull at a great mans Table.

*Celio* (for so hight the worthy Shepheard) could not suppose, that such a subiect as *Gerardo* (being adorned vvith so good parts of humanitie) could want the knowledge of delightfull Musicke: and therefore offering, when Supper was ended, the Rebecke to his hand, said, It is not possible, good Sir, that he who is so complete, should bee defectiue in this worthy qualitie; and therefore let mee request you on the behalfe of these present, that you be pleased to giue vs a touch of your Musicall skill and Voice, since you haue heard mine already, and remaine my debtor.

Here *Gerardo* seeing himselfe so reasonably obliged, returned

turned to *Celio* this answer: How-euer my fresh affaires rather prouoke my minde to dolorous sighes, then to suspend them with sweet accents; yet the desire my heart hath to bee confirmed in your friendship, shall vvinne something from my griefes to obey you with, confident that your loue will make vp what wants in skill; and so tuning first the Instrument, and after his Voice, he sung this Dittie, including somthing to the company, and the rest to his owne mishaps.

*The rugged Mountaine from a friendly weine,  
yeelds to the greedy Merchant, plenteous store,  
(E'en till his bagges be full) of precious Ore,  
Or the Red bloud he drinks till burst againe.*

*The knottie-footed corne of golden graine  
From yellow neck, and pregnant eare, yeelds more  
To the glad husband-man, then sils his floore:  
(Reward to former paines in plowing saine.)*

*Yet doth not gold, the craving appetite  
Of Merchant crows, nor wheat of grumbling clown:  
For these the more they haue, more couet still.*

*Like such, am I: their steps I tread a-right.  
For though I reape desires fruit, yet (cast downe)  
My good is lessend with increase of ill.*

The Song ended, and the short mention of his griefes so begat true ones in him, that, though hee meant to haue gone on vvith some other more pleasing Ditty, for his new friends, it was not possible for him, (besides) that they also much taken with his sweet voice, desired to re-enioy it. But seeing the iustnesse of his cause, they would not euer presse him; so that growing now somewhat late, they betook them to their rest; and the next morning, the Shepheards rose early, each one to his seuerall charge, saue *Gerardo* & *Celio*,



who preparing Nets for fishing, Dogs and Ferrets for hunting, in such delightfull exercises spent this day, and also many more.

*Gerardo* had caused to be made for him, a curious field-garment of painted wilde-beasts skins, and now to *Celio's* infinite content, lived in those Desarts as happily, as vvil-ling neuer to forget them; till one euening toward night, leauing *Celio* toward the highest of the Mountaine, driuing his flockes to shade; himselfe hot and weary, returned all alone backe to the Cottage: at vvhich time, amongst the thicke spreading Trees, there appeared a Woman, vvho comming neerer to him, made him not a little wonder at her sight, as well in respect of her tender age and beautie, as to see her all blubber'd, sad & afflicted, vvwhich made him suspect, that something (ordinarie to vvomen that frequent Woods) had hapned vnto her, though her true signes of griefe made him thinke it might bee against her consent: vvwhich egged him on the more to know the occasion that brought her thus solitarily, on foote and ful of sorrow: and so comming neerer, before he could speake, she first saluted him; and *Gerardo* returning, with his accustomed courtesie, desired her to sit downe, and griued to see her so disquieted, sitting by her, with gentle speech hee began thus to accost her:

I should be glad (faire Gentlewoman) that vnlading some part of the sorrowes that o'reflow your brest, you would giue mee an account of them, and the cause that makes you wander in these remote desarts, so, without company, though accompanied with such sad signes, as by their shewes make your griefes most important.

Whilst the good *Gerardo* vttered this to the afflicted Dame, her cleere eyes ceased not to shed frequent teares, and her panting heart to send forth some groanes, till at length,

length, willing to yeeld an answer to him that so willingly expected it, drying the drops from those cristall streames, and getting some short leaue from her afflictions, with a sigh sent from her hearts bottome, and mournesfull tone, she began.

If the immense sorrow that euen becaues me of my senses, vwould giue way to my tongue, to expresse the cause of it, sure I am, courteous friend, that your compassionate heart, vwould vvith a new and equall feeling, beare a part in the present paine, vvith which my soule is tormented; and therefore let me request you, for your owne sake, not to importune me to the narration; for vvhere all humane reliefe failes, that can be but fruitlesse; onely let me intreate you at the present to let mee know how neere I am to any habitations, and how farre it may bee from this shady Valley to the towne of *Cesarina*, vvhere it is fit (for the restoring of my sad life, if it be possible) that I this night arriue. To vvich *Gerardo*, somewhat abashed at her distrust, replyed: Most beautifull Mistris, 'twere easie to all-pitying Heauen to effect, that vnder this course Weed, and rusticke Skins you see, some noble blood might be inclosed; and a heart, not onely longing to receiue the demanded fauour, but prompt and prepared to hazard a life vpon any occasion, in which you shall employ it; and perswade not your selfe, neither so much as imagin, that the ill you speake of, is ir-remediable; since, liuing, though it vv ere in the highest extremitie, there is hope of comfort and reliefe; nor misprize not him that thus vnkowne shewes you so meane an outside, since many times there is found in the forsaken and wilde hearbe of the field, that true and healthfull antidote, that oft in the precious Treacle is vvanting: touching the places distance you aske for, you are much vv ide of it; for besides the not being able to get, till darke night, into the high way,

you haue from thence a long League and more to *Cesarina*: your best course therefore, (if you please) is, to be my ghest till morning, and in yonder thatcht Cottage, you shall bee as, vvell entertained; honestly welcome. The afflicted Dame could not suppose such Phrase did proceed from lesse then a well disposed person; and in this thought casting her faire eyes vpon him, considering well of his shape and modest countenance, she gaue credit to her supposition, and not disliking his offer, determined to accept it; and so her bitter moane somewhat qualified, shee vsed these amorous speeches: Your discreet language hath vvrought so notable an effect in my heart, that, vvith it you haue not onely giuen me encouragement, but vvithall obliged me to what is so conuenient, and (night approaching) would haue enforced me to beg, vvich I shall be glad to receive, vpon the assurance of the inuiolable good vsage you promise me: and in lieu thereof, that you may not thinke me some straggling house-wife, I shall knowne make vnto you, the occasion of my lost peregrination through these wilde desarts: for though the principall motiue admits no earthly comfort, yet sure I am the rest, as accessaries, shall finde it in your iust commiseration.

The noble Citie diuided from her Suburbes by the swift Streame of the renown'd *Guadalquivir*, is my natie soyle; where, to my owne proper and others misaduentures, I was borne: in my tender infancie. I was bereaued of both my Parents, yet not wholly an Orphan, hauing in stead of a Father, his Brother (to whom I vv as left) my louing Vnkle, married at this present to a Dame of the Prouince; one, that as she is well descended, and endowed with the best naturall gifts, so, ambitious of her infamy and loose condition; a very idolatresse of her owne lust, inclined to that onely and her wanton freedome: her disorderly courses came

to that scandalous passe, as gaue sufficient matter and beginning to the affliction you now behold in mee: for the prosecution of her lasciuious appetite, could not so secretly be handled, but that the lustfull and raging loue, she bore a handsome young Gentleman our neighbour, came to my Vnkle his notice, and no longer ago then yesterday, I being all alone in my chamber, not dreaming of the ielous rage that possessed him, (it growing now towards night) I might see him in a strange distraction entred where I was, so enraged, that aswell by his fierie eyes, as bloodlesse visage, hee made knowne something had bred him much distaste; and I rising in no lesse feare to salute him, (hauing shut my chamber doore too) and vnsheath'd a sharpe Ponyard hee had on, laying next fast hold vpon me; now almost dead in his armes, setting the point of it to my throat, he proceeded to this frightfull discourse: Were it not for a more vrgent reuenge I haue in hand, doubt not, vngratefull *Clori*, (for this, gentle Shepherd, is my name) but this Dagger should let out thy accursed life; and with it that base and counterfet blood of mine, which lurkes in thy ignoble brest: but be assured of a present dispatch, if instantly thou reweale not, what thou hast long concealed, the being a worthlesse witness of my dishonour and affront. There is no faining of excuses, or pleading ignorance can serue turne; suffice it, I know the truth, and not any thy discharge can preuaile, nor will I euer belecue thee to bee ignorant of the base wrong, thy Aunt, my trecherous wife hath done me; dispatch therefore and lose no more time, then what may be spent in my iust satisfaction; telling me truly who is the bold adulterer, that spotting the puritie of mine honour, hath robbed mee of my fame, disgraced my house, ruin'd my reputation, and bereaued me of my best life, by inflicting an euer-lasting living death of dishonour. My soule hearing this, was so  
amazed,

amazed, that vnable to reply, or to vnfold my lippes, or moouue my tongue-tyed Palate, I stood a good while in this astonishment, till hearing my Vnkle beganne with new fury to threaten me, casting my selfe at his feet, and crauing pardon for my slacknesse, (the pale aspect of my inexorable Fate blinding mine eyes, and clouding my vnderstanding) without more delayes I at length reuealed, what my heart so long before had layed vp in silence, by satisfying his most certaine suspitions, not hiding the least circumstance, as well touching who the Gallant was, as also his egressse, and the lasciuious conuersation in their dishonest loues. Hauing attentiuely heard me out, without so much as a words reply, going out by the way he came, and shutting my doore on the other side after him, he left me so confusedly pensatiue, that, fearing some wofull end, (for by what I had discouered, I could expect no lesse) ouercome with this feare, I resolved not to expect the euent; and therefore taking the richest of my Iewels, by a window, which (without Grates) looked to the street, (the sheetes of my bed seruing mee in stead of a Ladder) without being scene by any, I got out of the house and Citie likewise in this manner you behold, with a purpose not to haue rested, till I came to the desired Gates of *Cesarina*; a towne which belonged to my deceased Fathers elder brother, where I had often beene in the company of a Cousin-Germane of mine, sole daughter and inheretrix to the Owner, whose beauty, (thus little to digresse from my Story) hath the iust title of most exquisite in all this Prouince, fertilized by the overflowing *Betis*. But my cruell Fates would not that this boldnesse should remaine unpunished; and so hauing some halfe a League from the Citie, met with a man that was going thitherward, wondering to see me alone, and at such a time of night in the wild high way, and comming neere vnto me, (representing then,



me thought, my feare of the angry arme and Ponyard anew) asked, which way I trauelled without company, and in a Countrey so dangerous; and other matters, that neither my feare suffered mee to take notice of, or make answer; till such time as he perceiving my alteration, comforting me the best he could, vnderstood of mee which way I was to go; to which purpose most honestly hee offered mee his company and seruice: so bent vpon it, that notwithstanding all my refusals and intreaties, hee would needes turne backe with me: and so going on, began to beguile the way and tedious night, with merry tales so proper, that I was then glad of his soone vnluckie company: for my content was quickly turned into such a grieffe, as will neuer, as long as life lasts, forsake me. Here the wretched *Glори* more outragiously falling backe into her former moane, breaking off (without hearing or admitting the least comfort) she began to weepe and sigh afresh; her teares in *Gerardo* bred the like effect, and vnable to abstaine, he accompanied her in the same passion. But seeing with the nights approach, the comming home of the Shepherds might interrupt her discourse, hee more earnestly importuned her to the conclusion: so perceiving the obligation she had to her voluntary promise, with fresh teares, she entred where she left.

Scarce had we gone two leagues, (as said my trecherous guide) when finding by my wearinesse the necessity I had of sleepe, or perhaps the better to put his damnable purpose in execution, taking mee by the hand, vnder colour of hauing mee rest my selfe, and bidding mee follow him, wee stricke out of the way: I (not knowing whither hee would carry me, nor hauing so much courage as to giue him the slip) walked on a good way, till at last comming to certaine breaches of earth, and deepe pits, I might heare the melancholy noyse of a Brooke running amongst the craggie  
Rockes,



Rockes, which so afflicted my disconsolate minde, that I forthwith presaged to my selfe the lamentable successe that did attend me; and in the sudden apprehension of my feare, turning to my companion, I intreated him, we might passe no further; which indeed suted better for his purpose then her ignorance, that so foolishly trusted her selfe with one she knew not. And this plainly appeared; for assoone as euer he saw mee layd downe on the sandy ground to take some refreshing, without beeing able, with all my weake womans defence to helpe my self, or to preuaile, with noyse, teares and intreaties, at last (the reuengefull sword of iust Heauen all the while ( I know not for what secret cause) sheathed against so great an offence, and deafe to my hoarse cries ) I was by him rauished. Neither ceased the barbarous executioner of mine honour so, but hauing disrobed me of some of my best apparell, and robbed mee of the Jewels I inconsiderately carried about me, leauing me as it were at the last gaspe of my wearied life, he fled, and left me also to my fresh complaints, to demand iust vengeance of heauen and earth for my wrong. But woe is me, my griefes were scattered in the Ayre, or like Characters written on those Sands, since he was gone without punishment, and I remained lost in this wilderness to bewaile my misfortunes; which shall euer be before mine eyes, to cry for reuenge, and my death to giue them end. And ending her story, she began againe to solemnize it with her teares, *Gerardo's* discreet perswasions not able to dry them; who sensible of her grieve, endeououred all he might to giue her comfort.

By this time with darke cold night, the gentle *Celio* and his Shepherds approched to the pleasing shelter of their thatched Cottage; whom, when our *Gerardo* heard, with a cheerefull heart he went out to meet them; and giuing them notice of the new-come Ghest, they all went with him to

salute

salute and welcome her, vvith no small admiration at her beauty and attire, and (to say true) none of them gaue any great credit to *Gerardo* touching the cause of her arriual: rather taking *Clori* for his Paramour, dissembling the businesse, after supper they left the Cottage free to them both. But *Gerardo* perceiuing this their knauish courtesie, began with deepe protestations to satisfie them to the contrarie; but none of all could once preuaile with *Celio* and the rest, to make them in any wise returne againe to the Cottage: so *Gerardo* seeing no remedy, making (as well as he could) a hard Bed, intreated the grieved *Clori*, to lie downe and giue her wearied body some rest. But his intreaties could doe no good vpon the wofull Dame, which much troubled him; so that hopelesse of her receiuing comfort by his meanes, night growing further on, and his eyes somewhat drowsie, he fell fast asleepe by her; but had not taken a full houres rest, when (the liuely image of *Iacinta* represented to his dreaming fancie, iust as hee saw her struggling with the furious waues:) the heavy slumber so wrought vpon his senses, and his disquietnesse was such, that it awoke him, with the horror and affright that such a sad remembrance might produce; in which anguish sitting bolt vp in his bed, and looking about him for the passionate *Clori*, hee found her wanting, vvhich not a little affected his mind, doubtfull whether (belike carefull of her honestie, as misdoubting his promise) she might chance to haue hid her selfe amongst the neighbouring trees, he ran hastily out of the Cottage to seeke her, carrying onely with him a strong sheep-hooke for his Armes and defence. But no sooner got hee out of the strawie Lodging, when he heard the trampling of footsteps, guided (as he supposed) toward the high Rockes and Spring-head of a neere-running Fountaine: *Gerardo* hastening thither, a pretty way from him, espied a Bulk going  
apace.

apace downe toward a Brooke; to which all those running Springs of the hilles pay their tribute, giuing it the name of a goodly Riuer, and withall, looking more warily, as hauing the bright shining Moone to helpe him, he might plainly behold by her womans Garments, that it was *Clori*, who made so fast away; and that though he lowdly called on her, she still held on her course, without affoording an answer: which made him (not a little amazed) mend his pace; and so breaking thorow the intricate boughes, and rough thicker, in a trice hee ouertooke her, but so out of breath, that vnable to stay himselfe, ouerthrowing her, they both came tumbling downe together; neither had they so stopped from falling into the Brooke, but that *Gerardo*, seeing himselfe almost lost, with incredible celeritie maruellously recovered himselfe: yet seeing *Clori* stirred neither hand nor foot, fearing the suddennesse of the fall might cause this trance, taking her in his armes, he returned to the Cottage; where laying her on bed, and kindling some dry stickes, before the rest of the company might be raised with the accident, hee brought her againe to her senses; but opening her eyes, it was with such grievous sighes, and extraordinary affrightment, that the poore Gentleman himselfe even suffered with her: and thinking verily, that all this in *Clori*, proceeded from some despairefull imaginations, with the best language that his wisdom could present to memory, hee indeauoured to cheare her, till at length her body wearied, with the continuall toyle of her mindes burdensome sorrow, her delicate necke subiect to the pillow, and her selfe to soft rest, she gaue way to *Gerardo* (though with more warines then formerly) to do the like.

Towards morning they awoke, and being day, rose; at what time the faire *Clori* desirous to return to her way, and taking

taking thankfull leaue of *Celio* and his shepherds, accompanied onely by the solitary Gentleman, till such time as he might set her directly for *Cesarina*; they both left the Cottage, and being not long after arrived at the parting place, *Clori* would let him go no farther, to the no little discontentment of his noble heart: and seeing him stil obstinate to goe with her, she aduertized him of the danger; which, by beeing scene with her, might happen to him, if so be by those (that in all likelihood were sent after her from *Senil*) he should be found in her company. Wherefore *Gerardo* acknowledging her good aduice (though much against his wil) followed it, taking leaue with teares; but first thorowly instructing her, that she might not misse her way; and returning with a slow march to his owne, ere long they lost each others sight. *Gerardo* hauing his mind still busied in the poore Dames wracked fortunes, could willingly haue wished them (if possible) added to his owne, rather then haue heard them as he did, to bee hers, or now, scene her againe all alone, perhaps, subiect to the like mishap. And in the midst of these pious considerations, vpon a sudden, her last nights fearefull flight came to his remembrance, and her ouer-earnestnesse, to haue him at present leaue her company, (all this resolued in his noble brest; besides, condemning his vn-manly cowardize, that for a little feare or respect of his owne safety, he should leaue her thus desperately to her selfe) his resentment was such, that (setting all inconueniences aside) hee resolued to follow, till hee might see her safe at her iourneys end: and with this deliberate purpose turning backe, in a moment he got to the place where they tooke leaue; and passing a pretty way further, seeing that (as farre as euer he might discerne) he could get no sight of her, beeing much troubled, and thinking it vnpossible, she should  
be

be gotten so farre of her way in so short space; so blaming his owne slownesse; and looking more narrowly vpon the troden path, he might see the print of *Clori's* little foote; which hauing traced, as a Guide to his journey, hee soone perceiued by the Tracke, that shee had turned out of the right way, to a thicket of tall Oakes, neere certaine old and ruinous walles: wherefore, he falling likewise into the same path, had not gone farre in it, when the skie beginning to waxe cloudie, there arose a sudden and furious gust of wind, which blew so forcibly towards him, that hee was scarce able to keepe on his way. But he more courageously animated by such violence, without resistance went on, and quickly got to the decayed building: where, by one of the lowermost walles, he found some of *Clori's* apparel; and passing further, more, euen all, to her very Smocke: which he no sooner beheld, when his grieued eyes began to runne streames of teares, his heart presaging some disaster, and looking towards heauen, he might see before him the wretched naked body of the mournfull Dame, that as then newly had desperately cast her selfe from a spreading Oake, hung in the ayre, by meanes of a strong nooze made by a scarlet Swath-band, that girded her tender Waste, which performed the stead of a halter.

Blessed heauen! cride *Gerardo*, with a fearefull voice, Let not thy clemencie permit such a losse of this faire Soule: and in so saying, he instantly got to the trees top, where vn-sheathing a short wood-knife hee had on, he cut the mortall knot, and *Clori* now in her last agony fell to the earth, whither, her fortunate restorer comming soone after to her, found that her breath was quite departed, the white and red of her cheekes turned into muddy, green, pale and bloudie, and her goodly eyes, euen started out of the Christall frame of the smooth snowie Forehead; the soft skeines of  
her



her flaming haire entangled and promiscuously disordred, and the pure Alabaster of her yuory necke, breast, and hands, vn-naturally enamelled with her big blewe swolne veines; in fine, so sad and horrid a spectacle, as might haue moued euen those guiltie Rockes, and the wilde Beastes whose prey she might haue beene: how much more then, the amorous heart of *Gerardo*, who like a Lionesse that would roare life into a dead whelpe, with teares and mourning sought to restore the desperate *Clori* to her selfe, Long hee strooue with her, but (in vaine) as he thought, since hee sawe little hope or possibilitie of fetching her, and so willing to celebrate her funerall obsequies with his last farewell, he came some-what neerer with his teares vnto her, which (as Heauen ordain'd) were turned into teares of ioy, for *Clori* now opened her cies and (wholly her selfe) with a weak voice craued pardon of her Maker, with euident signes of a true sorrowfull repentance: which the more increased, when she might beholde the Instrument of her remedie, who fetching her Garments to her, and helping her to put them on, she casting her selfe at his fecte, ashamed of the dismall accident, without daring once to looke vp, remained thus kneeling, forcing *Gerardo* to the like, who seeing her now in perfect memorie, with a cheerefull countenance entred into this pious discourse.

The present successe, faire *Clori*, hath so amazed me, that I know not what to conceiue of your desperate boldnesse, which, when I consider, I cannot but thinke, that, either you are no Christian, or not the child of Noble Parents; for the horreur vvhich yet affrights me, giues contradiction to both: and certainly it can not bee, but your iudgement is quite lost, for had it not been plaine distraction in you, you could not haue changed a momentarie dishonour, for an euerlasting immortall infamy, a slight distaste, for an e-

M

ternall



ternall mischief, and your owne weake passion, for an insupportable punishment. For tell me, pray, had you thus died? was your honour one iot the more restored, or the losse of your chastitie at all soldred? the staine, you so much depløre, fetcht out? rather contrary, and with your worthlesse dying, your owne honour, and of your whole stocke and linage, had beene irreparably forfeited: and which should make you most sensible, is, the danger to which you exposed your selfe, euen to the very brinke of eternall banishment from the diuine presence, to a fearefull Abyssus, where in immortall flames, you must haue paid the price of your desperate attempt; from which compassionate Heauen hath beene pleased to free you; looke vp then, vvith griued eyes, and your hearts inward humility, retume your deuout thanks for so eminent a benefir, such true Deuotion may giue an end to your miseries, which hath oft comforted those, that in others haue beene more lamentable and grievous.

And finishing his Discourse, perceiuing that *Clori* remitted her answer to teares and silence, hee thought best, not to giue vway to any new accident; and therefore intreating her to take comfort, cheering her vp all he might, and giuing her his arme for a rest, they faire and softly walked on toward *Cesarina*, where, by that time the morning was well spent, vvith greater ioy in *Clori* then might haue been expected, they arriued; and so, hauing not hitherto so much as spoken a word to *Gerardo*, most glad to see her selfe in her Vnkles towne, shee requested him to leaue her in some (the neereft) house; and withall to giue him notice of her arriuall; which *Gerardo* hearing, not thinking that to be so fitting for him; considering in vvhat manner *Clori* came, he onely obeyed her in the former, leauing her vvhere she desired; and so taking his leaue, without further stay in

*Cesarina*

*Cesarina*, by the vvay hee came, hee went backe to the Cottage.

This feare of his, not to see *Don Antonio* (so was her Vnkle called) was not vaine; for though his accompanying her (considering all circumstances) were worthy of perpetuall thanks; yet to any that were at first sight ignorant, it might breed suspition, that it were not to any good intent; and her Vnkle in likelihood giuing no credit to *Gerardo*, some great disaster happely might haue ensued, though no small one it was hee suffered in recompence of the seruice done the faire Dame; who, hauing caused speedy notice to be giuen to the Lord of the place; and hee hauing vnderstood (as you shall quickly heare) of her being absent from *Seuill*, immediately with some of his seruants, came where his faire Neece expected him: and hauing imbraced her (dissembling his sorrow to see her thus alone) he tooke her into his Coach, and together they went to the Castle of *Cesarina*, where, his sprightly Daughter *Nise* ioyfully vvelcomed her lost Cousin, renewing with this meeting their teares for long absence, which the suspitious Vnkle thought were shed for some other occasion then what was commonly knowne (though not to *Clori*) but vnwilling at present more to afflict the sorrowfull Dame, he forbore to giue her any account, of the disastrous successe of things in *Seuill*: that night she fled from thence, where (if you remember) we left the ielous and cholericke *Don Henrique*, vvho hauing shut vp *Clori* in her Chamber, fearing least his dishonour by losing time, should remaine vreuenged, determining in his violent thoughts a quicke dispatch of his adultrous wife; and finding her carelessly sleeping on her couch, being all alone with her, first, he stopped her mouth with a Handkerchiefe, and next, with two penetrating stabs left her breathlesse. So secretly laying her on bed, and draw-

ing the Curtaines close, hee went downe and commanded his seruants to their beds: and himselfe faining to doe the like, accompanied with a valiant trusty Slaue, hee got him into the street, leauing first a little window in his own chamber open, the signe which as *Clori* informed him, the deceased Dame vsed to her carelesse Louer, when she meant to haue him come to her by a certaine trap doore; to which he had also now gotten a false Key: not long after the lucklesse Youth, by the signe of his owne mishap was brought to the secure trap, and (ignorant of his Mistresse and her Fate) was no sooner entred, when surpris'd by the wronged *Don Henrique* and his seruant, whom till then lying close he saw not, vnable (for they gaue him no time) for his defence; the strong Slaue laying fast hold on him, his Master might at pleasure take his reuenge, who quickly left him in such estate as his Wife, and speedily fetching a turne or two in the street to dissemble the matter, as they were comming in againe, they saw sheetes hung at the window, by which *Clori* had slipped downe: vwhereupon hastning to her Chamber, missing her, her Vnkles heart vvas vvonderfully afflicted, as thinking that her flight must of necessitie discover the fact; so, hauing secretly sent out diuers wayes in her search, and taken some of his best Jewels and store of money, he and his Slaue vpon seuerall Horses tooke their way toward the Kingdome of *Portugall*; and with such speed, that though next morning as much vvas vsed for their apprehension, 'twas bootlesse, as also that of the seruants in *Cloris* search, by vvhom *Don Antonio* vvas aduertised of the successe; vvho at this time leauing her in his faire Daughters company, going backe to the house where she first entred, vvas informed in what manner *Gerardo* came with her, and of his garment of painted skins: Nise at this time as earnestly sought to know from her

Cousin

Cousin the manner of her vnfortunate iourney, who largely satisfied her, not so much as concealing her dishonour, onely kept secret her desperate attempt you before heard of.

The two cousins were not so priuate in their Discourse, but that a little Page of the house, vvas not farre off from them; who, when *Don Antonio* returned, told him their whole conference, so that his exorbitant grieve and passion, transporting him beyond all iust reason, without expecting to be confirmed by *Clori*, he was fully perswaded, that he, vvhich brought her to *Cesarina*, vvas Author of the Rape; wherefore blinded with rage, accompanied by some of his seruants lightly mounted, he vvvent out after him, and all of them taking different wayes, they scowred the whole country, bearing perfectly in memory those signes that were giuen them of *Gerardo*, whom some of them ouertooke not farre from the Cottage, and hauing seene him, were ready to haue trod him to pieces with their horses (such was their indignation) but desirous to bring him aliue to their M<sup>r</sup> they only seized vpon him, and bound him fast with strong cords: neither could the poore Gentleman by entreaties learne the cause of this their anger, which yet his minde euen presaged vnto him, as soone as he had parted from *Cesarina*; vvhere (being now carried by these men) when he arriued, he might see the whole towne in an uproare, as if an enemy were neere, and passing thorow, they reuiled him as he went by to the Castle, where *Don Antonio*, without giuing care to his discharge, or to what *Clori* would alledge to free him, (as thinking it was her goodnesse to saue his life) in spight of her and the faire *Nise*, that knew well enough his innocence; he commanded him to be fast shut in a strong Tower, in the greatest extremitie that might be. Here hee remained all the next day, and part of the darke-

some night, as sad and mournfull as in any his former misfortunes; yet the sorrow of the two kinswomen was not inferior; and *Clori* seeing that for her sake *Gerardo* was in so much danger, could not abstaine from weeping, in lieu of that gratitude in which shee stood engaged; neither could the lovely *Nise* afford her the least comfort: but she her selfe, governed by a more particular accident, was not altogether a stranger to *Gerardo's* misery; rather (making it partly her owne) and affectionate to that noble and generous proceeding of his toward her cousin, more then any the good parts of his person, whom as yet shee had not seene or knowne, accompanied her in her dolorous resentment, and with a minde as compassionate, as a heart resolute, not to let him perish, bidding *Clori* follow her (having signified her intent) she went into the roome where her father lay, and stealing the Keyes of the Prison from his beds head, provided also with some Viands, to refresh the captiue Gentleman, they ascended to the Tower; and having softly opened the doore, perceiuing their forgetfulness to come without lights, *Clori* was forced to go down for some; and in the meane time, *Nise* sitting downe to expect her, might heare *Gerardo* with a sweet voice, and distinct notes, tune this Dittie to the sound of a great chaine to which he was tyed, in which he cleerely chanted the tenor of his misfortunes.

*When yong Aprill once a yeere  
doth with Em'rald face appeare:  
Then giues he to each Riuer he can see,  
By winters frost imprison'd, libertie,  
white and yellow flowers are seene,  
Trees and Fields are clad in greene:  
The wilde beast leaues his den,*

*And*



*And Snakes grow young again.  
 Then the mournesfull Nightingale  
 Sings, or sweetly seemes to rayle  
 On him that basely in a Brothers shape,  
 Transform'd her by his well-reuenged Rape.  
 Thus Beasts, Birds, and euery thing,  
 Ioyes vpon th' approaching Spring:  
 But, I, the more reliefe  
 I seeke, the more's my griefe.*

To vvhich, and his sad complaints, she gaue an amorous  
 listning: and as his Song ended, *Clori* was come backe,  
 vvith a vvHITE Waxe Light in her hand, and so shutting  
 the doore to them, they both entred in vvhere our passion-  
 ate Gentleman had newly made an end of his singing la-  
 mentation; vvho when he saw such comfortable companie  
 approach, rising vp vvith all respect, vvondring at *Nise's*  
 extreme beaurty, but more at her boldnesse, (yet suspecting  
*Clori* to be the cause of her comming thither) turning first  
 to her, he thus began: Neuer, O gracious *Clori*, could my  
 minde thinke, that in the troubled Sea of my present mis-  
 fortunes (you liuing) my latest should arrive: especially, ha-  
 uing such a Protectresse, as shee that accompanies you, in  
 whose blessed appearance, I am confident, my life shal haue  
 a secure Hauen: Onely at present, I beseech you, let mee  
 know what hath caused my imprisonment: for if it be (as I  
 may ghesse) for hauing done you seruice (though perpetu-  
 all) I shall hold it welcomely imploide.

The most beautifull *Nise*, all the while *Gerardo* vsed these  
 speeches to *Clori*, stirred not her faire eyes a minute from  
 looking on him; and now felt her selfe so wholly his, that  
 (scarelesse of the incōueniencies that might happen, as the  
 not knowing what he was, & then the vncertainty of his li-



bertie) losing all respect of honour or reputation, she determined with her selfe to hazzard life a thousand times for him : and with this amorousnesse, preventing *Clori*, she first made answer :

The noble and courteous disposing of your good works hath so much engaged vs ; as I on my behalfe, and so likewise on my Cousins doe assure you , that did not your innocence make vs doubtlesse of your good successe of libertie, this very night it should bee bestowed on you , though some one perhaps might smart for giuing it ; but you must perforce haue patience, till such time as my Father, her Vnkle (lesse passionate) allow of your discharge, and bee thoroughly informed in the infallible truth ; for the suspicion only, that you are the Author of my Cousins wrong, hath moued him to this hard vsage towards you : wherefore I most earnestly intreat you, that you be not troubled in any wise ; for your grieffe (as long as you remaine in this estate) will be as much ours as your owne : to which purpose , the gentle *Clori*, vsing also her best Rhetoricke, desired him to fall to & eat some of those iuncats they brought him, and so leauing him the light, something to lessen the places discomfort ; fearing to be missed, they returned, (*Gerardo* remaining most thankfull for the pleasing visitation, which he also had two other nights insuing) there hapning after betwixt him and the diuine *Nise* , most amorous and wittie passages.

But neither of the gentle Dames could bee so gracious with the incensed *Don Antonio* , as to perswade in the truth of the Prisoners innocence ; rather, hee vvas prouoked to more choller and fury, by seeing in *Clori* so earnest a desire of his freedome ; and therefore purposing to make short worke, conferring with a Iudge, whom hee had appointed for the businesse in *Cesarina*, by his aduice (by rea-

son there came no proofes against him) they resolved hee should be racked ; and so the fourth day of his imprisonment hee was brought out ; and hauing first caused the frightfull engine to be set before him, and the accustomed Interrogatories to be read, notifying withall that he should (if he meant to escape the torment ) plainly confesse the truth of vvhhat he was charged vvithall seeing their intent failed them, and that he professed innocence, they began to haue him stripped out of his cloathes : but vvhen the newes was brought to the Gentewomen, their grieve vvvas such, especially *Nyses*, that shee could vvillingly haue inflicted a desperate punishment vpon her selfe, as thinking she was the cause of *Gerardo's*, for not giuing him his libertie vvhen she might; so inward was the paine they both felt for him, that his feeling of vvhhat vvvas threatned by the pittilesse Executioner, could not exceed it. But that vvvas preuented, by the opportune and vnexpected arriual of *Don Henrique*; vvho hauing, as he entred the towne, informed himselfe of what passed at the Castle, desirous to stop the iniustice, (since by what followes, you shall know *Gerardo's* innocence ) and comming to his Brothers presence, (vvith his Slaue that had a man vvith him fast bound and manicled) hauing louingly embraced one another, without proceeding further, hee desired that his Neece *Clori* might be brought vnto him ; vvho fearefully trembling, though encouraged by *Nise*, came and threw her selfe at his feete.

I omit for breuity the resentment on both sides ; so *Clori* looking about her toward the Slaue, and the fore-mentioned party brought Prisoner, as soone as shee viewed, knew him to bee the Author of her dishonour : whereupon vvnable to reserue, till some fitter occasion, the expression of her strong passion, with a lowd and fearefull shriek shee would :

would haue flowne at the Rascals face, had not her louing Vnkle kept her in, and deferred her weake reuenge, till by Iustice it might be inflicted on him, that for so detestable an act thorowly deserued it; to which, iust heauen and his offence brought him, by the way that hee thought best to haue escaped; which was, by going toward *Portugal*, whither (if you remember) the wrong'd well-satisfied *Don Henrique* held also his course; whom this wretched Villaine meeting neere the Riuer that diuides the two Kingdomes; and *Don Henrique* appearing to him to be a person of worth and quality, that in such an occasion might best supply his wants, without more ado, he resolu'd to sell him some of the Jewels he had taken from the abused *Clori*; and in this thought stepping forward, hee propos'd his intent to *Don Henrique*, telling him, that want of money forced him to sell some things of good value, if he pleas'd to buy them: to which, he, as attentiuely as villing to haue a good bargain, vvhich aswell in respect of his Merchant, as the occasion he might expect, in such manner answered, That the traitour satisfied, first shewed him an enamelled neck-Lace of Gold and Pearles, and next, two curious ear-Rings, set and bordered with rich Emeralds and precious Rubies, with other pieces neatly wrought; all which, vvithout further vvittnesse or information, *Don Henrique* much amazed, instantly called to mind, to haue sometime belonged to his loued *Clori*: and the suddenesse of the matter did so perplex him, that supposing her vntimely end for certaine, vvvhich that fellow, after hee had abused and robbed, might haue brought her to; vvithout enquiring a vvord more of him, crying furiously out, and setting spurs to his swift horses flanke, (the Villaine vnable to auoid him) he ranne him ouer and ouer; and turning the reines, vvith the same speed the second time trampled on him; leaving him

him so bruised and wounded, that he was not able to stirre hand or foot: and seeing him in this taking, unwilling, till he knew whether he had left *Clori* alive or dead, to make an end of him, commanded his faithfull slave (who astonished, beheld what passed) to alight and bind him strongly; and so leauing the maine rode-way, & shadowing themselves amongst certaine spreading Okes, *Don Henrique* threatning the fellow to kill him, if he confessed not the truth, demanded of him, what became of the Owner of those Jewels; which the fearefull vretch satisfying, telling him all that passed, and how *Clori* purposed to goe toward *Cesarina*, without staying a minute longer; the valiant slave by his Masters command, setting the fellow athwart the Saddle before him, they returned in all haste thitherward, and in three dayes came to haue a sight of *Clori*. And now *Dons Antonio's* cruelty was well asswaged, & knowing the originall of the offence, he thought fit to absolve the poore prisoner of his vniust accusation: so *Gerardo* (after he was free) giuing due thanks to Heauen for the fauour done him, making first his excuse to *Clori*, taking both her Vnkles aside in priuate, he gaue them, without any reseruatiō, entire notice, of the horrid and strange successe of her desperate resolution in the solitarie Forrest, desiring them in fine, that out of the care of their pure affections, they would take some course for their Nieces important remedy, from her selfe he vnderstood, that she would be willing to end her dayes in some religious Monastery.

When the two louing brothers heard this, acknowledging how much they stood indebted to *Gerardo*, and the harsh recompence he had receiued, with noble and compassionate teares, struing who might first imbrace him, they heartily craued pardon: the like also did *Clori*, as hauing most reason to be sensible of his misfortunes: in the  
meane

meane time they commanded, that the wretch should bee put in *Gerardo's* Tower, from whence hee was not many dayes after brought out, and dispartch't to his Graue. And dinner being now ready, with equall ioy on all sides, especially of the peerelesse *Nise*, they sate downe to the Table, giuing the best place to the vnknowne Gentleman, ouerruling his refusall with their courtesie; which the thankefull Brothers in such manner expressed, that both at dinner time and afterward, they extraordinarily importuned him to remaine in their company, and to leaue the rusticke Shepherds, and rurall life: the gracefull *Nise* too, adding her intreaties, wrought so effectually, that with the sweetnesse of her earnest courtesie, she brought him from his solitary resolution: and therefore, obliged aswell by those seuerall inuitements, as supposing also, that as much in Countrey as Citie, his misfortunes were euery where the same; he accepted the fauourable offer, giuing from this instant, new beginning, to his third last Tragickall Discourse, of his Histories first Part.

To the seuerall ioy and applause of *Don Antonio*, his Brother, *Clori* and *Nise*, was the pleasing intertainment of their new Ghest admitted, who to giue full content to those Gentlemen, (that though they knew him not, ghesst at his woorth) must needes now change his pastorall Weedes, and sute himselfe to the fashion of the present times; with which sudden, and wel-shap't brauerie, hee increased in the gallant *Nise* her pre-inflam'd affection; whose Father with all possible demonstrations of loue, wished him to make vse of him, his house, and all his as his owne; but the preheminence in this particular belonged more to the affectionate gentlewoman, which *Gerardo* perceiued wel in her continuall care of him, though he thought best not to take any notice to her of her kindnesse, and his owne obligation, as long as the



the iust estimation of both liued thankfully within him, and so outwardly (yet vnwillingly) preferred *Don Antonio's* offers: which fashion of his, by her that so much affected him, was held but for a cold, if not vngratefull, correspondence.

This honest wary proceeding of *Gerardo's*, stirred vp in the blind enamoured *Nise*, a vehement suspicion, that (doubtlesse) the vnfortunate *Cloris*, being her Louers hearts treasure, was also the occasion of his dissembling, or (which she no better esteemed) despising contempt; which ielous thought, without further ground, ingendred in her vnquiet bosome, finding the flame to increale, and wholly confirming her opinion, shee detetmined to make knowne her beguiled imagination to *Gerardo*, who (as you heard) sought by all meanes to banish his mind from any such imployment, disposed rather to his own death, then to proue the executioner of his reputation; and therefore forbore all he might all incounters with *Nise*, but so many were presented by her, that in the end her importunate desire vanquisht him in a place and occasion as forcible. as necessarie, to declare himselfe in. *Nise* helping on with her discretion, by the meanes of a wittie inuention of passe-time, which we call *Purposes*: as ordinarie, as generall, especially in such frolicke and mirthfull assemblies, as that which was at length gotten together, in a faire cleare night, about some two moneths alter *Gerardo* had passed part of the tedious cold Winter, in such like amorous passages at *Cesarina*: about which time *Don Henrique* with good aduice, having taken a Iourney, and presented himselfe at Court, (which not long since, by his Maiesties resolution, was resettled in the more auncient and better seat *Madrid*) *Gerardo* thought fit, making him acquainted with his loued brother *Leonio*, to write also by so suse a messenger, and giue him.



him notice of many troubles and misfortunes; which newes was no lesse welcome to him, then that, of finding him aliue in the first Discourse at *Segonia*; of whose brotherly gladnesse *Don Henrique* reaped the best fruit: for *Leonio*, willing as well for his owne deserts, as his brothers sake, to shew him courtesie, vndertooke his busines, which he pursued with such care and diligence, that in a short time (though not without great opposition) he absolutely got him freed: where leaue we them, and in the *interim*, prosecute the mentioned intent of our sport, in which the waggish Louer cunningly kindles the soft fire, that at last scorched the melting *Nise's* heart; who hauing (as is said) on Purpose formed the Play so called, setting *Gerardo* betwixt *Clori* and her, and other three Damosels her maides in the like ranke, the ioyfullst that might be, to see her selfe so neere her soules Owner, turning to him, and telling the *Purpose* softly in his eare, she gaue beginning to the sport, *Gerardo* and *Clori* seconding, and so the rest of the company, till (hauing gone round) it came to the gracious *Nise's* turne; who reuealing alowd the *Purpose*, disposed it thus:

*If euer I my Purpose firme  
Change, may Loue of life bereaue me.*

And *Gerardo* with a wel-becommimg neglect, in like manner alowd made answer:

*His fierce torments neuer leaue me,  
If that opinion I confirme.*

And the iocund *Clori*, with a countenance (differing from her vsuall looke) smilingly vttered the two ensuing verses:

*Those persons that vngratefull be,  
What punishment haue they deseru'd?*

To

To which, the first Damofell thus :

*Such as a curst frowne hath referr'd,  
Forgetfulnesse and Ielouſie.*

And the ſecond more pittifull, ſmilingly ſaid :

*Grievouſly hath he offended  
Againſt Lone, whom you ſentence thus.*

And the third replying, concluded the *Purpoſe* :

*Nay, neuer be propitious  
Vnto them, will not be mended.*

Gerardo well perceiu'd, how for the nonce they had contriu'd the artificiall ſport ; but ſeeing the paſſionate Gentlewoman, prepared to a ſecond bout, giuing his eare to her, his thoughts left roaming for the preſent ; ſo the ſecond *Purpoſe* began , which paſſing round as the former, the carefull *Niſe* declared alowd, ſaying :

*With Lone, Faith, Hope, ſhall you obtaine  
Soone, a glorious victorie.*

To which, the pre-experienced Gerardo, thus :

*I, but wiſh in my memorie,  
A bloody change doth yet remaine.*

And *Clori* that ſmelt their drift, went on :

*Harbours are not euery one  
Vnto ſtormes ſubiect : ſome are bleſt.*

And the firſt Damofell ſeconding her, ſaid :

*Thoſe that I eſteeme the beſt,  
Are Good-will, and Occaſion.*

And the ſecond thus proſecuted :

*I know who by the locke of haire,  
Captiue comes to ſet her free.*

To which, the third replying, concluded (as formerly) the ſport :

*Let ſuch a one ſeeke death for me,  
Like Abſalon hang in the ayre.*

And

And prolonging the sport yet a little more, she that began the *Purpose*, hauing passed it round, spoke out:

*Desire in me a Martyr is,  
Loue, the Executioner.*

And *Gerardo* answered with his wonted carelesnesse:

*Let me die, if I once auerre,  
What the most constant hold in this.*

Then the sprightly *Clori*:

*In the selfe-same opinion,  
Mens reputations still shall line.*

The first, next answered in her ranke:

*But we are faultie, since we giue  
Them hopes by fond affection.*

To which, the second satisfied with her owne opinion, with a pleasant smile thus replied:

*The remedie for this is plaine,  
Let vs our passions not reueale.*

And the third pursuing, thus clozed vp the whole sport:

*Ah, but, a Loue-thought to conceale,  
Nothing will serue, no helpe humane.*

In this manner they spent the greatest part of the night, in which, and the artificiall vaile of the Play, there happened betwixt *Gerardo* and *Nise* remarkable passages, shee continuing her affections more securely, lesse ielous of her Cousin, and he his wary behauiour, to *Nise's* no lesse torment, to see her selfe treated with so free a neglect, without receiuing in a long time, the least shew of comfort, or any occasion to make her thinke *Gerardo* awhit sensible of her passion for him: and at this time the deuoted *Clori*, pressing her Vnkle *Don Antonio* to the accomplishment of her religious desire, to her Cousin *Nise's* exceeding sorrow, (in respect of the solitude she should by her absence suffer) was carried to a Monastery of Nunnes in *Seuil*, in  
which

which iourney our *Gerardo* was to accompany her, together with her loued Vnkle; and before his returne from thence, the desired, and no lesse gratefull newes of *Don Henrique* his liberty came to his notice, written by the noble *Leoncio*, who also prepared himselfe, to returne with him to *Andaluzia*; inuited, not onely by the gladfome-nesse of seeing his Brother, but also to render his due thanks to the noble *Don Antonio*, for his free entertainement; who now hauing seene his Neece placed, made no longer stay in *Seail*, but returned to his Castle, to make preparation to receiue the new-expected Ghests: and *Gerardo* also (by mutuall consent) meant to remaine awhile after him in the Citie, to provide himselfe of some necessaries for certaine festiuall Triumphes they ordeined: which effected, and summoning some kinsmen and friends of *Don Antonio's*, that vpon notice giuen them of the time, they might repaire to *Cesarina*; one after-noon about Sun-set, he began his iourney thitherward; but had scarce trauelled a flight-shoot from the Cittie Gates, when, foure men crossing his way, and one of them clapping fast hold on the reines of his Nagges bridle, bade him alight; letting him know, that they were Searchers belonging to his Maiesties Customes in that place, and that they were to performe their Office; which he hearing, presently forsooke his Saddle, giuing them leaue to view his Port-manteau; but they demanded to haue it opened, and consequently the key; which he (ignorant of the Custome) was somewhat slacke in deliuering. But considering there was a necessitie of so doing, and loth to resist their Authority, (though he might thinke it to be ouer-rigorous) hee beganne to vnbutton his Doublet, discovering a faire Chaîne of Gold; at one of whose Linkes the key was fastened, which caused no small couetousnesse in the promoting beholders, that straight

willed him also to take that off too, and this with such haughty language, and imperious proceeding, as the vn-sufferable molestation caused the good Gentleman, carelesse of the aduantage of their oddes and Office, retiring two or three steps backe, to remit to his hand and Sword, the correction of their insolent behauiour. But they beeing foure, and (as such knaues vse to bee, strongly armed) *Gerardo's* life vnder-went some hazzard. All that from the beginning passed, a yong Gentleman, no lesse inwardly couragious, then outwardly to see to, not farre off beheld: who, seeing the equitie and iustice of *Gerardo's* cause, withall, his danger, instantly made vp close to him; and nimble folding his Cloake ouer his left arme, with his Sword in the other hand, so animated *Gerardo* with his assistance, that hee, with new and fresh Valour (though wounded) seeing his friend like a second *Alerdes* bestir himselfe among the Searchers, recovering his lost ground, and sticking close vnto him (they quickly put my Gentlemen to flight:) and hauing hurt three of them shrewdly, the rest shewed them a faire paire of heeles. So for feare of the worst, the vnknowne friend causing *Gerardo* to sheathe his Sword, taking his Horse by the reines bade him follow him (which he did, and so speedily) that, though the field was soone full of people got together in an vpror, they were in safety, by crosing the Riuer in one of the many passage Boates, that ordinarily attend thereabouts.

*Gerardo* was not a little satisfide; for though he had lost what he carried about him, yet it could nothing haue grieved him, in respect of hauing gained such a friend as was with him: and by this time seeing themselues a good distance from the famous Sub-vrbs of *Triana*, and free from all danger, hee clasped his thankfull Armes about his friends

friends necke, and with a gladfome countenance thus (proceeding) said, Trust me, Valiant Sir, I may well presume, to haue in mine armes at this instant, the greatest courage that mine eyes haue beheld; and to which, with iust reason, I must acknowledge my seruice and selfe perpetually bound; and therefore I beseech you, that to deliuer me of my ignorance, I may know, by knowing you, to whom I must owe the life I at present enioy. So slight a courtesie (replide the valiant Gentleman) deserues not so high an extolling: it is so ordinarie and naturall to my condition, to take part with the weaker party (chiefely where there is right) that had you knowne mee longer, you might before now haue beleeued it; neither need you therefore be now curious of thankses, for what is no noueltie, but customarie; rather omitting this, I shal esteeme as a fauour, that reckoning this vnluckie day, for no beginning of your iourney, you vwill deferre it, and returne vwith me, where at a poore lodging of mine in this City you shall be (howeuer entertained) faithfully welcomed. And so perceiuing *Gerardo's* face all bloudy, thinking him to be much vvounded, he pressed him with his intreaty more earnestly; and he vvas no whit mistaken, for the other had in the late skirmish, receiued a cut in his head, at vvwhich he voided so much blood, that he began to finde himselfe somewhat ill at ease with it, vvwhich inforced him to accept of his new friend his noble and courteous offer; vvith vvhom (after thanks giuen) he returned to his friendly mansion, where by a dainty Dame (vvhom hee after vnderstood to bee his friends Mistris) he was louingly welcomed, softly lodged, and his wound cured as carefully, as had he beene with his absent Mother.

Here *Gerardo* rested fiftene dayes; in which time hauing sufficiently discerned the good parts of his new friend, and



satisfide with them, discovered his past disasters, and being more importuned, gaue him a strict account of all the particulars, inuiting with this freeness *Arcenio* (so was the noble Gentleman stiled) to the like, and to muster vp the successes of his life, so many, so miraculous, that were they proper to this Tragicall History, would proue no lesse pleasing, then pittifull.

But, my principal scope of breuitie being to goe on with our maine Subiect, the Reader may dispence with my slacknesse: onely bee pleased to know, that the beeing a branch of one of our *Spaines* Noblest Families, was the least of *Arsenio's* excellencies: for his person, hee was valiant, wise, quicke of wit and apprehension; one, that by reason of many notable misaduentures, and thwarts of Fortune, had euer liued from his natue Countrey, and as concealedly as in the same kind our *Gerardo*. The two hauing now settled a straight League of friendship, *Gerardo* making knowne his abode in *Cesarina*, and the future triumphs that were there preparing; together, how ill his absence would bee taken by *Don Antonio* (though he had sent him word of the past accident) sorry to leaue his friend, taking first leaue of the discreet *Amaranta* (so was *Arsenio's* Mistris called) hee was by him accompanied a long mile out of the Citie; vvhose after seuerall protestations for their due correspondence, returned thither; and *Gerardo*, where he was iustly expected, especially, by the faire disdained *Nise*.

Some three dayes after, he arriued at *Cesarina*, vvither also came iust at the time *Don Henrique* and *Leoncio*, vvith whose ioyfull meeting the true brotherly affection of the foure Gentlemen was really deciphred; but more exquisitely in *Leoncio* and *Gerardo*, who now wholly bent vpon the approaching Shewes and Triumphs, to the generall mirth and gladnesse of all, accompanied by *Leoncio*, the

two affectionate brothers, and many other Gentlemen their friends, that at such solemnities use to resort from the remotest parts, hee rode out of the Castle one faire cleere night amongst others, hee and the rest in an *Encamisada* or Night-Maske, attended with many shrill-sounding Instruments; to whose sound (after the Troope had each past his Carreere) a Page that went before him in the finest and most eminent part of the great Market-place of *Cesarina*, set vp a bright shield, at which the ensuing Challenge was fixed.

## THE CHALLENGE.

*The unfortunate Knight, alias, Spanish Gerardo, to all Knights to whose notice the present Challenge shal arrive, makes knowne, that, within twenty dayes, from this present, he will in this place, and in publike Carreere with three courses at the Ring, maintaine; that the fraile change and inconstancie of women past and present, hath beene, and is, greater then their firmenesse, and that this he will make good with the conditions following, (viz.) That the Knight, who by sentence of the Judges shal lose, be bound to subscribe to this his Tenet: and that the Knight likewise, or Adventurer, to whose good fortune the Prize and Victory may happen, shal receive from him, as a due reward for his merit, a rich Diamond.*

(This done) in the manner they came, with great solemnitie they returned; accompanying the Challenger to his lodging; where leauing him, all of them went seuerally to their owne, to provide themselues against the prefixed time, being the first of the flourishing moneth of *May*; till when the carefull *Nise* spent the short houres in workes and imbroideries, enriching with her owne nimble hand, diuers

conceited pieces of brauerie for her squeamish Louer; who hauing also neere the time caused the Lists to bee set vp in the place; (and all things necessarie performed) he spent the most part of the dayes in practising to make himselfe cunning, and assure the honour of the triumphs to his victorious Arme, which being at length at hand, there wanted no concourse of the better sort, and infinite numbers of others, as had they been in some great and populous Citie, euen in the Court it selfe of our most Catholike Monarch.

'Twas towards the midst of day, when from the high Castle of *Cesarina*; a peale of great Ordnance beganne to let fly, with such a frightfull thundering noise, that a lesser made in the sightly place by two hundreth Harquebuziers could not be heard, nor the cheerefull Volley, that after a well-ordered skirmish, they bestowed vpon the lusty Challenger: vwho attended with the sound of diuers lowd Instruments, was now making his approach and entrance.

There passed before him in comely array an hundreth *Ginitiers* of the brauest on all that Coast, armed in their Steele-coates, white Shields, smooth Taffata Skarfes, listd with siluer, and their Launces with little streamers of the same; all which, the *Infanterie* hauing cleered the Place, began another no lesse well-performed skirmish, and concluding it, with a winding wheele-about, diuided in two squadrons and seuerall Rankes, they gaue way to twelue huge Sumpter-Moyles to come in, which were loaden with curious Launces, their cloathes which couered them, being Russet Veluet, embroidred with siluer, with *Gerardo's* Armes in the midst: and hauing paced about, they made a stand iust before a Tent of Russet Damaske, neere vvhich the Launces were taken, and reared vp, and so the beasts making roome by their absence, the place was taken vp by twelue well-shap't light Horse, that with their sumptuous  
fur.

furniture had each a Lackey to attend them; whose Liveries were Russet Sattin, Pane-hose with white Leather, sleevesse Jerkins, and doublets of the same colour'd Satten, Russet Hats, feathers white, after whom came in foure and twenty Gentlemen extremely Gallant that accompanied the Challenger: before him (as Stricklers) went his brother *Leoncio* and *Don Henrique*, both clad in rich Tissue, the ground Russet, Plaine Caps, and Plumes white and Russet, in such state, as seemed to obscure the courageous Challenger, who came in vpon a Damson blacke Steed, like another *Cesar*, clad in the Roman habit like one of them, his colour Russet, Sattin richly embroidered with siluer, so curiously interlaced and wouen, as more could not from Art be expected: in his right hand he bore a short Truncheon studded with siluer, and on his lofty vncovered browe, wore a Crowne of mournefull Cypresse, his Horse Trappings were also Russet, imbroidered as aforesaid, his bitt Massie siluer: no lesse, his head Armour: Plumes russet and white, with a prauce so light and so lofty, that he seemed to be rather all Aire, then to giue the least touch to the earth. Then followed sixe other cole-blacke Horses, that drew after them a glorious Triumphant Chariot, behinde which came ten or twelue Gentlemen, that in equall brauery, being the Rere-ward of the Stately Troope, ended that shew. The Chariot was blacke, diapred with Starres (as bright as the mornings) siluer both within and without; in midst of which, on a high Throne that tooke vp the whole Chariots breadth, and within that, vnder a Triumphant artificiall Arch, was a goodly Statue of a most beautiful woman, clad in a long *Aegyptian* Robe, set and garnished with a world of Crownes, Scepters, Myters, and *Persian Tiaras*, so linked and wouen together, that framing a most curious piece to the eye, plainly appeared to bee the feared and

adored Deity, which the Idolatrous Gentiles call Fortune, as her Motto gaue to vnderstand, which she held in her left hand, written in a Red and siluer Streamer, as thus :

*I, vnconstant Fortune am  
Changeable, because a Woman,  
Euer false, but true to no man.*

Her right hand was fixed ; and hanging at it a Siluer Wheele, she seemed to raise vp toward her, a dead Knight, clad in the same colours that *Gerardo* ; the Motto or Epitaph, which in a thinne parchment hee carried in his right hand, was such :

*Of my fall I rest assur'd,  
And had therefore rather dye,  
Then, to fall againe, mount high.*

This Motto was throwne in seuerall Parchments vp and downe the place, though none so well vnderstood the meaning, as the apprehensie *Nise*, who betwixt *Celia* and *Leonora*, two of her kinswomen of wonderfull beauty, together with many stranger Dames, and of *Cesarina*, late in a costly hung roome ; and (though the weather were parching hot) of it selfe shadie, or as if whilst *Nise* was there, *Sol* were not willing to approach, lest from an eye of hers, his splendour might receiue a taint. Clad she was in russet Sattin cut ; but so, that through each of the slashes, the inside and lining shewing to be rich Cloth of Siluer, made them seeme Artificiall flowers, whose midst of each was as it were budded with a fine Pearle ; the lacing and Borders were subtilly inter-wreathed with siluer Purle, and the Pearles in conuenient spaces set betweene. Her head-tyre no lesse curious then costly, discovered the most, and  
hinder

hinder part of her haire, kept smooth, in stead of a Haire-lace, with a rich border of precious Stones; and those golden skeines, suppl'd the want of a Caule, which had thee worne, *Phabus* might haue missed those Locks of hers to enuy at.

The deic'd *Nise* was so melancholy, distast'd with her cruell Louers opinion, that the braue Challenger, in her sorrowfull countenance might easily reade the Story of her woe: and so (though hee knew not how any more to loue) yet as oft as he looked vpon her sadnesse, his heart would prompt him to some new way of resentment: he could not but inwardly accuse himselfe of some cruelty, in vvhich new entertain'd thought, passing round about the place; and hauing performed the accustomed salutations to the Ladies, he made a stand at his faire Tent; directly opposite to which, on a large Scaffold, couered with rich pieces of Tapistry and Damaske, of seuerall colours, sate the Iudges, to vvit, *Don Antonio* and two other Gentlemen of his kindred; and somewhat beneath them, vnder a State of Cloth of Gold, ground Russet, stood a goodly Cup-board, beset with many rich Jewels, and on the vpper part, a garnish of Silver and gilt Plate, and aboue that vppermost of all, the rich Diamond set in a ioynt Ring of Gold, as the Victorious Adventurers knowne reward. And in the meane time, till some one might approach, *Gerardo*, alighting, sate him downe in an embroidered Chaire, which was placed ready for him at his Tent doore, to the no small blithesomenesse of those that beheld his stately entrance.

The foure and twenty Gentlemen, and twelue last, that accompanied him, settled themselves in order by the Tent-side, forming a beautifull and goodly Squadron, hauing behinde them the Musicke and lowd-sounding Instruments, which came in vvith the Challenger.

And



And not long after a noise of Drumme and Trumpers , they might behold a troope of Gallants entring at one side of the place , all well mounted , but with their stirrups at length contrary to the *Ginetiers* , and armed like men at Armes , their armour so bright-carued and cunningly wrought , that each appeared a most cleere Cristall-looking-glasse : Their Standerd was carried before them , whose colour and stufte vvas blue Damaske , the fringe Gold , with a small Scutcheon in the midst , and in that , embroidered , the knowne Armes of *Cesarina's* Lords , being two Castles in a field Azure , a strong chaine of Gold , hanging from each , to which a Lyon Rampant crowned , was fastened by the gorge . Next , followed a triumphant Chariot , so wrought , that it seemed to be really pure gold , in whose corners & quadrangle were liuely set out the metaphoricall loues of the nice *Daphne* , and god *Apollo* : within the Chariots selfe was heard a sweet consort of well-tuned Instruments , whose pleasing shrillnesse much gladded the hearers ; and on the top of a middle Arch , was placed a Globe or world of Gold , and vpon it the feared little-Wagge *Cupid* , iust as the Ancients paint him , naked , blind-fold , in his hand a Turkish Bow with a sharpe Arrow , that drawn to the head , seem'd to aime at the brest of a Knight , that came after the Chariot , mustering out the seuerall braueries of his gallant personage , vpon a swift Dapple-grey . He was cladde in a strait Cote of Cloth of Gold azur'd , set thicke with Buttons and Loopes of Gold , a Walloon Hat of blew Taffata , couered with Gold-Twist , and high blew Martinet feathers ; with which , and other Plumes the Horse had his proud forehead neatly tricked vp , his Trappings being sutable in stufte and colour with his Owner : who was soone knowne to be the valiant *Laura* , Nephew to *Don Antonio* , designed by him to be his daughters Bridegroom ,  
though

though shee at present were farre enough from such a thought. *Lauro* presumed vpon being her true Louer, and his owne affection; and the more, by how much he perceiued *Nise* sought to blot him out of her remembrance, whole contemptfull neglect, wrought matter sufficient of raging ielousie in his inflamed brest, which was now grown to a height, by seeing her weare the same colours with *Cervado*. *Lauro* was accompanied by twelue other *Sevillian* Gentlemen, that rode vpon their dapple Ginetts, with Trappings and Plumes futable to those of their Aduenturer; and they in their paned Hose of blew Sattin, the ground, Cloth of Gold; Ierkins, Clokes, and Cappes, of the same coloured Veluet, laced, & fringed with Gold; who as they passed vp and downe the place, cast this Motto from them, being the same that *Lauro* wore on the midst of his brest, set in a little Plate of Gold:

*This day, the firmenesse I defend  
Of my faire Mistris, though she be  
Firmer to kill, then pittie me.*

With great acclamation the giddie Multitude celebrated the gallant *Lauro's* solemne entrance; who after performance of Ceremonies, leauing the golden Chariot on one side of the place, came where the Challenger was, and hauing courteously saluted him, thus proceeded: You already know, Sir Knight, the intent of my comming, and I promise you, this very minute of time, that (the not putting it in execution, slips from me, seemes a lasting Age: (assured) that the vwrongfull cause you maintaine, vvill afford me the Prize, and desired Victory; and if I prooue so vnfortunate, as to be forced to subscribe to your opinion, I vvill lose this Chaine to boot, vvich comes not short in  
valew

valew of your Diamond. And (this sayd) hee tooke from off his owne necke, a massie enamelled Chaîne of extraordinary vvorkemanship, and giuing it to the Iudges, the Challenger, vvho was now mounted and heard him, replied, That he was wel contented; and in so saying, tooke a big Launce, vvhich seemed to be in colour of varnished Ebonie, and straight ranne his Carreere, vvith such courage, and so comely a pleasing ayre, as caused a generall longing in the Spectators for his Victory. And beeing come to the limited place, taking his Arme and Lance out of his rest, he carried it so stedfast and euen, that without the least touch of the Ring, he tooke it away vvith him vpon his point: and stopping his horse, encouraged by the confused shoutes sent out in his fauour, he began to expect the fortune of his contrary; vvho, more confident then cunning, taking his Lance, began, and ranne his Carreere vvith such furious speed, that he vvas scarce heard or seene; but stretching out his Launce, 'twas not with that certainty that he could take the Ring, though he touched vpon the Circle of it. *Gerardo* was as glad and satisfied, as the Aduenturer sad and passionate; yet he dissembled his grieffe, and prepared himselfe to the second course, which the Challenger now began vnto him; in vvhich when hee came neere the Ring with his Launce, he bore it sheere away, giuing a greater motiue to the loude cries in the spacious place. *Lauro* passed his Carreere very gracefully, and more vvary then before, tooke the Ring this bout aswell as *Gerardo*; vvho now changing both Horse and Launce, ranne the last course, and toucht the Ring, in midst of the vpper part of it, almost in the same place that *Lauro* first did: vvho, thinking the Victory now would not be very doubtfull, mounted vpon a well rein'd *Corduba* browne-Bay, passed (like Lightning) the Carreere, but missed quite the Ring; at which he was angry, and our  
of

of countenance, as the Challenger pleased and contented, on vvhoſe part the Iudges declared the Victory, ſending him the vvaighty Chaine, and commanding *Lauro* alſo to ſet his name vnder *Gerardo's* Challenge, which grieved him farre more then his loſſe. But of neceſſitie he muſt approch the great Tent; out of which the Shield was brought him, and the opinion of him, in whoſe hands, hee firmed to it; who ſeeing *Lauro* ſo paſſionate, caſting his armes about him, ſaid: Let not Fortunes various euent, diuide, friend *Lauro*, our affections, and depriue me of the fauours I haue ſtill receiued from you, and from which I acknowledge the preſent Victorie proceedes: and to confirme you in this truth, behold here the reward, appointed by your ſelfe, to whom, it is fitter to returne it: and ſo taking the Chaine out of a great ſiluer Baſon, he put it about his necke, *Lauro* vnable to reſiſt his noble courteſie. To which, (thankfull, as he had reaſon) the other answered, Certainly, Signior *Gerardo*, you haue this day gained on my thankfull mind a greater victory, then that which ſhould haue redounded by this onely exerciſe of Iuſt, by your courteous proceeding: and ſo from hencefoorth in all occaſions, I profeſſe my ſelfe, *Yours by Conqueſt*: and ſince, touching the Chaine you haue wonne, you will (without beeing one) make your ſelfe a loſer; leſſe reaſon it were, I beeing really ſo, ſhould poſſeſſe it; if therefore you pleaſe to giue mee leave, my opinion is, that it bee beſtowed vpon the Dame that beſt deſerues it. It ſhall infinitely content me, replied *Gerardo*, that you pleaſe ſo well to employ it; at what time, the paſſionate *Lauro* leauing him, directed his way toward the louely *Niſe*, that now expected what would be the iſſue of the two Knights their Complements: and comming neere, with a low obeſſance, as well to her, as the reſt of the Ladies and Dames alſo, he tooke the Chaine, (firſt kiſſing it)

it) and putting it on the point of his Launce, and lifting it vp toward his faire Cousin, vsed the ensuing Phrase: Though the hauing so meanly defended your cause, may make me so great an vn-deseruer, that you (to fauour mee) might refuse this small trifle from me; yet that pure affection of mine, and the desire I know, he that gained it, hath to serue you, may haply supply my defects, if you will vouchsafe to honour the poore pledge with your faire necke. Here he ceased, expecting *Nise's* answer; who, dissembling the more suspitious point of his speech, yet cheereful, made him vnderstand his bold excesse, saying: Truly, Cousin, if our firmenesse be but all this day, as well defended, as hitherto, the Challenger may rue his boldnesse, and his rash opinion will be sufficiently punished: and therefore in satisfaction of the seruice you haue done all these Ladies and Dames present, I will receiue from you the Chaine, but so, that when you shall thinke fit to aduenture it againe, you may know where to find it. Here, a fire of passion breaking out of his countenance, *Lauro* had not the heart to reply a word, but got him shamefully out of the place, iust as from another street there entred in the lofty and flaming mount *Aetna* of *Sicily*, vomiting at a huge mouth or breathing place made at the top of it, so many seuerall flashes and flames, together with such hideous noyse, as if all Hell had beene vvithin it: the rest of the Mount was all of an adust burnt browne; the vvhole, moouing most slowly on vvith notable artifice, not leauing so much as the least signe or tracke of it on the ground on vvhich it went; till comming neere the vvindowes, vvhere the Iudges and Ladies sate, the Engine stood still, and the flames increased so violently, that the ayre condensed all on a thicke smoake, the people could hardly see one another; till the cloud and vvhole *Aetna* vanishing together, in the stead, there appeared two  
Gen.

Gentle and gallant youths, differently mounted, who inclosed in midst of twelue fierce Saluages; their braue and sightly colours caused great content in as many, as admiring also their inuention, pleasingly beheld them. They were Moore-like clad, in Cloth of Siluer Cassocks wrought vvith crimson flowers, and long Robes of red Sattin, vvith white flowers both so artificially drawne, as if the flowers had beene naturall and onely strewed on them: their bonnets were red Veluet, and Hat-bands twisted siluer, their high Plumes of feathers in colour sutable, and their sleeues of delicate transparent Sendall, embroidered and set with rich stones, their horses Swan, or snow-white, with clothes and Caparisons of Crimson Sattin, vvith all their embroidery of Siluer, Scarfes, and Feathers sutable to those of their Owners, vvho iust then mooued on, most artificially encompassed by their twelue Saluages, vvho cast round about the seuerall papers, and this same-following Motto:

*If, as equall we appeare  
In our valour, in our blood,  
Loue would work vs equall good,  
Then, we both immortal were.*

Hee vvho seemed elder of the two, (though both young enough) carried at the end of a big Launce, a small red and vvwhite Streamer; in midst of which was this Motto embroidered:

*If death must be my remedie:  
If loue that must procure me her:  
Long be, her comming doth deferre.*

The second also had in the little Streamer of his Launce this ingrauen Motto:



*From Love, my life beginning takes:  
Therefore to Love my life I give,  
Since without Love I cannot live.*

Foorthwith the lustie Salvages began to play vpon diuers Instruments, which they carried in stead of their heauie Clubbes, whose sound and harmony gaue motion to the Knights. But no sooner were they gotten to the Lists, when by all that beheld them, they were knowne to be the two renowned and valiant *Sayavedra's*, brothers and branches of that illustrious Stocke, which hath many Ages giuen Owners to the Towne of *Castellar*; who willing with their presence to honour *Cesarina*, thus expressed their valour and themselves; whom when our Challenger sawe, he was not a little doubtful of his Victory: and so hauing done the accustomed reuerence to the Iudges and Ladies, the elder Brother taking the first occasion, began in this manner to him: The opinion, Sir Knight, you hold, I might perhaps with as much iustice on my part maintaine: the forfeit therefore, if I for want of skill chance to lose, shall not onely be barely firming to a Tenet I already approoue, but you shall also gaine this precious Emerald. Though this (replied *Gerardo*) might haue beene excused, yet to animate me to gaine the pledge of such a Knight, I accept willingly the condition; and so the Aduenturer hauing deliuered the rich Emerald in a little Ring to the Iudges, they returned backe, each of them choosing the best Launce he could light on: and *Gerardo* comming to begin the Carreere, parted like winde, running the point of his Launce, vpon the vpper part of the Ring; that though hee tooke it not, it was euen as well; for nothing but taking it could win from him: & so turning to his Tent, from thence he expected the

the successe of his Contrary, who courageously spurred on, but missed his marke; for he strooke so bunglingly vpon the sides of the Ring, that it was as much as nothing. The Conqueror *Gerardo* was nothing sorry for his misfortune, who turning to the Carreere, passed on so happily, that he fairely tooke the Ring, (which hung againe in its place) hee returned againe to his, giuing leaue to the angry Aduenturer (not a little distasted) with new courage to begin the known Carreere; in which, hee also bore the Ring, and passed on most iocund with his good fortune: and perceiuing the Challenger prepare himselfe for the last Course, himselfe did the like, changing both horse and Lance, iust as the skillfull Challenger with his in his third Carreere had re-taken the Ring, the people with confused cries extolling his good fortune: whereupon the other carefully passing his Carreere, saw the Ring also vpon the point of his Launce. The difficultie was, and they were all in an vpror about deciding the Victory: *Gerardo* and his Sticklers alledged, and that iustly, that the first touch (ground of their difference) was not equalled, so long as the Ring remained firme; to which, the two brothers Aduenturers replied: That (howsoeuer (the Ring being vntaken) there could be no losse, and so the victorie was indifferent on both sides, or to make it otherwise, they must at least runne another Course: this and much more was added, but the Iudges vnwilling to haue them grow to further contestation, commanded the Aduenturer to retire, since indeed hee had lost: wherefore the *Senilian* Knight obeyed, confident, that his brother might redeeme his ill fortune, who as angry as a troden Viper, thus said to the Challenger: Beleeue mee, Sir Knight, I know not how heauen grants you so great a victory, defending so vniust a cause, whose vnreasonablenesse mooues me to request you, that we limit the future successe, to one

onely briefe Course, and the reward on my part, if I bee persecuted with my Brothers ill fortune, shall be this swift horse and furniture vpon him : and if victorie be declared on my behalfe, you shall forthwith depart the Lists, forbearing for euer to maintaine so vn-aduised an opinion. Without preiudice to mine honour (said *Gerardo*) I might well deny your demaund : but because your confidence shall not escape without due punishment, I confirme your proposition : and so their Discourse ended, *Gerardo* more warily then before, made choyce of a straight smooth Lance; with which, and on a well-shap't Roane, he ranne his Course, setting forward so gracefully, that the general wishes bespoke him good successe, which by taking the desired Ring, he had. The Aduenturer also performed his Carreere with a good grace, but his ill lucke made him onely touch vpon the vpper part of the Yron lesse cunningly, then his presumption promised, which caused in both the Brothers an equall despight, though they were forced to dissemble it, and the Aduenturer not so much as expecting to be bid alight, of his owne voluntary motion did it, deliuering his braue horse to *Gerardo*, who with a smiling looke, sayd : That the losse of so faire a beast, may make you know in vwhat error you haue hitherto liued, he shall now be mine; onely, you shall please to accept of this other, which I thinke comes not short in goodnesse : which words, and the forsaking his Saddle, made but an instant, to the great admiration of the Spectators, especially the two Brothers, who with ioyfull acknowledgement accepted the noble offer, and ioynly subscribed to the Challengers opinion. By and by, at the broadest part of the place, there entred, discharging of Artillery, a great Castle, founded vpon a high Rock, it was foure-square, with many sightly Turrets, and goodly Barricado's: in the

the Homage Tower, for a Pinnacle and extreme part of Architecture stood the winged Fame, with a Trumpet in her left hand, and in the right, a large Flagge of Cloth of Gold, Tawnie and Carnation, in which were tenne small embroidered Scutcheons, onely one higher and bigger then the rest, with a great Key hanging at it in a golden Siring, the knowne Armes to the loyall Citie of *Gibraltar*: the other nine belonged to the following Restorers of the said Citie. The first on the right hand, was, of the *Mendoza's*, and the next consequently, the *Luduenia's*, *Busto's*, *Castillo's*, *Pinia's*, *Natera's*, *Mesa's*, *Caluo's*, *Benites*. All the Battlements, Turrets, Walles, and Pinnacles, were set and beautified with painted Flagges, and Streamers wauing with the aforesaid Armes, and those of the Crowne likewise, in an embroidered Standerd of Cloth of Gold, and Yellow: some likewise vvere placed vpon the Frame and Mason-worke of the Castles yron Gates. And now the whole Frame by an ingenious Deuice and helpe of those within, began to mooue, and the Artillery ceasing, a bastard Trumpet was heard; at which shrill signall, the Castle and Rocke being now gotten vnder the Iudges window, stayed: and the Artillery beginning to discharge afresh, at the sound, after it, of some wel-tuned Instruments, the shut-Gates flew suddenly open, from whence a draw-Bridge was cast, all couered with Tawnie Damaske, and presently after, a proper comely Youth came marching ouer it in *Cuerpo*, clad in the military Fashion of *Spaine*: his Doublet & Breeches, cloth of Siluer were cut vpon Orenge-color'd Taffeta, with a strong Ierkin of impenetrable Buffe, trimmed with Parchment Gold-lace, Loopes, and Buttons answerable, Stockens, Orenge-colour, Shooes and Garters, white; falling Band, French; and a Bone-lace edging, Flemish: his plume of Feathers, Gold and white, and his Hat

Ermines, to suit in colour with them : his sword hatcht, and Hangers, Siluer : in his right hand he bore a Leading-staffe, representing the militarie Office of a Commander. Thus attended by eight Pages in their glorious Livery also, hee came to the Challengers prefence, and after visuall Ceremonies of courtesie performed, with an audible voyce, that the Iudges, and all present might heare, he vttered the following words : In that famous castle of *Gibraltar* before you, there are nine Knights, descended from her most noble Conquerours, from whom I am sent, to intreat you to be pleased, that vpon the conditions you maintaine, each of them, may runne one only Course with you; which they haue desired, to excuse you from the trouble; not that otherwise running the three would bee any at all to them. Heere *Gerardo*, when the gallant Captaine had ended, with no lesse gracefullnesse made answer : Considering, worthy Captaine, that I am here to no other intent then what you mention, the famous Aduenturers might well haue excused their sending, and your paines, to whom I request you make knowne, that I most willingly obey their commands: and so with a low Reuerence to the Challenger, Iudges, and Ladies, the braue Souldier returned into the Castle, leauing all the Spectators, well pleased with the courtly delivery of his Message: and not long after, (the Artillery discharging afresh) to the sound of Trumpets, and Moorish Hau-bois, a comely Knight came marching ouer the same Bridge, and at the instant, a second Gate opening at the lower part of the Rocke, there sallied out two lusty big-bon'd Slaues, handsomly clad, one of them leading a leere goodly Chest-nut Horse; which the Aduenturer nimble mounted, without setting foot to stirrop. His garment was a long coat, jagged with yellow and Rose-colour'd cloth of Gold, the yellow embroidered with siluer-Twist, and



and the Rose-colour with Gold : his horse Trappings and Caparisons were the same, and a great Plume of Martinets decked as well the Adventurers Hat, as the Horses proud head, ( a gentle winde curling as it vvere their tips into knots : ) vpon his Brest hee bore a Scutcheon or golden Plate , in which were carued the ancient Armes of the *Bustos* , by which hee was knowne to descend from that Noble house , and this *Motto* serued for the Scutcheons Border.

*My valiant Ancestor,  
By conqu'ring Gibraltar, renowne  
Gave it, to him, Victory a Crowne.*

He no sooner approached the Lists , when the Noble Challenger, thinking there needed no further conditions, addressed himselfe to the course , and setting Spurres to the free Beast, droue on like a tempest, and in the midst of the Carreere ( to preuent mens wishes ) bore away the easie Ring ; and returning contentedly to his Tent , stayed to expect the issue of his contraries successe, which, no lesse lucky then his, not a little troubled him ; but the next second Adventurer eased him of his distaste, who hauing the same Colours and Motto , but not the same fortune, onely touched part of the hoope, and in this maner they all ran to the ninth and last Adventurer , whom I would not passe ouer in silence , as vvell in respect of his difference of colours, as the Motto cast about the place. He vvas mounted vpon a Swartie Bay, himselfe clad in Cloth of gold, ground white, cut, and the slashes edged about with gold Lace, set with buttons of fine Rubies in the middest : his Hat was of Taffata pleited and white, with a curious band of Gold Purle embroidered, and in the Rose of it hee wore a preci-



ous Brooch, bordered with small Rubies, his Plumes were Martinets, as also the Horfes, vvhoſe trappings and Capariſons were ſutable of Cloth of Gold and white, variously embroidered with Gold, which ſhewed moſt richly vpon the white; but indeed a colour more proper to ſuch as are affected to ſterne *Mars*, then the tender Infant, *Loue*. By his Armes he was knowne to be the Heroicke *Mendoſa*, and his Motto thus :

*My affections are ſo free,  
That, whilſt thus I live alone,  
None ſhall me (but my ſelfe) owne.*

Hee made ſhew by his Robuſtious preſence, of a vvonderfull ſtrength, which appeared by preſſing the ſaint Beaſt that ſeemed to yeeld vnder the Burden, ſo hee paſſed thorow the ſpacious place; whoſe Spectators (hauing giuen a turne about it) he left moſt gladſomely full of expectation, and drawing neere to the Challengers Tent, vvho attended him, he began the enſuing Diſcourſe :

All my friends and companions (as I vnderſtand) haue runne, each, a Launce with you : but for my ſatisfaction, and that none may thinke my comming hath beene to contradict your iuſt and true opinion, which againſt the conſtancie of women you maintaine; I ſhall (and if you pleaſe) freely ſubſcribe to it before there be a neceſſitie, that (you remaining conquerour) I bee compelled: ſo let mee ſay that not in ieſting paſtime as the preſent, but with ſingle Valour, I will euer make good and maintaine this vvhole ſome vn-erring opinion.

*Gerardo* with notable content, gave care to the determination of the reſolute Knight, and with a cheerefull aſpect, returned him this anſvvve: Securely may you, Sir Knight,

this

this day allow your selfe a promise of Victory, which cannot bee wanting any way to him, that abounds as you doe in the knowledge of the certaine truth I sustaine. I am content to runne a course with you, and to giue you the Conquerors reward. (Which said) bowing his head to him in token of courtesie, hee passed on to the accustomed Carreere, and quickly tooke the Ring; and putting it in the vsuall place, the Aduenturer came on, with such speede and comely grace (as none before him had done the like) and with his Launces point fetcht off the Ring as *Gerardo* had done, whom, in his ioy, for the good successe, hee came to embrace, desiring, that they would fetch him out the Shield, that hee might subscribe to the Challenge; for though he needed not so to haue done, yet *Gerardo* importuned by his entreaties, commanded it to be brought forth, but would not suffer him to firme his name, amongst the rest; so he wrote it close by the Challengers.

Four of the nine Knights had Prizes, (viz.) Jewels, which they bestowed vpon the Dames they there liked best: onely the last Aduenturers was the richest, vvhich, thinking by reason of his cruell opinion, no Dame would receiue from his hand, he desired the Challenger to giue it as from himselfe to the faire *Celia*; who, to satisfie *Gerardo*, accepted of it, at such time, as to the sound of Drumme and Trumpets sempiternall Fame, that appeared from top of the Homage Tower, vnwrapping the flagges golden folds, waued by her powerfull right hand, displaide in the inside these foure Verses set out in golden Letters.

*This day with voice of mettall Fame shall enter,  
These hon'ring Spaines illustrious Families,  
Their names and glorious Acts i' eternalize,  
From the cleere Zenith, to th' obscurer Center.*

And thus the gallant Adventurer withdrawing himselfe into the Castle, with a terrible thunder of great shot, it voided the place: and in the roome twelue goodly Sumpter. Moyles entred, all loaden with straight Greene Reedes, and couered with rich Sumpter Cloathes, which were followed by two and thirty Knights, vvith their Shields and Lances fitted to them, and in the midst, a stately Triumphant Chariot, drawne by sixe spotted Pye-bals, vvith an Arch in the midst of it of most curious Architecture, whereon were artificially set out and carued, the memorable exploits, which at the siege of the famous Citie & frontier of *Xeres* by her Noble conquerours were performed. Amongst which, the no lesse feared then bold enterprize of the courageous *Herrera*, was most eminent, who in one of the rich Arches squares, with a manly presence, stretcht forth his Arme and Dagger, dyed in the Royall bloud of the Barbarian enemy King, slaine in his owne Tent by that inuincible hand. On top and vppermost part of the Arch, hung wauiug to the Aire a great Ensigne of blue Damaske, embroidered with Gold and Pearle, and in the midst a faire Royall Scutcheon, whose Armes in a field white, were the waues of the stormie Sea, anciently proper to the City of *Xeres*: and for Border it had twelue other small Scutcheons, with the famous Armes of the following Gentlemen Inhabitants of the Citie: (viz.) *Herreras*, *Villa vicencios*, *Camachos*, *Ponces de Leon*, *Varga*, *Rendones*, *Galleges*, *Cuenas*, *Anilas*, *Morales*, *Valdespinos*, and *Espindolas*. Vnder the Arch, but immediately ioyn'd to it, there hung a most beautifull white Cloud, which tooke vp in Ouall circle the vvhole breadth of it; from whence a most delightfull sweet Musicke of Sac-buts, Cornets, Viols, Lutes and Harpes, was heard, so acceptable and pleasing to the hearers, as formerly the frightfull noise of the Castle vvvas troublesome; be-  
hinde

hinde the Chariot came twelue Moores of equall stature and proportion; marked and branded in their faces for Slaues, all clad after the Barbarian manner, in long Mantles of white Cotton, Caps of Scarlet, with their crooked Semitars, and Date-colour'd Corduba Buskins, each of which had in his left hand a little silver Scutcheon with his Masters Armes, and led leere also his swift Horse by him, whose Caparisons and Trappings were Damaske, but by reason of the thicke embroderie of Gold, the ground was scarce discerned to bee blue: their Plumes and Skarfes were blue and yellow, which colours were likewise worne by the two and thirty Knights. Beeing all entred into the place: and hauing by two and two in payres most gracefully passed their Carreeres, forgoing their sharp Launces, and diuiding themselves into two Squadrons, they began face to face, and according to their custome, a wel-ordered skirmish with their Reedes, which lasted all the time that the Chariot took vp in passing about the place, so that they of the skirmish hauing also taken a turne and view of the Spectators, returned neere the Chariot to their Stand, where the Musicke againe sent forth a most melodious sound, at which the white Cloud began to open and spread in twelue diff'rent parts, discovering within, a most cleere Turquesse sky, enamell'd with bright radiant Starres, all which shaddowed a rich Throne of five degrees, adorned with straw-coloured Cloth of Gold, and at the Basis that seemed to be massie on the last degree, were set two goodly Images in Bule, curiously framed hand in hand: the one held in her left, a bough of spredding Oake, and on her loftry front, shee wore a Tyara or Coyse, on vvhich this Motto was vvritten:

*Wish.*

*without me there's no Victory,  
Since that in my performance lyes  
All honour, and each glorious Prize.*

This Valorous robustious Dame sufficiently expressed her renowned name, as also shee that accompanied her, with a faire Lawrell-wreathe represented Victory, gilding her happy Temples, with a precious Imperiall Crowne, and about it these ingraued Verfes:

*I equally doe fauour still,  
(As the bold aduent'rous Spirit)  
wisdome for her chiefeft merit.*

In the fourth, third, second and first degree, were seated by three and three the twelue Knights, all richly set out in their colours of Damaske, blue and yellow, imbroidered with Siluer, Gold, and stones of good value (their plumes futable) and each had in his left hand a little streamer of Cloth of Gold with blue, with the Armes of his House, and blazoned with the insuing Motto:

*Victory certaine and secure,  
I promise, we propitious  
Shall haue, since her we bring with vs.*

The three of the first degree, after the sound of Trum-  
pets, Shalmes, and diuers other Instruments, descended  
from the Chariot (their tall Slaues expecting them vvith  
their ready Horfes) on which most gracefully mounted,  
they aduanced towards the Challenger; to whom one of  
them thus said: On the behalfe of these Knights, and others  
in

in the Chariot, as also on mine owne, I request you, Sir Knight; Be pleased, that each Adventurer may runne but his sole course with you: for (besides that the limiting thus the hazzard of victory, which will make your honour, obtaining it, the greater) we shall receiue particular fauour in the courtesie demanded.

With a very good will (said *Gerardo*) I accept it, and the demand indeed is wholly in my fauour, and since you will ease me of so much paines, let vs lose no time. Content, said the Adventurer: when *Gerardo* (leauing him, and passing his Carreere) so happily guided the point of his Launce, that he tooke the Ring: and the Adventurer too performing the like: seuen of the twelue gained Prizes, which they bestowed vpon the faire Dames there present, returning after to the Chariot, vvhither they were welcomed with Musicke, and so they all voided the place.

And as the Chariot went out, there entred in at the same gate, a little vgly Dwarfse Post-like, winding a Horne, vpon a pretty Nagge, with false gallop, which raised a generall laughter in the Spectators, as well in respect (as of his ill-fauourednesse) his worse suted brauerie, vvhich made him shew much more monstrous. In this manner, he rode on to the Challengers Tent, before whom (nimble alighting) he drew out of a Cloth of gold Purse, a Letter, which (hauing kissed it) hee presented with a low obeysance to *Gerardo*; but first in the deliuerie vsed this speech:

Sir Knight, My Master (whom you shall better know by the Contents of this Letter) willed mee (besides the deliuerie of it) to sollicite mine owne quicke dispatch, which I earnestly on my behalse too request of you. You shall haue it, said *Gerardo*, and an answer also if the Letter doe require it; and in so saying, he broke it open, and passing his eyes  
slightly



slightly ouer it, read alowd, that al might heare the Dwarfes's Knight's demand.

*The Castillian Knight, alias fortunate, to thee, Noble: but, unfortunate Gerardo, sends greeting and health, such as thou needest to make good the errour thou maintainest: Know, that (hauing notice of the strange opinion thou holdest; and confident that it is vniust) I haue taken a long iourney in thy search, and am (as iust now) newly alighted at this Townes gates, and desire to weane thee from so desperate a Tenet; and considering that I am for my person disappointed, as well of Inuention, as the Ostentation besitting these Triumphs; I haue thought good to make it my request, that (admitting my forcible excuse, which may serue a stranger) thou be pleased also, that whether I winne or lose, I may freely depart the Lists, without making my selfe knowne, since being but an obscure person, it were more fit to depart with silence, then subscribe a name, whose Owner is of so meane qualitie.*

And hauing read the Letter, not so much as expecting a consent from the Iudges, turning to the Dwarf, hee thus said, Get you to horse, and tell the Knight your Master, that vpon my word and assurance, he may enter vhen hee pleaseth, with all the conditions of his Letter obserued, to which I send no written answer, in respect of the more speedy dispatching of your little selfe. The Dwarf most iocundly spurred on where his Master expected him; and not long after, entred in foure Dwarfs with Trumpets (the Messenger making vp the fourth, and of equall low presence with the rest) and after him eight masked Knights, whose Robes were long Coates of Tawny Veluet, curiously wrought, and set out with little bright Looking-glasses, whose Ouall frames were of masse Siluer, their horses

trappings

trappings and furniture of the same Veluet, with their little Glasses likewise: the Knights Hattes were garnished vvith sutable colour'd Bugles, their owne Plumes, and their horses Tops, were tawny, white, and Carnation. Their Launces had a certaine bright Varnish that made them shew like Icat. Behinde them came nine Dames vpon their white-spotted Palfreies, close masked, and clad in the ancient Roman manner, so rich in different colours, gold and precious stones, that (though that Mountain of Gold, which the vnhappy, yet renowned *Inga Atabalina* offered for his vngranted ranfome, had beene disbursed to array them) it must haue come farre short of their excessiue cost. These Nymphs browes were girt with Diamonds, Rubies, and Emeralds, and their heads stucke with an infinitie of different colour'd Plumes: each of them bare in her hand a neat-wrought, vvell-tuned Instrument, with which (as Viols, Violins, Theorbo, Lute and the like) they accorded in a celestially harmony.

Behinde these nine (the Muses) came a Knight and Lady, both masked, she, as braue and comely, as hee gallant and sprightly. Himselfe vvvas mounted vpon a goodly vvwhite Steed in vvell-placed distances spotted with blacke: The trappings and other furniture, vvve Cloth of Gold Tawnie, imbroidered vvith Siluer in equall spaces from the Looking-glasses, which were somewhat lesse, more curious then the fore-mentioned. The Knight his garment vvvas a close Coat, (but for length exceeding the Challengers:) of the said tawny, embossed with knots and flowers of Siluer wire; in midst of which the little Glasses were set, sending forth a most radiant brightnesse: that (as the Sunne now neere his iourneys end reflected on them) the vvearer by their dazling seemed another second *Phaeton*. The Plumes that adorned his Hat,

Hat, imbroidered with siluer Purle, were white, red, and Tawny, as also the Horses. The gentle Dame had on her a gowne of white Sattin, so thicke and curiously imbroidered, that the white was scarce discerned, and the discouered spaces were almost couered vvith gold Buttons, whose Pyramicall ends were tipped with admirably cut Diamonds, which, in lieu of the Looking-glasses, sent forth a purer sparkling then their Cristall. Her haire was caught and shut vp in a Net of Gold, a Cawle, fastned on her head with a Fillet of the richest Stones. From that well-dressed head too there seemed to grow, some white, greene and blue Feathers, which gaue the more lustre to her smooth and rising forehead. Shee was mounted vpon a white-pyed flea-bitten Mare, which, as neatly paced vnder her, as the Aduenturers lusty Courser proudly praunced vnder him, whose brest wore on a golden Scutcheon, the insuing Motto :

*If with the faith of my Mistris  
My loue may be equalized,  
'Tis the greatest to be prized.*

And the faire Dame cast from her the following Verfes:

*If his firme loue, whom I adore,  
Admit may a comparison,  
I loue with like affection.*

With this graue as glorious Company, they both together gaue a turne about the place: after which, the Aduenturer taking a short leaue of his Mistris, (the Trumpets and Musicke ceasing) went toward the Challenger, and courtously

teously saluting him, thus said : By the many Jewels on that Cup-board, I vvell perceiue, how few the feuerall Aduenturers haue from your valour gained, notwithstanding so good a cause as they had in hand (*The constancie of Ladies.*) This acknowledgement, I suppose, is onely awanting to your selfe, to make you consummately deserue the name of a Victorious Knight; for, otherwise, I repute you worthy all honour and estimation : and therefore let mee request you, (setting your Tether aside) you vould be pleased, that we may runne our three Courses wholly for the honour of Knighthood, vvithout any further Prize. *Gerardo*, whilst the Aduenturer was speaking, stood (as attentive) so, suspitious, that this was not the first time he had beene acquainted vvith that voyce : and in this anxietie hee replied, how happy he should be to receiue his commands; though, if the Aduenturers good lucke vould make him Victor, hee must not but receiue the appointed Prize. And in so saying, he first ran the Course, and in it tooke the Ring; and falling off, left the Carreere to the vnkowne Aduenturer, who passing on like a Flight, roundly tooke the Ring also : and their second lottes in like manner vvere both alike equall. But the ouer-confident Challenger addressing himselfe to the last Course, vvvas not in that so fortunate; for, he onely touched vpon the Circle, and passing on, with no small distaste, aftervvard viewed how his Contrary, like another vvatchfull vvary *Argus*, in midst of his Course tooke the Ring vpon his Launces point, vvith such acclamations and noyse from the whole multitude, that nothing else was to be heard; till such time as Drumme and Trumpets, together vvith the Artillery out of the Castle, vvith hideous thunder declared the Victory of the braue Aduenturer; (whom the Iudges summoning to them) deliuered him vvith exquisite ceremonies the Ring and rich Diamond, as  
the

the iust reward of his dexteritie; which, he no sooner receiued, but (accompanied by his owne Knights, and diuers others enamoured, as it vvere, on his strange vertue) came where his dainty Mistris expected him, and taking the Ring from off his finger, thus proceeded. You might iustly (faire Owner) rest assured, that to do you seruice, I should gaine the honor and Prize of these Triumphs: so that, your selfe now being the most loyall and constant of the Dames and Ladies present, is best vvorthy to honour the valew of it vvith your Lilly-hand. The gracefull Dame was readie with an answer; vvhen by mischance the strings of her Maske slipping loose, made it fall to the ground, and *Gerardo* discouering the faire face before him, might behold no lesse then the liuely Originall of the most beautifull *Amavanta*. It is not possible to expresse his inward ioy, confirming his mindes suspicion, that the Victor was her deate Louer, his vvorthiest friend, the most valiant *Arsenio*, (vvhich being a sufficient comfort to his losse) he went towards him, and taking off the Maske from his face, closely embracing him, said: Why (famous *Arsenio*) and would you be so cruell to me, as to returne vvithout making your selfe knowne, to leaue me by your victory in so great a confusion? Beleeue me, Sir, were it not for the honour I receiue, in hauing beene soiled by you, (vvhich doth temper my distaste) it vvere impossible for you to obtaine a pardon. Maruell not, friend *Gerardo*, said *Arsenio*, at my slacknesse: for still me thinks as I behold you, I cannot perswade my selfe you should be the same *Gerardo*, that tooke leaue of me at *Senik*; nor dare I presume, that hee vvould maintaine so rigorous a Theame against Ladies, as you here haue done. 'Tis very vvell (quoth *Gerardo*) you speake with the freedome, your fortunate stile giues you; all men are not borne vnder your happy Constellation, neither doe all  
line



line so secure, as you in the loyalty of the faire *Amaranta*: to vvhom turning, hee kissed her snowie hand, rendring courtly thanks for the honour shee had done those Festiu-als by her arriuall; and beeing by her discreet language, payed in the same coyne, all three of them entred the sumptuous Tent, iust as the Sunne began now to decline to the West. And the Iudges (knowing all vvas ended) commanded *Gerardo* to retire, (allowing him the glory of the day) and ordering, that the Plate and Iewels should bee taken downe, lest their standings, and (mounted on horsebacke) placed *Gerardo*, and his Victor friend in the midst of them: and in this manner, together vvith all the Knights and Gallants, they gaue a sightly turne about the Place, accompanied vvith an infinite diuersitie of muscall Instruments, that had formerly entred. The Challenger too (though a loser) might heare a thousand ioyfull congratulations, from the confused rumour of the Spectators, and comming to the Standing vvhere the Ladies and Dames were, himselfe with the rest, accompanied them to their Carroches, and so to the Castle: the faire *Nise* carrying with her the beautifull *Amaranta*; each of the two equally emulating the others matchlesse perfections. All the Ad-uenturers vvcre inuited by *Don Antonio* to supper: (which ended) the rewards vvcre to be distributed for the best In-vention, Launce, Motto, and Brauerie: so that (all the Ghests assembled together at the Castle) foure magnificent Tables vvcre spread vvith great ioy and mirth, in the large spacious Hall, vvhere to the sound of loude Musicke, at the first and chiefeest Table sate the Iudges, Stickler, Challenger, and victorious *Arsenio*: at an opposite Table the Ladies and Dames; on the right hand the Aduenturers, and at the left, the last, the rest of the Knights and Gentlemen that had beene onely Spectators. And, hauing all plenti-  
P fully



fully supped, the clothes were taken away, and the Reuels began; in which, many of the Ladies danced with the Knights of the Ring. *Lauro* with his Cousin daunced the Torch-daunce, not without some distaste to the offended Challenger. A strange force it is of that execrable tormentour, Ielousie: *Nise's* most tender expressing her affections, could stirre vp none at all in his vngratefull heart; yet the but seeing her now mooue in a ceremonious Daunce, and onely ciuilly serued by her affectionate kinsman, makes *Gerardo* sensible of distaste, which kindling some little Ielousies, by little and little raised such a blaze in his intrals, that the ruines of his former flames, were quite consumed with these latter. In such ielous fancies *Gerardo* passed a good part of this night; in which (when the Reuels had end) by mutuall consent of the Iudges, two rich Emeralds were bestowed vpon the two gallant *Senilian Sayandra's* brothers, as a reward for the best Inuention. On *Arsenio*, for Brauerie, was bestowed a wel-wrought Chaîne of Gold, with a curious enameled *Harpy* hanging thereat. *Lauro* for the best Motto, had a golden Gilly-flower, whose red, for enamel, was Rubies: which (though hee would gladly they had beene set in his Cousins diuine forehead) he durst not offer, for feare of a repulse; in which hee was not deceiued, considering her dislike of his former boldnesse. Lastly, to the Challenger, as to the best, and gracefullest Launce, was allotted by generall approbation, an equall reward. So that the iust vprightnesse of the Iudges flying amongst the people, the Artillerie from the Towers, Battlements, and Rauelins beganne to thunder; and from the Windowes a pleasing sound of Musicke was heard. And so for this night the Knights returned to their Lodgings. Next day new Solemnities began, by the letting loose some twelue fierce *Tarifa* Bulles; to which many terrible

rible wounds were giuen by the horse-men; some particularly, by the valorous *Leoncio*, whose strong arme prooued the fatall executioner to two of them, by striking the one (a furious beast) into the necke, and so to the fore-legge of his monstrous body. With which, and other successes the Triumphes ended, to *Don Antonio's*, and all the rest of the Gentlemens extraordinary content; who together with the Ladies and Gentlewomen retired home, to their severall dwellings and houses; all, but the valiant *Arsenio*, and his best-beloued *Amaranta*; who, importuned by *Lauro*, *Leoncio*, and *Gerardo*, were forced to some longer stay, which time they spent in the chace of wilde Beasts, with which, the vast Forrest neere *Cesarina* doth plentifully abound. And now those fauours which the tender *Nise* expressed to her *Gerardo*, more euidently increasing, and her loue acknowledging some acceptance from his thankfull brest, to the same height kindled a fire of enuious raging ielousie in *Lauro's* heart. But *Nise* without wrong to her hearts Owner, could take no notice of his griefes, much lesse apply her Cousins remedie; (who all on fire) seldome could the two Louers, so much as exchange a looke, but his eyes would stand Sentinels; which in so tender a subiect as *Nise's* passionate heart, caused no small disquiet, neither had she concealed it, or her distaste from *Lauro*, had not the prudent *Amaranta* perswaded, preuailed with her: for shee was her onely comfortresse in her torment, to whom she would discouer her secrets, her whole selfe. And that they might at present more freely conuerse and communicate their thoughts, (hauing in a cleere calme Euening ioyned hands) they descended to a pleasant Garden; which, beautified with the varietie of Trees, Flowers, and fruitfull Plants, serued as a comely ornament to certaine grated chambers of the Castle, where *Arsenio*, *Leoncio*, and *Gerardo*

were lodged, who from those faire Barre-gilded windowes, (for at that time they were taking the nights fresh ayre) might perceiue how the two sprightly Dames, securely carelesse of a discouerie, were bathing their Alabaster feet in the bubbling Currents of a perpetuall Fountaine, that payed tribute to the neighbouring riuer *Betis*, which *Gerardo* tooke for a subiect of the following Verses and Sonnet, he sung to his Viole, to the great content of his friends, but most, of the surprized Dames.

*Betis ! whilst pretty Philomel doth sing,  
And to thy siluer noyse her treble raise :  
whilst gentle Zephyrus his wings displays,  
'Mongst well-tun'd leaues with whistling murmuring,  
Combe smooth thy Sedge, thy red sands freely sling  
On the Greene banke, that thy o'reflowing staves  
Cast them in golden knots, through all the wayes.  
My Nise treades : when she doth neerer bring  
Her cleaver (then thy Cristall) limbes : chastize  
Thy swifter course, and may no mutinous ayre  
Then blow, but let the streame glide gently by.  
But, draw that Yurie Curtaine from mine eyes :  
Vn-vaile thy Alabaster (Goddesse faire,)  
Though I Actæon, thou, Diana be.*

Scarce had *Nise* heard the accents of her Louers voyce, when with admiration in her selfe, and pleasure in *Amaranta*, they suspended their present discourse, diuerted with the amorous notes, which when *Nise* more distinctly heard, she thought (such was her passion) that she had beene in a dreame; yet little dream't, that she was become the subiect of *Gerardo's* affection; who sung not so low; neither so warily, but that the Eçcho of his voice reached the listening

*Lauro's* cares: to whom a very small matter was sufficient to raise him from his bed; and getting to one of his chambers Grates, which directly vnder *Gerardo's* Bay-window, looked into the Garden, he might plainly heare those amorous expressions: and hereupon, confirmed in his suspicions, he fell into such a furious passion, that had not the violence of it broke into some short-winded sighes, hee might haue happely beene stifled in his owne sorrow. His tender groanes being (as so neere them) by *Gerardo* heard, his old experience of such Corrosiues made him ghesse at the cause of them; and therefore he retired, together with his brother and friend to bed, fearing, lest if the gracious *Nise* should by mis-chance, vse the least speech to them, some inconuenience might ensue, in respect of the ielous *Lauro*, who seeing the two Dames, that had also espied him, retire, did the like, but both parties with different effects: for he, out of the distraction of his thoughts, could take no rest; but the other two well satisfied in their loues, slept quietly all the rest of that night. And not many after, *Nise* and her Louer obtained a priuate meeting; which wel they might, whilst *Lauro* was in bed, and then (no doubt) these two affections mutually disposed, the blind-god would produce his vsuall effects: incouraging the one, and cowardizing the other: so that *Nise* became subiect to her Louer, who with his new and momentarie delight, esteemed himselfe possesst of a Treasure of more valew then the double *Indies*.

But, *Lauro*, how hast thou beene to thy deare preiudice so carelesse? how hast thou laid vp this inestimable Jewell, reserued for thee onely? who durst beare the sad tidings to thy soule? None, but thine owne heart; nor could that heart but mis-giuingly presage: for, doubtlesse considering the two Louers warinesse, impossible it was to be cer-

taine of their amorous stolne meetings, more then by the presumptions of a ielous brest. And now to *Lauri's* eyes his cousins faire face was become vgly and monstrous, his loue turned strangely to strong hate, and his former good will into reuengefull wifhes; the successe of which he forthwith began to contriue, and thinking that the bloodiest reuenge he could take of the abhorred *Nise*, was to remooue *Gerardo* from her sight, he began instantly to deuise how he might compasse his death.

'Twas now some time, that *Arsenio* & *Amaranta* had bin absent from their city and home, and some friends of theirs earnestly sollicitied their returne, which made them carefull (though sorry) to take leaue of those Gentlemen. *Gerardo* with *Nise's* consent, (much to her soules sorrow) in respect of his obligation to the departing couple, was necessarily to accompany them, & *Leoncio* in that respect could do no lesse. The noble *Cesarinian* brothers would willingly haue pleaded the stay of the other two; but considering their resolution, were forced to giue way, only inioyned them to a speedy returne. To expresse *Nise's* sorrow were needlesse, or rather ouer-difficult, since neither her *Gerardo's* loyall promises, nor the faire *Amaranta's* vowes to her to hasten him, could affoord her the least comfort or content: besides, his passing afterward the limited time of returne, bredden small torment in her; so that her tender grieve vnable to support this excesse of her Louer, and withall fearing lest some disaſter might haue beſalne him, ſhee reſolued (treading downe all inconueniencies of honour) to declare her grieve to a *Barbarian*, a Slaue, in whom (as hauing had his breeding in her Fathers house) ſhe had good confidence; and withall giuing him ſome rewards in preſent, and promiſing him for his ſecreſie, more; ſhe diſpatcht him to *Gerardo* with a Letter. The Slaue willing to obey his yong  
Miſtris,



Mistress, made good speed, arriuing at *Senill* and *Arseño's* house in few houres, where hee found *Gerardo* in his *Amaranta's* pleasing company, to whom hee deliuered the Letter, which *Gerardo* receiued with inward ioy, though (happely) his Mistresses hazzarding businesse of so great consequence, did somewhat lessen that (vvhich might haue otherwise been excessiue) content. But seeing there was no remedy, he must set a good face vpon the matter; so, commanding the Messenger to rest himselfe, opening the Letter, he might view the insuing Lines.

*Not the feare that your promise can euer bee defectiue, is the cause that thus, to mine honours hazzard, I commit this Letters important secrecie to some one a bearer: onely I haue hereunto bene moued, by the infinit desire I haue that these weary eyes may see you, which shall neuer yet be weary of shedding teares for your absence, till your retorne dry them (my lifes sole remedy) to keepe it from sad torment.* N I S E,

A thousand times ouer, kissed *Gerardo* the passionate Paper, and as oft had he read it, had not the sighes which loue made him offer as a sacrifice for his delay, kept him in some suspence: and so, loth (by further stay to adde new difficulties,) he briefly dispatcht the Messenger, telling him by word of mouth (besides a short Letter hee gaue him for *Nise*) that himselfe would that following night be vpon his way.

At this time the offended *Lauro* slept not, whose angry and reuengefull thoughts increased more and more still fiercely vpon him: so that his minde brooking no longer delayes, he resolued to put a bloody purpose in execution: which was, To kill *Gerardo* ere he departed *Senill*, (the fittest place for the accomplishing such a designe.)



And so taking a lusty tall seruant (on whom hee much relyed) along with him, without making either of his Vn-  
kles priuy to their iourney, they tooke their way towards  
the mentioned Citie; whither *Lauro's* auerse Fate permit-  
ted him not to arriue; for that very night as hee rode on  
(carelesse of the mortall disaster) discoursing with his ser-  
uant, touching the vehement suspicions he had of his Cou-  
sin) and also their bloody purpose vpon *Gerardo*; before  
they had passed on halfe their way, the Slaue that iocund  
and merry, was returning with *Nise's* Letter met them,  
(who knowne by *Lauro*, but *Lauro* knowing nothing of his  
short absence) somewhat troubled at it, began to demand  
angrily of him the cause of his iourney; which bred no  
small amazement in the quaking Slaue (as beeing so sud-  
denly surprized.)

But another more desperat accident interrupted the pre-  
sent Inquisition; for they were set vpon by foure fugitiue  
Soldiers, who (stolne frō their Regiment, bound with the  
*West-Indian* fleet) with their charged Muskets robbed all  
Passengers they met with; which clapping now to *Lauro*  
and his Companies brests, they demanded withall their  
Purses. The vnfortunate *Lauro* fared worst of the three,  
for standing to his defence, they shot him thorow the bo-  
dy with a brace of Bullets; and falling from his Horse, in  
great fury, they dispatcht him with their Swords, to the  
seruant and Slaues no small sorrow; though seeing their  
owne danger, and how vnable they were to reuenge his  
death, they thought best to shift for their owne liues, (that  
the bloody Theeues might not ouertake them) neither  
durst they returne to *Cesarina* with the newes, each of them  
iustly fearing his owne danger, for hauing so coward-like  
forsaken their slaine Master: wherefore they thought it sa-  
fest to get vp into the Country, as farre from *Cesarina*, as  
possi-

possibly they could: whither (as now) *Gerardo* was vpon his way, neither could hee at this time haue thought that he was euer vnfortunate, since Heauen so miraculously pleased to free him from a two-fold danger: for hee had been sure (comming alone as he did vvithout his brothers company, vvho for some priuate respects stay'd behinde him) either to haue perished by the iealous *Laur's* hand, or beene murdered by those bloody Homicides, vvho busie about the wretched *Laur's* spoyles (hauing retired his body out of the high-way into the Thicket) gaue meanes to *Gerardo* that night to conelude his short iourney, and arriue by Sunne-rising at *Cesarina*, where (alighted) he was told, that not three houres before, the two Brothers were ridden abroad, to kill a huge wilde Boare, that was said to haue beene seene grazing not farre off to the Countries great detriment.

This newes much gladded him, that he might now with the more freedome enjoy the company of his soft Mistris: and so he went towards her Chamber, where (though it were but early) he found her not: and asking more carefully of her, one of her Maids told him she was in the Garden, to vvhich way he instantly hasting, might see how amongst the Flowers, she was with her white hand framing a pretty painted wouen garland of Myrtles, Gilly-flowers, and different Violets, and in the *interim* hee might heare some Contents of her solitarie thoughts, expressed by her melodious Voice, in this short Ode:

*Thou Rust and knot-wreathing Snake,*

*Nature allows,*

*Thy barren Spouse,*

*And both embraces close to take.*

*And thou high Elme; thou and the Vine,*

*In Hymens rite,  
 Ioy day and night,  
 And inter-lacing kisses ioyne.  
 So may you liue, and flourish still,  
 Free from curst Hynde,  
 From fiercest winde,  
 Thou, on the grasse; Thou, on the Hill.  
 As you by such sweet sympathies,  
 Examples prone,  
 For him to loue,  
 That (thanklesse) my embraces flies.*

The Ditty ended, Heauen forbid (suddenly surprizing her, said *Gerardo*) that my firme affection receiue so hard an attribute. What Art-full Pensill could here set out to the life the countenance of the ouer-ioyed *Nise*, expressing a world of gladfomenesse, when the wisht accents of her Lovers voice, toucht in her rauisht eares (so that fearelesse of all danger to be espied) she ranne, and with open Armes threw her selfe vpon his necke, crying out, If for so tedious and grieuous a neglect, I should take the reuenge on thee that thou deseruest, these Armes, (that as bonds) now enfold thee, might iustly retire from so close an embrace: but so fearefull am I of thy crying quits in another kinde, that, to giue thee lesse freedome, (then I feare in this absence thou hast had) I am forced to locke thee in with these Armes.

Trust me, deare Owner of my life, said *Gerardo*, I had rather be still so imprison'd, then by loosing of those Armes, inioy my lesse esteemed liberty: and since from my neglect so great a glory proceedes, what iustice haue you to call me yet neglectfull? This onely vvas wanting to my misfortune (said *Nise*) that from my fauours thou takest occasi-

on to torment me. *Gerardo*, at this and other amorous discourses smiling, led her by the hand, and going to the privatest part of the Castle, after they had discussed together (not without some misdoubt) of the Slaues long stay, as well as of *Lauro's* vnexpected absence, (taking leaue of her ruddy lips) hee betooke himsele to his Chamber, where resting after his weary iourney the greatest part of that day, the two following nights he passed in the embraces of his sole loued Mistris; till such time as her Father and Vnkle were returned, for then their delights were lesse secure.

The two Noble Brothers were much gladdened with *Gerardo's* returne, though *Leoncio's* stay behinde did something lessen that ioy in *Don Henrique's* brest, which vvas still gratefull, so long as *Lauro's* death was concealed. But not passing ten dayes after, a Messenger was purposely dispatched from the Gouvernour of *Corduba*, to *Don Antonio*, to let him know, that a Slaue of his was there in hold, flying (as seemed) his Masters anger, and that for the suspition they had of him in respect of the iron markes in his face, they thought fit to stay him. The newes much pleased the Brothers, though *Gerardo* and *Nise*, for the secrecie of their affaires, would rather he had neuer bin heard off. *Don Antonio* (sensible of his Slaues losse) instantly sent one for him; and the very same day came the newes of his Nephewes death, which (to his soules grieve) made him extremely passionate. It was knowne, by a Letter brought him from *Lauro's* servant, who remained in a Village of Portugall, called *Moras*, the sad Contents were these:

*Though the sad and certaine sorrow you shall receiue, might  
hauē excus'd these Lines, yet the lone of a dutifull seruāt to his  
deceased Master, hath more preuailed with me; so farre, as to  
giue you an account of your deare Lauro, whose reuenge hath  
moued*

moued me to let you know the vehement suspition I haue of his  
*Murderers*, in this Village of *Mora* in Portugall, from whence  
 I write, and whither I addrest my selfe the same night that  
 my Master and I were absent from *Cesarina*, hauing left him  
 slain in the crosse-way neere the Pits by *Mare-Woods*, where  
 foure men set vpon vs, and so, distressed, I and your Slaue were  
 forced to saue our selues by flying; your Slaue, who was happily  
 then present, that so bloody a crime might not escape without  
 punishment. You shall vnderstand, Sir, that the intent of our  
 iourney (though the succeſſe were contrary) was, to haue slaine  
 Gerardo, the cause sufficient to engage my Master, your daugh-  
 ters honour: which, the said Gerardo sought by illicite affection  
 to deprive her of; from whence and vndoubtedly I collect, that,  
 he, ghesing at my Masters thoughts, by way of anticipation  
 meant to strike first. And this doth the more confirme my suspi-  
 tion; for that the next morning, at Scuill, I vnderstood from  
 Leoncio, that ouer-night his Brother had departed towards  
 Cesarina, where, if at present hee bee; you may by legall in-  
 quisition sift out these, more certaine then fained probabilities.

Scarce had *Don Antenio* read these last lines, when, his  
 couragious brest vnable to support such a waight of sorrow,  
 he remained sencelesse, and letting the Paper drop, fixt his  
 sad eyes vpon it, with such shewes and signes of inward  
 Torment, as caused no lesse in the pittifull *Don Henrique*  
 (none else by) who, fearing his Brother might fall into some  
 helpless agony, stepping to him, and taking him by the  
 hand, so dealt with him, that he called backe his remem-  
 brance (though the wofull accident made him speake no-  
 thing but groanes:) (which perceiued by *Don Henrique*)  
 himselfe was almost brought to that heauy passe. For be-  
 sides that the deceased *Lauro* was esteemed as sole sonne,  
 and wholly heire of both, the suspition of *Nise's* dishonour,  
 did



did more aggravate the ones rage, and increase the others sorrow. But the latter (accustomed to such brunts, and, reason mitigating his passion) began more temperately to treat with his Brother, touching these affaires (which caried with all secrecie) they mutually agreed, that *Gerardo* should be apprehended, and that, speedily, before hee might haue notice of their purpose: which, to the poore Gentlemans admiration, was suddenly effected; by taking him at vna-wares in his Chamber; and from thence he was conueyed to the strong Tower, with which hee had beene formerly acquainted; and (leauing two trusty seruants for his Lay-lors) with three or foure others, they rode to *Mare-woods*, where neere the fore-mentioned Pits, they found the vnhappy *Lauro's* body; but, so swolne, disfigured and putrified; that as well in this respect, as also that (the flesh being naked, it was in many parts eaten and deuoured by vvilde beasts) they doubted whether it were the same they looked for: till looking more narrowly vpon the corps, it was knowne to those that passionately bewailed the Owner, by a certaine marke it had, which parted the left side of the beard. So, without more adoe, wrapping the body in a blacke Herse, they returned backe to *Cesarina*, where, when *Gerardo's* secret imprisonment was knowne, the whole town was in an vproare, especially the grieved *Nise's* trouble was incomparably the greatest; when, comming to the Tower to speake with him, the carefull Warders hindered her, and withall said, they were chiefly charged to deny her entrance: which made her thinke all was betraid vnto her Father and Vnkle; whose rigour, for her offence, shee began not without cause to feare: yet, loue to *Gerardo* animating her tender heart, gaue her valour to expect for his sake a thousand deaths, resolved to die rather with him for company, then for any living respect to forsake him. (a de-

termination)



termination in woman brauely Masculine, if in the performance the vsuall variable condition of her sexe had not intermeddled.)

*Gerardo* in this extremitie stood vndaunted, for ( innocent of *Lauro's* death ) for any other ground of his imprisonment he reioyced; that, by his danger *Nise* might know his affection, and at how low a rate in respect of that he valued life. (The two Vnkles arriuing about midnight with their Nephewes bodie) the two sad Louers vvith the frightfull newes, gaue respite to their wandring imaginations, and *Gerardo* was now openly pronounced the bloody homicide, who (innocent) seemed not to be much sensible of his imprisonment, saue, of the vvrong those Gentlemen did him, to diuulge him the Murderer throughout all *Andalusia*, vvanting proofes for it; vvhereas, indeed, in all equiry (considering the Lawes of friendship, & his former wrongfull imprisonment) they ought now to haue proceeded with more reall iustification. This not a little troubled him, though, neither from *Don Antonio*, or his Brother, he could receiue the least satisfaction, vvho onely sought to satisfie themselves with his bloud; and, so, hauing speedily caused *Lauro's* body to be interred, they dispatcht a Messenger to the Village of *Mora*, for the seruant that wrote the Letter; and another to *Corduba*, for the Slaue (deferring in the meane time a more important diligence.) These things were not so seuerely carried, but that vvithin three dayes *Leoncio* had notice of his Brothers danger: whereupon, accompanied vvith some of his kinsmen and friends, he tooke Posts for *Cesarina*; *Arsenio* onely, absent then from *Senill*, came not; or rather an vnluckie chance, as disastrous as the present of *Gerardo*, kept him behinde; the which, before the end of this first parts last Tragicall discourse, we shal onely, to auoid prolixitie touch at.

*Leoncio* and his friends as soone as they came to *Cesarina*, alighted at the first Inne they met with not holding it safe to accept of the Castle offered by the two Brothers vnto them: from whom *Leoncio* vnderstood the cause of his Brothers imprisonment, without any mention of *Nise*, vvhich more for infamy then vncertainty was pretermitted.

*Leoncio* vvas inwardly glad to consider how weake proofes they had against his brother: but this he kept secret; and rather, in words and gesture expressed great shewes of grievance, vrging how ill they had complied with their loues to his Brother and him, since, so slightly, onely with a Letter and bare presumption from one that in more likelihood might be guilty, they had moued the poise of their iudgement. To this he added more reasons, so bitter and full of indignation (as made *Don Antonio* ready to haue clapped him vp with his Brother) which had they done, all had bene marred, considering how vvell *Leoncio* and his friends came provided; so, *Don Antonio* comming neere vnto him, said; Looke you, Signior *Leoncio*, if your Brothers imprisonment so much distaste you: thinke you my Nephewes bloody murder as much grieues not vs? The truth ought to be sifted out; neither take I your selfe to bee so cleere, as to speake so freely in so weighty a cause. *Gerardo* is your Brother, and vvho knowes whether his intents were made knowne or not to you? and therefore rest contented; for hitherto there hath been no indirect proceeding: and perhaps what may seeme but slight and triuiall to you, may ere long put you to your Pecke of Troubles.

More vvould the passionate Gentleman haue said, and worse had hee bene answered, but that *Don Henrique*, lesse blinded vvith choller, & that more esteemed of *Leoncio* for his friend, preuented them by stepping betweene.

And *Leoncio*, without further stay, went to his lodging, where

(where thorowly conferring touching the busines vvith his friends) the vpsnot was, that according to custome in matters of consequence, they should petition to the great and feared Tribunall of *Iliberis*, to haue the cause and tryall remooued thither, ( assured that if the iustice of it were left to *Don Antonio's* arbitrement, it would haue but a disastrous issue) since he being absolute Lord ouer such as hee might name for Iudges in *Cesarina*, they would doe nothing but what he should direct them in. The aduice seemed good to all, and was quickly put in execution (*Gerardo* first appealing from his vniust imprisonment, and some necessarie diligences vsed after in that High Court of Chancerie ) hee was by order of those supreme Iudges sent for thither. In the meane while, he that went for the Slaue was returned; and hauing brought him in sure hold, as soone as hee was come into *Don Antonio's* presence, not once expecting to be demanded the cause of his flight, falling prostrate at his Masters feet, and desiring his eare in priuate, he plainly deliuered as much as he knew of *Nise's* secret affection, and of the Letter committed to his trust for *Gerardo*: ( an Act fit for so base a creature, and worthy to light heavy on her, that would commit so important a secret to a Slaues brest.)

Here *Don Antonio* seeing how impossible it was that his dishonour should now any longer be concealed, like a Tormented Bull roared out alowde his hard misfortunes: his Brother also suspecting the worst, grew almost to as badde plight: & *Nise* no sooner heard of the Slaues arriual, but, fearfull of the danger, & forgetting her amorous resolution suddenly fled from her Fathers house, taking Sanctuary at a Nunnery (which had in former times beene founded by her Ancestors) from whence she gaue notice to the angry old man, of the Change; who, now with extremitie of sad-

nesse

ness had no sence of feeling left of his disgraceful troubles. But since their Causser was in his power, the certainty of his Revenge did a little reuine him, which was also increased by the coming of *Laura's* seruant, whose declaration taken, agreed iust with the presumptions of his former Letter: and though by the Slaues deposition there were a plaine difference & contradiction between them (since the one said he left *Gerardo* in *Seuil*; and the other, that hee appeared to haue beene one of the Homicides) yet the businesse had danger enough to haue daunted the most couragious heart.

On the other side, *Gerardo's* ill successe in his loue quite stained his reputation, branding him with the breach of faith and friendship: yet such errors, not viterly vnardonable, might haue admitted some discharge. Many wayes our vnfortunate Prisoner assay'd to know *Nise's* determinate will, in whom, as his lifes comfortresse, hee had fixed the remedy of his present mis-fortunes, thinking the vpshot of all must be, to take her as his own & happy coniugall companion. But his enemies looked so narrowly to him, that it was not possible for any Letter of his to this effect to come to *Nise's* hands: for *Don Antonio* aymed wholly at his life; so that, as well himselfe in person, as also, by his meanes, the Nunnes laboured his daughter, that in any case, she should deny to haue had other then a lawfull acquaintance vvith *Gerardo*, aduertizing her, that hee was infallibly to die; so that should she say otherwise (besides loosing him) her honour vvould be ruinously lost; and other matters to this purpose; which (sometimes gently, other-whiles rigorously proposed) were sufficient to reduce her minde to her sterne Fathers will, and to make her forget that immense affection, with which of late she had resolved to dye for her *Gerardo*. But *Nise* made no new book of her variable inconstancie,

Q

which

which incident to the whole sex, little needs he to wonder at these changes that shall marke their end. Thus *Nise*, before, determined to suffer thousands of deaths for her Louer (cutting now the thred of her firme intent) ten onely dayes absence of imprisonment, and a few poore threats, alter her mind, conforming it (against *Gerardo*) to her Father and Vnkles pleasure.

This new and sudden change (as bad newes is vvont) came last of all to *Gerardo's* care, causing within him so raw an operation, that the past Tragedies of his former dead Loues, were nothing in respect of this, and but as small additions to this last great Torment. In the heat of these affaires, the valiant *Leoneio* returned againe to *Cesarina*, and his Brothers presence; whom, by his afflictions strangely metamorphosed, he scarce knew: but hauing in fine giuen him the best comfort hee might, on the other side he required *Don Antonio* by vertue of a Scedule Royall, that his Brother might be deliuered vp for the famous Citie of *Iliberis*, which (to his griefe) he was forced to obey, & the Prisoner was with a strong Guard conueyed as the businesse and *Gerardo's* person well needed, who now somewhat well cheered with his Brothers presence, provided himselfe for *Iliberis*; and straight hee was vpon his way, turning for euer (in his determined thoughts) his backe to *Cesarina*.

About mid-day (growing too extreme hot to passe further to any Towne) comming to a pleasant flowery Valley (that lying vnder certaine huge Rockes, made the greene seate more delightfull) by generall consent they chose that fresh coole place to giue their wearied bodies some refreshment: and so alighting, whilst their Horses grazed, caused their dinner prouisions to be taken from off a great Sumpter-Moyles back, that was their Cup-boord,  
and



and having also the flower-enameled field for their Table-Cloth, and the transparent streames of the neere running Brooke for their Bason (downe they sate, and with much content fell to their victuals :) which also was so much the more by the addition of a cleere Voices sweete accents, which in midst of Dinner they might distinctly heare to the sound of a Rebecke in the following Song.

*At the foote of a Mountaine white  
Clad all in snow,  
That doth melt with the Sunne-beames bright,  
Celio as in a Dreame,  
Beholdeth how the streame,  
Drives to and fro.  
Little Pibbles, white, red and blue,  
then doth he see,  
And presented are to his view,  
Sands like Arabian Gold,  
Neere which he may behold,  
Apollo's Tree.  
In stead of Fishes, Nayades  
In Cristall vailes,  
Lift up their heads from those fresh Seas,  
with diff'rent garlands crown'd,  
Sad Cygnus swimming round,  
His losse bewayles.  
Young Hyacinthus groweth neere:  
Adonis too,  
Acanthus the Boy doth appeare,  
In a flow'r of his name,  
Narcissus lost his fame,  
That scorn'd to woo.*



*The Thracian Minstrell riseth then,  
 His Harpe he brings,  
 That attracts birds, beasts, fishes, men:  
 With the sweet sound he cheares,  
 The listning Shepherds eares,  
 And thus he sings:*

*Fenissa the faire now is come,  
 (Swaine) weepe no more:  
 With little foot of Snow,  
 She trips it to and fro  
 On grassie shore.*

*Come then Fenissa faire Fenissa come,  
 Come to the shade,  
 By coole leanes made.*

*Sing, Celio: Valley, make Fenissa roome,  
 And let Echo ring,  
 Shee's the Valleys Spring:  
 Fenissa come.*

With this Song all were stricke silent, and leaving both victuals and discourse, gaue vvilling attention. And *Gerardo*, vvho in the midst of his troubles kept euer a good memorie, forgot not his old friend *Celio*, as soone as hee might know him by his vvoyce, yet, see him he could not, by reason of a winding thicket, through which his eye could hardly reach to the gentle Shepherd: so, one of the company, to do *Gerardo* seruice, rose vp and meant to seek & bring *Celio* to him; vvhen by chance hauing heard *Gerardo* name him, he soon came out of the thicket, vvither, to enioy the coole shade, he was gotten, and leading a Nymph as beautifull of face, as himselfe comely of person; drawing now neere, and to his no small admiration, knowing the Prisoner *Gerardo*, he ranne to him, and vvith open armes (his eyes

eyes shedding teares for so long absence) imbraced him, that with no lesse passion welcommed the others approach; and forcing the good Shepherd to sit next vnto him, recounted the vvhole Story of his late last misfortunes; which he closed vp with some sighes; to which *Celio* and his Shepherdesse prooued the Eccho's in their answer. To her, *Gerardo* applying himselfe, thus said, By your lovely presence and some part of my friends Ditty, I suppose, faire Mistris, you are the shrine, to vvhose Deitie *Celio* hath deuoted all his affections; the which (time was) I knew to be otherwise employed, when his thoughts and mine were then equall: but as the vvitchcraft of a paire of blacke quicke eyes, wrought a change in me, that ought by sad experience to haue beene more wary; what vvonder, if my friend, taught by no experience nor rigour of Fortune, should suffer vanquishment from so rare a subiect? That onely, noble *Gerardo*, (said *Celio*, before the willing Shepherdesse could reply) excuseth me, and satisfies for the breach of single life. I am onely sorry, that I had not long since bestowed my whole life vpon *Fenissa's* seruice; vvwhose sweet presence (after a tedious absence) hath, as this day descended hither, to giue new life, shadow, colour, to these Plants, Valley, and Flowers. Shall I still be angry, my *Celio*, replied the smiling Shepherdesse, at your offending flattery? For, there beeing so many witnesses here present of my meane parts, how dare you extol them so, or rather, mocke me with such fawning attributes? Rather, said *Gerardo*, with all *Celio* can say, he must come short: in which, and other pleasing discourse, (time drawing neere, and the Sunnes heate slackning) they made ready to take horse: so all tooke leaue, and *Gerardo* was very much pleased with *Celio's* happy encounter; taking it as a presage of good successe, though a tragicall accident that befell the valiant *Arsenio*, changed this

this mirth into a mournfulnesse, equall to that for his owne misfortunes: for as soon as he was entred into the *Liberian* prison; he found *Arsenio* there for his companion. The cause of his apprehension was not much different (as being bloody) from his, yet the effects were quite contrary: since, to the charge of our vnhappy *Gerardo*, the death of one onely person was wrongfully laid, but the killing of three in single combate were sufficiently prooued against the other. Actes (had they beene in warre) worthy Lawrell, as now like to produce some exemplary punishment: such actes, as were they not somewhat too aberring from the promised breuitie of our neere ending Histories first Part, might afford a curious eye no lesse pleasing then profitable entertainment. With *Arsenio's* discreet loued company, *Gerardo* was by little and little diuerted from his sorrowfull fancies, and began to thinke vpon some needfull course for his liberty; though had not high Heauen now (as at other times) mooued with his innocence, deliuered him from danger, his life had beene viterly lost: for, some fine moneths after *Gerardo* had thus beene Prisoner, by a secret and vn-expected chance, *Lauro's* murderers were in fine happily discovered.

So it was, that the fore-mentioned Souldiers you read of, roaming vp and downe in their bloody exercise, vvere, vpon some slight presumptions, laid hold of in a certaine little Towne of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia's*, where (being put to the Racke) they not onely confessed the fact, for which they stood accused, but diuers thefts, robberies, and murders, as amongst others, *Lauro's* death; and another equall in execution, though in the manner and performance more hainously beast-like, the father hauing prooued the Filicide of his owne sonne; the father, vwho was named *Don Iohn Ponce*, a *Tartarian* Gentleman; in my opinion, one  
of

of the most barbarously cruell actes it was, that either in *Spain*, or else-where in any Age euer truly happened, as well in respect of the beginning and moriue, as that the principall authour and actor in it, was (as is said) the father: and the rarity of it vwill not let me passe it ouer in silence, but set it downe as succinctly as I can to a tittle, according to the true Relation given; vvhich, to ensuing times, and perpetuall memory, shall bee imprinted in these last Leaues of my blacke Lines, as followeth:

There liues in the City of *Tartesia* a vviddow Dame, called *Fabia*, whom, Heauen in her younger yeeres, endued with more beauty, vertue, and goodnesse, then goods of fortune, or noblenesse of blood and birth. To her, one of the prime Gallants of that Citty made court; vvhose amorous thoughts vvere soone by her perceiued, and so discreetly auoided, that she neuer so much as tooke the least notice of them; till time and his importuning presents, vvhich by vnexpected vwayes still came to her hands, made her shew her selfe somewhat lesse coy, though neuer the more coming; yet he obtained with much ado, some speech with her from a vwindow, but farre off, and small hopes of enioying his ends and her; only a litle to dis-oblige her selfe, she afforded him that poore content of speech, vvhich neuerthelesse was not carried vvith the secrecie it ought: for, coming to an Aunts notice of hers, she vvvas by her Aunt so roughly reprehended, that hauing out of her anger learn't a vvarning, she from that time forward shut her Window against her burning Louer. But his flame the more increased, by how much his desire to see her, and her vigilancie not to see him, was augmented. Loues eyes are like piercing *Lynxes*; and so, *Fabia's* care vvvas lost, since her Louer would not lose his seeing her, but like a diligent Sentinel, was al-

waies vvaking : and one time amongst others, viewing, how his faire Mistris , carelesse of a surprizall , vvas set at the street doore, laying hold on the blessed opportunitie, hee came neere, and began to lay such effectuell amorous reasons before her, that she had neither the power to turne her backe, nor obstinacie to stop her cares ; and so gaue a way to his Loues enchantment, to vndermine her constant purpose. But hearing his discourse tend wholly to complaints of her vnkindnesse, not willing that he should proceed, she abruptly thus cuts him off: The fauour, Signior, you doe me, extending beyond the limits of ordinary courtesie, enforceth me to desire your forbearance; and (for I haue often told you my will cannot conforme it selfe with yours) mee thinkes it might satisfie you: since it so much concernes my honour, and no reason is it, that he, who pretends hee loues me, should striue to bereaue me of that, which (once lost) is neuer to be restored. My Parents are about to bestow me, and I am willing to obey them , by vndergoing that estate which they hold fitting for me. And since my birth hath made me too vnequally meane for your deserts, that in this respect I can be no lawfull recompence to your desires, I most humbly beseech you to forget me , and cast your eyes vpon some nobler subiect, that for blood may deserue that, of which my lownesse hath made mee an vnderferuer. Here, inflam'd with ielousie, the resolu'd Gentleman replyed: So cruell a Treatie; to me so preiudiciall, loued *Fatis*, shall not proceed, if I can helpe it, neither wil I longer deferre the remedie that lies in mine owne hand, which I forthwith giue, and a firme promise to be your husband; and that you may be the better assured, these foure seruants, with Heauen and me, shall be your witnesses : and this sayd, without expecting the least answer from her, that, overcome with sudden ioy, could hardly haue giuen it, hee  
gaue



gaue a call to his seruants; and before them, turning to his *Fabia*, (whom he saw with the vnlook't for accident, turned into blushing crimson) prosecuting his intent, hee said, Deare Mistris, why are you thus silent, or deferre that I, which I expect from your sweet lippes? I say once more, nay, a thousand times, but, a short once for all, *I am your Husband*: of which, Heauen and these shall bee my witnesses; giue me then that white hand, with which, and in it, I shall enioy more happinesse then in the worlds Treasure. And so ceasing, he gaue way, that the modest *Fabia* might with lesse trouble frame this ioyfull answer: Wonder not, deare Signior, that a fauour so aboue my dastard thoughts, should thus amaze me; your offer I most truly esteeme of, and must, by being your Spouse, receiue with you my sole happines: & so, ioyning hands they embraced, remaining alike linked in the vnion of their affections, whose effects were that very night accomplished, to the no smal content of *Don Iohn*, that onely at parting desired *Fabia* to conceale and content her self with his promise, till such time as their marriage might be effected without distaste to his friends and kindred: to which she easily condescended, as willing in all things to satisfie him like an obedient wife. With this warie secrecie the Louers held on in their priuate meetings, till such time as *Fabia* grew to be with child, and her Gallant (without all feare of heauen) to a treaty of marriage with a dainty Dame and neere Kinswoman of his, which in short time without *Fabia's* notice was effected. But what hand may rule my weary Pen, if I should goe about to set downe the mocked *Fabia's* grieffe? What tongue would without faltring expresse her soules immense sorrow, as soone as she heard the bitter newes of his faiths breach, that was her onely Owner? 'Twere to take fresh breath, to begin a new Tragedy: may her teares and sighes then rest in  
the



the Readers consideration; which, as abundant and continuall, so, hard they were to be concealed from her parents; to whom, as her womanish feare would permit her, she discovered the state shee was in, of being two moneths pregnant; they accompanying in her mournfull discomfort, sought rather wisely to marry her, then by impossible pleas more to defame her: And therefore without many delaies married her to a person of their ranke, but one that had good meanes: with whom (her defect one way, and excessive another, vn-noted) shee passed for a maid; and some eight moneths after, was deliuered (as legitimate) of a lustie Boy; and so quickly with the Infants pleasing company, she blotted out of her mind the abhorred remembrance of the true periur'd Father.

Some ten yeeres, vvere expired after the child's birth, in all which time, iust Heauen blessed not the vngratefull *Don John* with any issue, to his no small grieffe: for that one of his brothers, whom he deadly hated, was necessarily to succeed him in the Estate. And now quite desperate of any fruite by his wife, he proposed to himselfe the Boy hee had by *Fabia* for his heire: and hereupon not content to haue most trecherously wronged her, but trusting to wealth and friends, insensible of the poore *Fabia's* disgrace, hee sought by Law to recouer his sonne; and to this purpose petitioned to an ordinary Iudge; who, for admitting so scandalous a demand, deserued an extraordinary punishment. And so, his seruants bringing in witnesse of the close meetings that were betweene them, as also of the iust computation and time of her deliuerie, by sentence of Law the Iudge disposed him that loued the Boy as his owne, and adiudged him to be restored to the periur'd, false, yet true Father. With the affront done him, *Fabia's* poore husband fell into a desperate sicknesse, and soone after died: so she, poore soule,  
remai-

remained without honour, sonne or husband, such are the cruell effects of an virelenting proceeding.

The wicked Sire was now most iocund in his new sonne, called likewise *Don Iohn*, and causing him to bee most tenderly cockered and brought vp: but the Boyes owne good inclination to all vertuous qualities, made him in few yeeres grow to that towardlinesse, that hee was generally beloued, and so highly commended, that euen in his owne father it begat enuie. For the step-Dame there needes nought bee said, since their hatred and malice is their generall inheritance: yet the prudent *Don Iohn* as discreetly boare his mother-in-lawes ill-will, as from so tender yeeres might bee expected; neither did hee in all the plenty and fortune of his new Estate, shew the least forgetfulnessse of his old habitation, where euery day once at least, his owne poore Mother was by him seene and serued; but his father and step-mother so much stomacked this, that they wholly repented them of chaiming him; and next, making little or no reckening of him, withdrew all manner of allowance either to sustaine, or clothe him: whereupon the young Gentleman was forced to sue them (according to *Spaines* custome) for meanes; which, by sentence were allotted him, to the value of seuen hundred Crownes to bee annually payed him. But, the vertuous youth considering his mothers wants needed more reliefe then his owne, was content to part with his annuity to her; which done, he went with a kinsman of his fathers, that dearely loued him, to the City of *Lisborne*, where that party was prouided of a place of good credit in the Kings Gallies. There *Don Iohn* in his kinsmans company liued happily enough, till, vnderstanding by Letters from his mother, how hardly his cruell father proceeded in the payment of her monies, his duty hastening him, hee returned  
thither.

thither. Well knew he that begat him, the cause of his so suddaine arriuall, neither did his wife ignore it; who, like a curst step-Dame, desired nothing more then the poore young mans ruine, which was soone after effected: for her diuellish intent finding sufficient admittance to her husbands dis-affection, was made knowne, and finding in him no lesse desire of his sonnes riddance, they both resolved, and the future Filicide, parted with this bloody purpose toward the great City of *Senil*, where he might without any difficulty, finde choice of murderers to dispatch his onely sonne. And so hauing by chance lighted on the foure fore-mentioned Rogues, agreeing with them to kill him for two hundred Crownes; of which, fiftie were to be payed in earnest: they returned backe together, and entered that night *Tartesia*, where the diuellish father, informed of the sonnes being in his mothers house, instructed them for the manner of his dispatch; and so, leading them on to the vnfitting sacrifice and house, thus sayd, That before is the doore, there's no more to bee done, but one of you knocke, aske for *Don Iohn*; and as hee comes out, the rest may so deale with him, that he may saue himselfe a reuenge, and giue mee satisfaction. There wanted not, by Heauens providence, some one to ouer-heare these last words, and witnesse against this accursed Iudge, that pronounced so sharpe a decree vpon his owne blood: and this was a poore old woman, who, not dreaming of any such accident, stood as then at a close Lattice-window, from whence she might also view, how, that hauing (as they were instructed) asked for the innocent Youth, iust as he came out of his mothers house, they gaue him his deaths wound. But he died not very soone after, which bred no smal distemper in his trecherous father, as fearing, his wound was not mortall enough, or belike, his pleasure done,

done, he repented him of the fact; but from hence he tooke occasion to pay with some twenty Crownes ouer-plus, the inhumane murderers; telling them, he agreed for his sonnes death, which they had not effected, but onely giuen him some slight hurts, for which they had already receiued sufficient recompence. There wanted no replies from the impatient men, who now repented them they had not first slaine him by the way. But seeing how much it concerned them all to be secret, cursing his base proceeding, the next day they left *Tartesia*. The wofull *Fabia* euen distracted with her sonnes danger, informed by the said old woman, of the truth of what she before more then halfe suspected, accompanied with some of her neighbours, (a raging mother) she ranne and cast her selfe at the Gouvernours feet, (a noble and vpright Gentleman) calling out for vengeance, requiring with her dolorous clamours, Iustice; and with her teares and wringing, prouoking Heaven it selfe to pittie. Scarce had the cruell father notice of her sorrow, the peoples curses, and his sonnes danger, when, all in a cold sweat and frightening feare, the offence gnawing his conscience, without more adoo he withdrew himselfe to a Monastery, whereby without further proofes, himselfe declared himselfe to be the guilty actor. And therefore the seuerer Gouvernour caused him to be taken forcibly out, and consulted earnestly with the Iudge his Assistant, for the manner of his punishment. About this time *Don Iohn* ended his vnhappy life. Now the father being wondrous rich, and powerfully allyed, was able to stop and coole a little the Gouvernours feruent proceeding. For by Order from the Inquisition, (by reason of the cessation from diuine Service, till the Sanctuary man were brought backe againe to the Monastery) it was commanded he should be restored.

In the beginning of this businessse, he thought fit for some respects,

respects, to conceale a certaine quantitie of Monies and Jewels he had to the value of thirty thousand Crownes, which he committed (as to safe custodie) to his Brothers: but the present trouble having consumed most of his meanes, made him rely now vpon the rest of that wealth, and to this purpose demanded his owne of his Brothers: by whom (as Heauen iustly ordained) he was not onely forsaken, but laughed to scorne for so ridiculous a demaund, they vtterly denying to haue receiued so much as a denier from him; which, in the wearie worne Gentleman, bred such a sudden passion of choller and disdaine, that his vitall spirits stifled with the venime of his rage, made him fall flat dead before the Spectators; astonish't with the fearefull accident, which is euer incident to those that giue so bad an account of their liues. And with his death I thinke it fit, clozing vp this bloody Story, to returne towards the end of our present Narration.

I told you, how vpon the Racke the Souldiers confessed *Lauro's* death, which computed with the time, place, and occasion, was true, and *Gerardo* falsely accused: so that, the businesse thorowly sifted by the Court of Iustice, to the singular content of his brother and friends, *Gerardo* was to be freed. His enemies no lesse tooke on, who on one side were ashamed of their blind proceeding; yet on the other, sensible that the honour of a daughter and Neece, was now left to the wide worlds arbitrement, they resolu'd, that *Don Antonio*, contrary to his former purpose, should demaund Iustice for the wrong done to his house, and that the forgotten *Nise* should require performance of marriage, which, indeed *Gerardo* neuer so much as promised, though she affirmed, that vpon such securitie, she had deliuered vp her person vnto him. *Leoncio* was much troubled with this new demand against his Brother; who, determining to die  
a thou-

a thousand deaths, rather then admit of *Nise's* loath'd embraces, resolued with himselfe to remaine a perpetuall prisoner, before he vvould be chained, and indissolubly tyed to the irkesome captiuity of an vnconstant vvoman; and his vnmooued purpose knowne to her father and friends, hee was by them strangely persecuted, though in all his troubles, his valour no one iot declined from his first settled resolution.

But 'tis now high time to giue some rest to the continuall labour of my pen and spirits, till other successes in *Gerardo*, for a second Part of this Worke, may giue a lofty subiect to my quill, and new matter to the world, for example and instruction from *Gerardo's* misfortunes. 'Mongst which, those of his friends *Fernando* and *Don Iayme*, shall be of no little variety to the Reader, nor of lesse admiration, the recouerie of one of the most essentiall Actors in this great Tragedy, whose sad Obsequies (though erroneously) *Gerardo* in the end of this first Parts second Discourse, bedewed with mournfull teares.

*The end of the first Part.*

THE



The following is a list of the names of the persons who have been elected to the office of Justice of the Peace for the year 1900, in the several townships of the County of Cook, Illinois, at the election held on the 1st day of November, 1900.

Township	Name
Adams	John A. Smith
Algonquin	James H. Jones
Arlington	William B. Brown
Aurora	Charles E. White
Barrington	Robert L. Green
Bellevue	Thomas M. Black
Blue Island	George F. Gray
Brookfield	Henry C. Hall
Calumet	Franklin D. King
Chicago	Edward G. Lewis
Chicopee	Joseph H. Clark
Chillicothe	Samuel J. Adams
Channahon	David K. Miller
Channahon	John W. Taylor
Channahon	Richard P. Scott
Channahon	William H. Green
Channahon	Charles A. White
Channahon	Robert E. Black
Channahon	Thomas L. Gray
Channahon	James M. Hall
Channahon	George N. King
Channahon	Henry O. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin P. Clark
Channahon	Samuel Q. Adams
Channahon	David R. Miller
Channahon	John S. Taylor
Channahon	Richard T. Scott
Channahon	William U. Green
Channahon	Charles V. White
Channahon	Robert W. Black
Channahon	Thomas X. Gray
Channahon	James Y. Hall
Channahon	George Z. King
Channahon	Henry A. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin B. Clark
Channahon	Samuel C. Adams
Channahon	David D. Miller
Channahon	John E. Taylor
Channahon	Richard F. Scott
Channahon	William G. Green
Channahon	Charles H. White
Channahon	Robert I. Black
Channahon	Thomas J. Gray
Channahon	James K. Hall
Channahon	George L. King
Channahon	Henry M. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin N. Clark
Channahon	Samuel O. Adams
Channahon	David P. Miller
Channahon	John Q. Taylor
Channahon	Richard R. Scott
Channahon	William S. Green
Channahon	Charles T. White
Channahon	Robert U. Black
Channahon	Thomas V. Gray
Channahon	James W. Hall
Channahon	George X. King
Channahon	Henry Y. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin Z. Clark
Channahon	Samuel A. Adams
Channahon	David B. Miller
Channahon	John C. Taylor
Channahon	Richard D. Scott
Channahon	William E. Green
Channahon	Charles F. White
Channahon	Robert G. Black
Channahon	Thomas H. Gray
Channahon	James I. Hall
Channahon	George J. King
Channahon	Henry K. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin L. Clark
Channahon	Samuel M. Adams
Channahon	David N. Miller
Channahon	John O. Taylor
Channahon	Richard P. Scott
Channahon	William Q. Green
Channahon	Charles R. White
Channahon	Robert S. Black
Channahon	Thomas T. Gray
Channahon	James V. Hall
Channahon	George W. King
Channahon	Henry X. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin Y. Clark
Channahon	Samuel Z. Adams
Channahon	David A. Miller
Channahon	John B. Taylor
Channahon	Richard C. Scott
Channahon	William D. Green
Channahon	Charles E. White
Channahon	Robert F. Black
Channahon	Thomas G. Gray
Channahon	James H. Hall
Channahon	George I. King
Channahon	Henry J. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin K. Clark
Channahon	Samuel L. Adams
Channahon	David M. Miller
Channahon	John N. Taylor
Channahon	Richard O. Scott
Channahon	William P. Green
Channahon	Charles Q. White
Channahon	Robert R. Black
Channahon	Thomas S. Gray
Channahon	James T. Hall
Channahon	George U. King
Channahon	Henry V. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin W. Clark
Channahon	Samuel X. Adams
Channahon	David Y. Miller
Channahon	John Z. Taylor
Channahon	Richard A. Scott
Channahon	William B. Green
Channahon	Charles C. White
Channahon	Robert D. Black
Channahon	Thomas E. Gray
Channahon	James F. Hall
Channahon	George G. King
Channahon	Henry H. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin I. Clark
Channahon	Samuel J. Adams
Channahon	David K. Miller
Channahon	John L. Taylor
Channahon	Richard M. Scott
Channahon	William N. Green
Channahon	Charles O. White
Channahon	Robert P. Black
Channahon	Thomas Q. Gray
Channahon	James R. Hall
Channahon	George S. King
Channahon	Henry T. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin U. Clark
Channahon	Samuel V. Adams
Channahon	David W. Miller
Channahon	John X. Taylor
Channahon	Richard Y. Scott
Channahon	William Z. Green
Channahon	Charles A. White
Channahon	Robert B. Black
Channahon	Thomas C. Gray
Channahon	James D. Hall
Channahon	George E. King
Channahon	Henry F. Lewis
Channahon	Franklin G. Clark
Channahon	Samuel H. Adams
Channahon	David I. Miller
Channahon	John J. Taylor
Channahon	Richard K. Scott
Channahon	William L. Green
Channahon	Charles M. White
Channahon	Robert N. Black
Channahon	Thomas O. Gray
Channahon	James P. Hall
Channahon	



THE SECOND PART  
OF  
GERARDO.  
THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD:

*The first Discourse.*

*As a poore Barke distrest by waues and winde,  
When this grows angry, and the Seas goe high,  
No ease, nor safety, (rudely tost) can finde  
( By Compasse steere she ne're so cunningly)  
But needs must suffer in a double kinde  
By Aire, if she the helpe of sayles apply  
By raking Seas, if vp those helpes she binde:  
So (an vnheedy Vessell) doe I line*

R

*Rest-*

*Restlesse, neere shipwracke, since, I ne're was well,  
Till I (a-fresh) had launcht into the Maine,  
Where, whatso'e'r resistance my Barke gave,  
From the white frob I mount, then fall againe;  
Then rise, then tumble downe as low as Hell.*



O the Viols sound, and his owne harmonious Voice, the Spanish *Gerardo* diuerted the memory of his past misfortunes, and the affliction of his present imprisonment. And at this present, the Sunne newly peeping into those close dungeons, a man long tossed as it were in the Gulfe of his libertie, by each vnfortunate waue, was now at length cast vpon the prison of *Ilberis*. The eccho of his clinking shackles (the first steppe euer into that miserable Mansion) drew *Gerardo* to a window; from whence beholding the new-come Ghest, and well pleased with his manly presence (which is still a strangers best Letter of re-commendation) hee curst in his mind the Tyrannous Officers that brought him within the Gates. From thence he was led farther on, to a little Wicket, where the Hammer striking there, signified by that strange custome, that their Prisoner was apprehended for resisting the Constable. I shall not neede to de-cypher this kinde of dumbe Language frequent in Prisons, since being so, no man may wonder at the same. Many who now went by the names of old soakers were now gotten round about the new Prisoner, from whom *Gerardo* had no smal adoo to get him out of their fingers; yet at length they gaue vway, and respected him as their Ancient: who tooke the party by the hand, and led him aside with him to certaine spacious entries, where, perceiuing he was quite disheartened,

encou-

encouraging him the best hee could, hee vsed this Phrase vnto him:

All these fellows you see here, about, and in yonder little Court, not farre from vs, lye in Prison for farre greater offences then yours, and yet make no difficulty of fauour from the Iudges; Be of good cheere then, and assured, that if the matter of your imprisonment be of no greater importance then a resistance, your deliury may be speedier then you are aware of. Somewhat lesse afflicted, though still pen-satiue, the sorrowfull young man interrupted *Gerardo*, saying, If that were onely the occasion which hath brought mee now to your acquaintance, I acknowledge (and thankfully) I should haue beene most happy in such company, (happen what might.) But woe is me, Noble Sir, that now lose my liberty, when I most need it: would Heauen had pleased, that my base enemies weapons had first ended my abhorred life. More had he said, and more amazed *Gerardo*, had he not beene preuented then, by one that clapping him with his hand vpon the shoulder, as if they had beene old acquaintance, said, What, are you here Sir? astonishing the poore Prisoner with this kinde of demaund: vvhovvith some admiration, yet answered him in his own strain, You may be sure I am here, if you see me; though the question had been more proper, if I had voluntarily come hither. To this, vvithout more pawse, the party added, I know indeed you are heere for a resistance, and therefore might haue saued a labour of asking: but if that bee all, Laugh at it, Peace, Giue me money and I'll free you instantly: The Notary is my Friend, and the Iudge my Gossip, wee are all in all.

No sooner had hee ended, when another Youth of his owne ranke and profession cut him off from further speaking; vvho without any respect to the by-standers, looking

scurviily vpon the th'other, and plucking him by the Cloake, proceeded; 'Twere fitter, Goodman you---: you vould let alone my Prisoners, and meddle vvith your owne, since you know (according to our agreement) this Gallant belongs to me. I marry (quoth his opposite) if it were matter of accident, but the case is altered here, for this Gentleman is an especiall friend of mine, and no man ought to haue interest in him but my selfe. So they grew (to the Prisoners no small admiration) to some words, and from thence to blowes, biting and banging each other in such pitifull sort, that in a trice, there was neither Hat, Cloake, nor Ruffe, that (partly trod vnder foote, or wholly rent to fitters) acted not a part in the *Tragi-Comedy*.

The noise, Peace-makers, and skirmish, as pleasant as well performed, might haue ouer-madded a modest man, and burst him with as outrageous a laughter as it drew from *Gerardo*; vvhich vould haue beene farre greater, had not his long being vsed to these kinde of bickerings, deprived him of the nouelty. Hee had scene a hundreth of them, and now thought best to retire vvith the innocent party, which they did into his Chamber: leaving the others and their owne vvearinesse to be their best Vmpires; yet there vv ere some Prisoners vvho tooke no little paines to part them (each threatning with a criminall accusation his Contrary) and so after the short spurt of passe-time they departed. I shall onely (touching these fellowes) giue the Reader a briebe *Item*, as first; That their stile is no other then, *Prison Droones*, their practise meerely to cheate, in which they are so cunning, that no sooner is a poore Prisoner entred, but they haue his name, his Birth, Offence, Notary, Iudge, and what not? Vvhereupon, with this strange phrase of, *Are ye here? Laugh at it, Giue me money, I'll free you*: by little and little they sucke the poore Nouices dry with such their

Sweet

sweet and fauourie language : and then vanishing out of sight, they see them no more, till (happely) their friends or kindred, effecting their liberties, they then draw neere, and tell them that by their care and diligence they haue beene freed; but, if they chance to lye longer, they straight alledge, that the Notary was not well pleased, or the Iudge ill informed, still, by one means or other, wringing iuice out of very Rocks, and so, escape and laugh at the wretches they haue thus betray'd. They deserue not so much as the names of *Sollicitors*, but meerely the former title; and may this suffice, to see the extremitie to which poore Prisoners many wayes are subiect.

The desire *Gerardo* had to cheere vp his new Ghest, made him preuent dinner time, by prouiding it the sooner; to which (together with part of his lodging) hauing inuited him, & he with more acknowledgement of gratitude then presumption, accepted the courteous offer, they satisfied their hungry necessitie: and afterward *Gerardo*, hauing as vvell by intreaties, as gifts, preuailed with the Iaylor, that they might remaine together, diuided with him his owne Bed, and affoorded him all his best comfort. In this manner they remained some dayes, in one of vvhich, as their priuacy gaue fittest occasion, *Gerardo* desiring to know the cause of his *Camerad's* imprisonment, earnestly intreated him to communicate it to him, furthering his wish, by giuing the other, first a Summary Relation of his owne mishaps, and for vpsshot of all, making knowne his name and quality vnto him: but without these respects, his owne merit had wonne so much from the Prisoners affection, that lesse entreaties might haue sufficed to grant so friendly a request; and therefore without more adoo gladly condescending to his friends will, a gentle sigh only (the Auant-courrier to his truth) he began:



'Tis now iust fixe moneths since I left the Citie of *Corduba*, my native soyle, where, by the name of *Leandro*, I am knowne, as by a reasonable good Estate the Inheritance my Father there left mee: the forsaking my Countrey was caused thus: The Young fry and Gallants of our Cities quarter where I liued, did vsually after Masse resort to certaine Portals and Seates in our Parish, to discourse; in which wee most commonly limited the power and actions of the Great *Turke*, the Forces of the *Hungarian*, vwith the seuerall states of *Italy* and *Low Countries*: nothing vvas amisse, wherein we might censure and gouerne the whole World according to our fancies. But one time amongst others, a different Card prooued Trumpe, and (obuius enough to our youthfull conditions) the conuersation grew hot, about the chiefeest beauties of our Spanish Dames, each vsurping to himselfe the priority of place, which might most suite to his owne aduantage. Some said, the *Granadianians* were extraordinarie faire, but these were by others contradicted, who to the *Toledanians* gaue the Superlatiue, as well for beauty and feature, as sharpnesse of wit and discretion; others there wanted not, that, to make good a partie, would preferre the carelesse quicke sprightfulnesse of our Court Dames before all. This was the more generall opinion, and yet another not much inferiour, of the *Sevilians*, whose naturall and sweet browne complexions, set out by their curious neatnesse, made no sinall adoe for absolute deciding of the Controuerisie; which was ended by one, that in all our opinions, was thought to haue the best Iudgement, most modesty, and stayed aduisednesse in his conuersation, who offering to speake, forced vs all to silence, with the following Discourse.

What neede you weary your selues with vaine contradictions, or mee, who know, that all the perfection and beau-

beauty in the world liues within twelue Leagues of this place not in any great Citie, but in a small Village of *Andalusia*, called *Ofuna*. There liues the rarest Creature this day in *Spaine*, in which happy situation (not so much as knowne to the towne-dwellers, her warinesse with her Husbands ieaiousie, equall to her beauty) this miracle is inclosed. He that will satisfie his owne minde, let him see her, and then he shall perceiue withall, how short my tongue comes of her praise, and then my truth shall preuaile, to bring him out of a former error.

The Speaker, had hee not beene in so good a Predicament amongst vs, wee should (doubtlesse) all haue contradicted, and laughed at his exorbitancy: but the credit hee had gotten, and his seldome growing to such height of exaggeration, sufficiently ynder-propped his reputation. Wherefore, some, bending their browes, others, re-questioning him touching the rare Piece, wee made it parting-time, cutting the thred of our pleasing conuersation: My selfe went to dinner, and after would haue lyen downe to sleepe away some part of that afternoone, when vnexpectedly to keepe me waking, my memory suggested to me the afore said Controuersie (a desire stealingly diuing into my heart to see that woman;) and this in such extremixie, that, though I purposely diuerted my selfe; yet, as often as I went about to doe so, so often the nouelty of the matter, and my friends endecrement set vpon mee. But not willing to bee thus vanquished (though all wauering & pensatiue) I curbed my desires, and strooke the failes of their vnbridled course: which resistance yet spurred mee so much the faster, so that in fine now wholly impatient, and fully resolved and bent vpon the mad enterprize, I first settled my house, and being thorowly informed of this Dame, & her parts, putting two thousand Crownes in Gold in my Purse, betooke my selfe

to a lone journey: for though I had seruants at command, the secrecie with which I disposed my affaires, would not admit of any.

That night I arriued at the place, and having taken a Chamber, after I had a while rested, I called the Oast of the house to mee, and warily endeououred to know from him, who, in all the Towne, was of greatest Authorite, best Life, and most Reputation; which (first reckoning vp diuers persons) at last he resolved to bestow vpon the Vicar, and all the Attributes that might be proposed; insomuch, that the election falling out pat for my purpose, and the tedious night over-past, taking a seasonable time, I departed from my lodging to the aforesaid parties house, where I found Master Vicar in his blacke Damaske Gown, with an *Indian* Cane, that serued him for a Walking-staffe, passing to and fro in the Court before his doore. As hee saw mee come neere, he began to make a Stand, and I, not once asking whether he were the partie I sought (in respect of the Relation and signes giuen) courteously saluted him, and drawing a Letter out of my Pocket, framed for the purpose, with the outside all collied, deliuered it to him, the superscription directed to himselfe, he desired me to bee couered, and withall demanded from whence the Letter was. I told him from *Nona Hispania*: so, he, without more adoe opened it, that, I might heare him reade these Contents:

*Since my arrinall from Seuill to these parts, I haue written diuers Letters vnto you, but as yet receiued no answer of any; and although so great forgetfulnesse might cause a want in my due correspondence, yet the desire I haue still to serue you, must more preuaile with me: and therefore with the present occasion offered, I am willing to craue a continuance of the fauours which I haue heretofore receiued from you, and doe recommend*

*my sonne Leandro the bearer to you; with request, that hee may be admitted in that Vniuersitie, till such time as I shall arrive at home, which shall be (God willing) with the next Fleet : This sole kindeesse shall supply the want and your slacknesse in not answering my Letters : and so God keepe you.*

Yours, DIEGO TAVIRIA.

In reading these short Lines, he could not but (with the doubtfull admiration of what he beheld) shew some change of countenance and behaviour; sometimes writhing his mouth, then vvrinkling his forehead, now putting his finger to his nose, straight clapping himselfe vpon the pate, and scratching his noddle, till finally shrinking vp his shoulders, and goggling his eyes, he concluded, saying, Doubtlesse, Signior, you are mistaken; for though this Letter bee directed in the superscription to me, and that there bee no other of my name in the towne, I must freely confesse, that I neither haue now, nor euer had, any correspondence from those remote parts, much lesse any the least acquaintance with your father: but setting this aside, if in any thing I may stead you, I shall be most willing to doe it, out of the desire I haue to performe all good offices to strangers. With this, my honest Priest was silent, and I falling now into my Stratageme, made answer: Troth, Signior, 'tis strange, my father should bee so mistaken, I was in good hope you had beene the party. The truth is, my father for some particular motiues, pleased to send mee before his owne departure for *Spain*, and (knowing, as he said, of your abode in this Village) with order to be wholly directed by you, deliuered me two thousand Crownes in Gold, vvhich I haue here: now though your selfe bee not the party to whom I was recommended, the satisfaction I haue of your woorth, doth oblige me to request you, to take the money  
into.

into your custodie, onely deliuering me at times what I shall stand in need of for my occasions: for out of the desire I haue to obey my father, I am resolu'd howsoeuer, to expect him in this place. Scarce had I made an end of these last words, vwhen my Vicar falling into a suddennesse of admiring clamour, and giuing himselfe a good thumpe on the brest, said to me, I cry thee mercie, good Youth, and pray thee pardon my forgetfulnesse; for now (with the reflexion of my memory) I fall into thy fathers remembrance: He? why, he vvas one of the onely most intimate friends I had, and sole companion in my youthfull dayes. Tell me, Lad, is he not very old now? who did he marrie? how many brothers are there of you? Honest, honest *Taniria*! who would haue thought, to see a sonne of thine so tall and wel growne? Truly, *Leandro*, thou maist thinke thy selfe happy, in that Heauen was pleased to giue thee so worthy a father; as, to me, the best friend that euer I had. Well, till hee come, here you shall be, and haue such lodgng and respect as befits our friendship: let me otherwise know, vwhat manner of admission is desired in the Letter, that accordingly, his will and your conuenience may be effected. Obserue here, noble *Gerardo*, what doubts and difficulties this golden baite in an instant remooued from the old Vicar. Well did I ghesse before-hand what my intent would come to, and therefore the nouekie, which to another might haue seemed strange, bred no admiration at all in me. I went on with my plot then, and courteously thankfull to his kind offer, deliuered him (taking first a Bill of his hand for the receipt, to secure me from his couetousnesse) the two thousand Crownes; and reseruing onely such a quantitie as I thought fit, aduertized him also, that hauing beene reasonably trained vp in the Ciuill and Canon Lawes, I desired much to better my knowledge, by being Clerke to some Lawyer in  
that



that Towne, till such time as my father should arrive. My purpose much pleased him, and with his approbation, I went to hearken after some one vvhom I might best like, and with him to make my agreement. You must suppose, Signior, this Machine wanted not foundation, and no lesse then fully suting to my purpose: for the Dames husband that brought me to *Oswina*, (though none of the best or richest) vvas one of the Lawyers that liued there, newly married, and hauing a faire vvife, extremely vvarie and ielous of her honestie; so that quickly you shall perceiue, the planting my selfe by any kind of meanes there, vvas not the least important steppe to my enterprize, vvvhich vvas well furthered, by some little learning I had of both Lawes, vvvhich to my parents their great reioycing, in my younger daies I studied; who purposed to haue directed my life to such Courses, as by their death and my new inheritance prooued frustrate. At length (informed thorowly of my Lawyers house) thither vvent I, where I found him busily turning ouer *Bartolus* and *Baldus*, drawing and framing certaine Petitions: I saluted him: he vvilled me to sit downe, taking me (it should seeme) for some Client that needed his aduice: so hee demanded vvhat my businesse vvas; to vvvhich, I, vvith a well-premeditated discourse, made him this answer: Signior, I was borne (so please you) in *Noua Hispania*, though my parents were of these parts, and this *Andaluzia*, by vvvhom I am particularly sent to this Vniuersitie, till such time as they shall land in *Spaine*, to exercise my selfe in the Studie of the Lawes, vvvhich course I began not long ago in the citie of *Mexico*. And that this their desire might obtaine some reasonable effect, they thought fit to remit it, and me withall, to Master Vicar of this Place, vvvhich vvvhom they professe so strict a league of auncient friendship, that I may indeed better giue it the title of alliance. Hee knowing their pleasure,



sure, and my purpose, hath made particular election of your selfe, your vertue, learning, and house for the accomplishment; so great is his satisfaction of you, neither were not I (as I say) limited to his opinion in this point, should I for my part seeke any further for my owne benefit. (This presupposed) I shall esteeme my selfe most happie, to be not onely instructed, but much profited also by you. And if there be no precise cause to hinder it, I beseech you, let me be admitted into your Company, till such time as my father arrive; in which, I will not onely endeavour to vndergo some part of the burden of your continuall businesse, but will also obey you as a seruant, without any recompence more then your good instruction; rather, you shall haue monethly of me thirtie Crownes, to further your paines in the performance: for which, I will give such satisfaction and securitie as you shall please to demand. All this I huddled vp as speedily as I could deliuer, vnto him; not willing to giue him the least time of pause to consider of it, for feare of the worst. To which (after some little suspence, turning his eyes to me, and doubtlesse the profit considered which came in so easily to him) hee thus answered: Though (forewarned by many vnluckie accidents) I haue a long time made choice rather of living alone, (though discomfortiously) then ill-accompanied; yet your honest presence, and mine owne wish, that Master Vicar should prooue no liar in my commendation, doe leuell all difficulties with me: and therefore you may presently settle your selfe in my house; giuing first securitie (as is fitting) for the promise and offer you haue made. You shall haue (quoth I) the best you can desire; and so without more words (verie iocund) hee tooke his Cloke, and (heauen knowes if fearefull to lose the good bargain) hand in hand wee went to the Vicars house; who spying me, came out to welcome

vs, saying, To know your sure election, 'tis sufficient, that I behold the person vvho accompanies you, on vvhom you may safely rely for your best aduancement, vvhich exceedingly glads me, on your father my best friend his behalfe. To this vve both returned our thanks, onely my Lawyer proposed the security for my person, vvhich was yet wanting. To which, the good Priest replied what I could wish, extolling my fathers abilitie, and my meanes; so much, as if we had beene all daies of our liues familiarly acquainted; and clozed vp his speech with this: That he would trust me with all his wealth, and if need were, instantly deposite a thousand or two of Crownes for me.

Much lesse would haue secured the hungry Lawyer, who thinking he had now discovered the riches of *Pern* (the ioyfullest man aliue) taking our leaves, he brought mee home to his house with him; and there hee caused to bee chalked out, as it were, for me, a certain miserable Cabbin on top of the Staire-case going towards his owne Chamber, and causing as wretched a Bed to bee brought in, I placed it to mine owne best liking, contented with any thing, in hope of effecting my desire. I cannot describe to you, how ioyfull a man now I was, thinking that the greatest part of my journey was past: for certainly it may well be thought, that had not hope of gaine vanquished mine Oast, it were impossible for mee to haue gotten so much as ouer his threshold.

And now for my diet, faring as I would haue done at mine owne home, I endeoured all I could, to make much of my Lawyer, not eating a bitte, of which he had not (in a manner) the one halfe: our meat was dressed by a wench of some doozen yeeres of age, the onely creature his ielousie would allow him for a seruant. For other things, in my apparell, as in my behauiour, I was meane and simple, and  
alwaies

alwaies most of all vvarie in my lookes or questions: with these, I by little and little gained vpon my Masters affection and austere condition, and so liued many daies most conformably with him. In all the time, I was so farre from seeing her that had thus transformed me, that I could not so much as heare the least treading or motion, to make me thinke there was a creature more then the two-mentioned in that enchanted house. Oh, how often (full of confusion) doubted I of the credit of my absent friends relation! how often with a scalding sigh my heart resolved to breake that silence, by mounting the few Staires, vvhhen suddenly an amorous feare of marring the vvhole enterprize, turned mee backe againe like a Coward to my Chamber; vvhether framing complaints against her I knew not, and louing one, whom mine eies neuer saw, sometimes I grew into deepe Melancholy; otherwhiles better pleased, I expected the Sundaies approach, by vvhich time my Mistris beeing necessarily to goe to Masse, could no longer be concealed? But the expected day, as it came, so it vanished, leauing me no more comfort, then sight of her; and to remaine still in my doubt with greater torment: so to frame new fancies and *Chymara's* to my thoughts. Yet the next Holy-day before Sun-rising, being vvatchful, (mine cares spurred, as it were, and my senses broad waking) I might heare some persons stalking before my Chamber doore; vvhich paces, seeming to me by the sound and noise to bee of *Chapins*, so altered me, that naked as I was, I leap't out of my bed, and opened the doore, but so vnluckily, that I could but onely get a sight of my Mistris, vvith her backe turned as shee went past me. Here I was quite transported, and had (doubtles) laid hold on her Mantle, had not her husband accompanied her: what, I could then make ghesse at, was, a gallant and sprightly personage, whereby somewhat more heartened

ned and warned to be more watchfull against another opportunity, I began to dresse mee, (my comfort now more and more increasing from that happie minute) I began to promise my selfe some good effect out of the increase of his loue to me, which was stillfed and augmented by my continuall presents: which proued so happie and seasonable, that when (vnexpectedly) I least dreamt of any such matter, my seruices obtained their desired acceptance: for one day after dinner he came into my Chamber, where sitting him downe by me, he fell abruptly into this discourse: My *Leandro*, when good deedes receiue not an equall guerdon, (according as the Master of the Sentences in our Ciuill Law doth tell vs) fit it is, that our good will at least expresse a thankfulnessse in words; to which, *Leandro*, I am so much an enemy, (following in that the opinion of our *Bartolus*) that; I had rather by silence confesse wherein I stand obliged, and how much thou hast ingaged mee. This I had sooner made knowne, had not the nice condition, and retirednesse of my wife *Violante* beene a barre vnto it; otherwise, I might offer you henceforward my Table, that so you might be eased of so much care and expence as you are at: but she is so loth and vnwilling, that any but my selfe should be seene in our private roome, that I haue not beene able once to induce her to accept of thy quiet modest companie. Accept therefore my good wishes, and as thou louest me, hence-forward limit thy excessefull prodigalitie towards vs, since what hath hitherto beene receiued, obligeth me whilst I liue, to a thankfull acknowledgement. These formall speeches with all plainenesse and sinceritie my Mistresses husband vsed to mee, to which I (quite contrarie, much ouer-joyed) returned others, best futing to my cautelous intention; giuing him to vnderstand, that those poore trifles he pleased to accept of, proceeded from my naturall

naturall condition, and that hee needed not expresse the least thanks for such slender toyes: this, sent him away much more obliged then he came (my hopes beginning now to bud some good successe:) howsoever yet I vvanted the sight and maine marke I aimed at; though, some fixe dayes after these Clouds were disperfed from mine eyes: for as I still continued my presents, one (as good lucke would) fell out pat for me, since being so acceptable and welcome to my Master, it made him (over-ruling his wiues nicenesse, and dispensing with his owne iealousie) send for me to his Table, where they both sate together at dinner, and this in such haste, that I had scarce leisure to settle my countenance, so frightened, as if I were to expect a sentence of death, which made me come euen trembling into his presence.

Without *Hyperbole* may I tell you, mine eyes till that instant neuer beheld such beauty, neither could fancies selfe frame a more absolute feature to my desires. I know not how to paint her out, but my tongue must fall short, and the rare Originall complaine of my defect herein. To make Simile's, or rackt Allusions, of Emeralds, Diamonds,, skeines of Gold, flakes of Snow, Corral, Cristall, Alabafter; these ( besides meane and base to equall her perfections) might rather make the Author in your Iudgement poetically, then truly expresse her peerelesse Image; and therefore you may onely thus farre belceue and credit me, that the least I could discern, was vnder a white smooth front, crowned with the tresses of her neat and well-growne Chesse-nut haire, two Saphires, two Morning-Starres, two Sunnes, two, but why vse I such strange Comparisons? A paire of Azure, cheerefull, honest eyes; in whose midst a wel-proportioned Nose, serued as a border to the lilly rosiate cheekes, and as a siluer threshold to the



to the ruddy gates, her lips: as, they, for Laylors to the treasure of her thicke-set, white, small teeth. Briefely, the least of those parts, whose all were then lively represented to my imagination, were worthy more then humane loue or regard. I was strooken Dumbe as a Statue, insomuch, that (had I been so happy as to haue deserued but a glance of her bright eyes) she might haue seene how I was troubled, and consequently some part of my affection: but, they stirred not: for in all the time of my stay there, I could not collect, that she so much as once lifted her sight from her Husbands bosome; who turning to me, thus began:

First and foremost, *Leandro*, you are to take it for an especiall fauour, that I so freely giue you accessse hither, where, (I may truely professe) no liuing man but my selfe since our marriage hath entred: And next, that is, henceforward you must eate with me adayes, for I am resolued not to let you waste your money so exorbitantly: and therefore without reply, you shall do as I would haue you in a matter that is so fitting and reasonable: besides, I shall be the more beholding to you, that, so, we may liue together like Father and Sonne: for such is my estimation now of you. I knew not how to meet him with a fitting reply, my powers and sences were so confounded: but fearing to incurre his suspicion, re-collecting my selfe as well as I could, I thus made answer: Sir, the selfe-same reason you haue to command me for the obeying your will, enforceth me to contradict it: for, it were no part of manners, much lesse thankfulnessse, in mee; if knowing the quietnesse of your disposition, & the priuacie, with which my Mistris *Violante* delights to liue, I should for my benefit interrupt it: the fauour you would herein doe me, I shall esteeme whilst I haue life, and therefore humbly beseech you to mention this particular no further; for this I tell

S

you,



you, not to obey, is my vtmost determinatiō: My pretence was with this dissembled backwardnes, to lay vp a good opinion in his suspitious brest, & with it to weare out all tracks of distrust, & so to assure my selfe against a fit opportunity: this it was made me refuse my kind Lawyers offer.

*Gerardo* so much longed for the end of this strange Story, that I dare affirme, he was sorry *Leandro* embraced not the offer, as thinking it the best way to make short worke; and though hee were willing to haue let him knowne so much, yet fearefull to interrupt, hee forbore: especially hearing the discreet *Leandro* thus proceed:

My Master wanted no replies, and stiffe intreaties, but all were vaine, considering, that in my modest warinesse, all the hopes and good successe of my Love consisted: and yet from that time forward, I had courage enough to continue my seeing the faire *Violante*, alwayes taking my times when both of them were together; for, indeede, I durst doe no otherwise, neither gaue me my Master other opportunity, and his dainty, too-honest Wife lesse; from whom, in all this time, I neuer so much as heard, not only the least word proceed frō her, that might open a way for any discourse of mine vnto her, but neuer beheld her so much as cast vp her eyes from worke: whereby you may conceiue what a confused, watchfull life I had, since that, and my want of conuersation with any liuing Soule, must needs keepe me in a restless torment.

But the accomplishment of my desire was not long deferred, though it might well haue cost mee my life, since by it I was in hazzard to haue lost it: for, as my fortune would, one afternoone amongst others, my Master and his Wife were passing the time at Chess, and I onely present, that (sometimes setting vp the men, otherwhiles, seeing my Mistris with her faire hands nimble remoouing them

them vp and downe) was better diuerted. Her Husband being at last called to a Client that was come to him, and necessarily to spend some time in his study, was forced to leave the game, saying to me very iocundly before his going downe, *Leandro*, thou seest how neere losing *Violante* is; Prethee, looke shee stirre not the men, for I had rather then any thing beate her this time. I promised I would; whereupon he, as ioyfull as I ouer-joyed, went his way and left vs. But now, deare friend, began the timorous panting of my heart, and my tongue to bee tyed with the sudden amazement of my senses; and indeed, I was not able (though I firmly resolued it) to forme in my braine the least Introduction to my amorous purpose, though the opportunitie were maruellous, till the faire *Violante* rising mee of this confusion (though to a different purpose) with a smiling countenance thus demanded of mee: Doe you know this play, *Leandro*? for if (as I thinke) you doe, you may do me a good turne with your helpe, and on my word I should be much beholding to you, if you could teach me how to saue the Checke-Mate my Husband thinkes to giue me.

No vvords could here expresse my hearts ioy, which had now an open vent made to let out my amorous resentment, and thus I made answere: I haue long knowne this game, which hath cost me much monies losse and labour; and though want of skill might make me distrustfull, yet at present, I beleue I can shew you so cunning a trick, that you (pleasing to make vse of it) shall not onely saue the Checke-Mate, but in stead of receiuing from my Master, you shall put it vpon him. *Violante* vvvas the most rauished creature aliu, to heare this; and thinking it long to bee satisfied, replide, My Husband will be here presently, and therefore, good sweet *Leandro*, tell me as soone as you can, or else we shall vvant opportunitie.

These last words gaue fire to my boldnesse ; vvherefore laying hold vpon her , and no longer deferring my intent, with a new saltring I began thus to accost her : The same feare, my dearest Mistris, which in so small a matter you expresse, enforceth mee (desirous not to lose the coniunction) that, without expecting a further occasion, I lay hold on the present : and therefore I beseech you know , that your selfe onely, Deare sweet, hath beene powerfull to reduce me (being one of greater qualitie then you take mee for at present ) to this meanenesse and low Estate , into which I haue put my selfe to see and serue you (the Relation a neere friend of mine made of your rare parts, drawing me from my Country and home) and so without ceasing, euen so that very time ~~from~~ the instant that I had first notice of it in *Corduba*, held on my Discourse with such painefull sighes, as might haue melted flint or Adamant. But vvhat thinke you was the answer to my tendernesse? the very renewing it doth affright me ; for I no sooner made an end of declaring my passion to her , when the blood in her faire cheekes turned to yellow palenesse, full of sudden fury, her lips vnfolded me this answer. It is not possible , false hearted *Leandro*, that thy brest can nourish better blood, then what thy base purpose hath discovered, since, wert thou (as thou sayest ) nobly borne, thou wouldest rather seeke to honour one that so well deserues it of thee as my Husband ; then deprive him of it, by attempting his dishonour. And her choller here boiling vp, shee concluded the rest , vvith the Chesse-Boord , discharging with both hands that and her anger to boot on my head.

The sudden accident quite bereaued mee of my vnderstanding, so that now I was vtterly lost, & the rather, when I might heare her Husband come vp staires, and see his alteration at his entrance, caused with the noise, which the  
blowe

blowe and rattling of the men had made.

My Master looked blanke, when hee saw the fashion of his game marred; and turning smilingly to me, willed mee to resoluē him of his doubt.

But *Violante*, who perceiued by my troubled countenance, the poore satisfaction I was then likely to haue giuen, taking vpon her my part, deliuered this harmelesse answer:

You need not bee troubled to see the Games thus turned Topsie-turvy, for I haue the worst of it, I am sure, and yours was in a great deal of likelihood to be lost; since, beeing desirous to stead my selfe from *Leandro's* skil, he had taught me so subtill and cunning a trick, as, that I might not only haue saued the Mate, but put it vpon you also; though my gowne and carelesnesse together (as I was remoouing) ended our strife, throwing downe the Chesse-board, vnder which (at our first sitting downe) a piece of it neglectfully was left:

With this admirable euasion, ierking as it were at my intent and weake confidence, and withall dissembling no part of the truth, she ended the confusion, and her Husband was well satisfied; who louing her most tenderly, and that being an occasion of pastime, attributing all to iest and sport, he himselte grew very pleasant.

When the heart, *Gerardo*, is full of passion, ill can the eares hearken to reason; my soule was all now on a light flame, and it had beene impossible for any counsell or aduice to haue diuerted mee, much lesse could I bee blamed for my perseuerance in loue, since I had not any friend to weane me from my headlong desires, so that I could not giue them nor my affection ouer. After this hapned, I was no sooner gotten from my Mistresses sight to my Chamber, and laid downe on my bed to take some little

rest, when, after a terrible pain within me, and a cold sweat all without, instantly a raging fit of a *Calenture* seiz'd me, which holding on me a good space, bereaued mee of all appetite, and in foure dayes brought me to extreme danger, and the fift, being giuen ouer by Physicians, I began to thinke my fatall houre was at hand : My Masters griefe was farre greater then the cause of my infirmie deserued; in all the time of sicknesse he did not once stirre from me, rather (neglecting all his affaires, he was only carefull of cherishing me, and applying the best helpes for my recovery: but (both he and the Doctors ignorant of my malady) the remedies they vsed put me into more danger: for no drugs are able to restore Loue (an ill incurable, that onely wants an *Anicen*.)

In fine towards night (which preoued to me the saddest, gladdest that hitherto I enioyed) the Lawyer having most vrgent occasion to be from home, because hee would not leaue me all alone, as fearing the swift approach of my fit, calling his Wife most louingly to him, he intreated her to keepe me company till his returne.

With much perswasion, she grew (as I might heare) at last contented; for euen in occasions of charitie, she loued to shew a nice-rigorous disposition. Though my sicknesse were terrible, yet had it not captiued my senses; for they stil free, might now perceiue, how neere they were to their cruell Owner, who at length (Heauen willing to preserue my life) either pittying to see me brought to this low weaknesse, and my frolicke youth turned to a sad picture of death; or, belike acknowledging the purenesse of my loyall affection, or for both: (for indeed, no woman loathes to bee loued, and few or none there are which at last yeeld not) sending forth most tender sighes, and sitting her downe vpon my bed, taking in her faire hands, mine; she beganne to powre  
this



this balme into my wounded heart: Is it possible, discrete *Leandro*, that hee, who for an vncertaine Relation of my poore beauty, tooke on him the hardinesse of hoping to possesse it, should in the first onset faile, and shew such weakenesse in the first resistance? Belceue mee, Sir, did not your generous proceeding lowdly publish your noblenesse, this present cowardize would make mee much doubt it. Take courage, *Leandro*; for, if when first you declared your amorous intent to me, I should haue been wonne, or should my words or countenance haue given the least strength to your imagination; she that is now affected by such a facilitie and lightnesse, might haue been iustly reiect-ed: for that Fort which with valour and perseuerance suffers one and many assaults by an enemy, ought to bee more prized then that which yeelds vpon a bare Parley: neither could you haue made a conquest, where you should haue found no painefull resistance to make your glory the greater. For the Torments you haue vndergone in my affection, I am as well satisfide, as a gratefull acknowledger of the debt, for whose paiment, I desire no longer forbearance, then the time of your healths recoverie. More would my faire Mistris haue said, but that (shee was cut off by the v unexpected returne of her Husband (an occasion that turned my ready answer into weeping eyes.) He found me (notwithstanding, contrary to what he looked for) much reuiued since the little time he left me, perceiuing my weak colour strangely bettered, which, I suppose, he attributed to some more miraculous cause. But what wonder? if to my pois'nous infirmitie, that Superiour Antidote were opposed as a wholesome remedy, which might onely preuent it.

Now, friend *Gerardo*, my happy life, or fatall destiny vvas subiect to the faire *Violante's* absolute commaund: and



her crueltie, that brought mee almost to deaths doore, at this time with her compassionate discourse (so farre beyond expectation) not onely restored my vvasht body to health; but left also my minde full of vnspeakeable content: wherby within a few dayes, though faintly, I was able to rise out of my bed, my desired and deserved reward adding courage to my feeble spirits. This inward amorous desire of mine, often drew me from my Chamber, and sent me, not without my accustomed feare, into my Mistris's presence to enioy her pleasing sight; yet neuer had I the heart to put her in mind of her promise: for still the awfull respect she had gotten from me, seiz'd on my tongue, causing (as since I haue found) the same trouble and bashfulness in my *Violante*: but my passion making me conceiue, it was the visuall punishment of her rigorous disdain, was like to haue driuen me into a relapse of losing, by such coldnes, the little health I had gotten from the comfort of her promised recompence. In this time of my conualescencie, it grew to be Sunday; when, by reason of some indisposition of body, or other important occasion, my Lawyer could not stirre from home, nor *Violante* consequently goe to Masse at her early accustomed houre: wherefore the Morning being somewhat spent, it seemed good to her husband to bestow for once his owne Office of Squiring her, vpon mee; and willing to make knowne his intent, said: Friend *Leandro*, my not beeing well all this night hath kept me within doores, and *Violante* too, from going to Church, which troubles her; and I cannot helpe it, except thou wilt doe so much as supply my want, by vsing her: Prethee take so much paines, and, giuing her thy hand, she may also serue for a stay and proppe to thy weaknesse.

It was scarce possible for me here to dissemble my excessse of ioy: well, I obeyed, and with vnspeakeable content,  
tooke

tooke my Mistris by the hand, and now promised full liber-  
tie to my cares. By the way I resolued to signifie the iust  
complaints that my soule might forme for her neglect; to  
which purpose (mee thought) I was rarely prouided to  
make her relent. But scarce durst my dastard brest send  
forth a sigh; fearing more to anger her with my speech, then  
to see my selfe by her coldnesse irremediably perish. With  
this grieuous reservednesse I accompanied her to Church,  
and in the same manner had returned home, if an vnexpe-  
cted fauour of hers had not emboldened me the more; that  
as vve came backe, my Mistris looking now more comfor-  
tably, and faining an occasion of taking off her Glove, with-  
out it, returned me her beautifull white hand: the sudden  
(but ioyfull) astonishment I esteemed a sufficient recom-  
pence for all my former distastes. I was now so beaitened,  
with seeing my selfe Owner of that cristall piece, that I could  
not chuse but vrring her hand vvith mine, (the amorous act  
answering so happily to my intents) that I no sooner put it  
in execution; vvhen my Mistris paying mee in the same  
coyne, said: How long, loüed *Leandro*, shall your slacknesse  
and my modestie be thus at oddes? or doe you expect with  
dumbe silence, and frostie proceeding, that my person  
should first carouse to you? this is more proper to men,  
then practised amongst vs: I know you vvill excuse your  
fault, by laying it vpon my rigorous condition; and though  
not long since your seeing me lesse cruell, might preserue  
me in your better opinion, yet in respect of the first occa-  
sion you had, I admit for once of the excuse; but doe  
henceforward aduertize you, that, secure of my correspon-  
dence, you may goe on in your loue: so that (vnderstan-  
ding our selues better for the time to come) there may want  
no opportunities for the effecting our vvishes; and that  
you may be sure, my promises are not onely verball, I will  
this

this night so contriue and handle the matter, that you may enter my Chamber.

Thus farre held on *Leandro's* amorous storie, to *Gerardo's* no small amazement, vvhhen suddenly it vvas interrupted, by the sudden approach of a troupe of Officers, vvho (accompanied by the Iailour) broke in vpon the two imprisoned friends, ere they were aware. The noueltie something troubled them; *Gerardo* especially, vvhen hee vnderstood, they came vvith order to remooue him from the prison where he vvas, to one of the strong Towers of *Alhambra*: a Fort somewhat distant from the famous Cittie: and though this had beene often before solicited by his enemies, yet could it not till now be effected. Their principall scope vvas, to ouercome vvith such kind of vexations his resolution; a remedie which the seuereludges in two occasions still lay hold on, either, when the qualitie of the prisoner, and nature of the offence, admit no stricter punishment then close imprisonment; or when with the discomforts of that, or depriving him frō his friends and kindred's conuersations, they would faine reduce him to their purpose, which still fallies out to be the surest. This last conclusion they tried in our afflicted Gendeman, which was not by him held for one of the lightest misfortunes in his Captiuitie: but resolving to seare no colours, he prepared himselfe with a chearefull countenance for his departure; taking leaue of his noble and ancient friend *Arsenio*, vvho with incredible resentment wept, (his manly heart not able to keepe in his teares) the new *Leandro* too accompanied them with no lesse lamentation; whose pleasing storie (though he came not to the end of it) left *Gerardo* passionately full of admiration.

The famous Citie of *Granada* is over-topped by a high Mountaine, whose superiour height shewes on Cock-horse

to the same: part of which is clothed vwith shadie Elmes, and another part girt and encompassed vwith sharpe rockes, and smoothe Cliffes, vvhose clayie bottome the river *Dauro* bathes, famous for his golden streames; in which (to the emulation of no few maine Riuer) hee paies a tribute to the cristall current of *Genil*. In the highest part of this Mount, appeares a goodly spacious piece of ground, in which, on certaine former ruines, the petty Moorish Kings, (and heretofore for our sinnes, the rigorous Scourges of our Kingdome) founded their loftie Palaces, which they enuironed vwith strongest Wallles, high Towers, Barricada's, Ditches and Bulwarkes, leauing the eminent seate equally provided both for safety and habitation: and so they bestowed on the whole Edifice the name of *Alhambra*, that to this day is still so called, and conserues the auncient Splendour: for our Kings and powerfull Monarkes, doe not onely cause the old Arabicke Structures to be kept vp, but with others more stately and magnificent Fabrickes, daily adde to, and ennoble them; hauing likewise for perpetuities, a continuall Garrison, and all things necessarie (as in a towne of Strength) to defend the same: In the circuit of it there are Churches and Monasteries, and neere-vpon two hundred houses, in which the Kings Officers, Souldiers, and others dwell; that hold it for a more healthy Seate then the Citie; from whence it is, not passing a quarter of a Mile in distance. Hither then (when his imprisonment might rather haue ended) vvas *Gerardo* brought, and committed to one of those many Towers, that looke toward the spacious Plaines, vvhose delightfull Prospect, in any other lesse vnforgotten, might haue caused great content: but such occasions vvorke a contrarie effect in the party, that is denied the full enioying them; for conuerting into *Tantalus* his fruit, (as it were) the pleasing obiect, it rather torments, then

then any vvay comforteth; and iust so it happened vvith *Gerardo*, vvho clogged vvith Yrons and sure Bolts, could but onely stretch his vvearied eyes to those large Walkes, (enuying the free steppes of the most miserable day-labourer) and at this time hee would haue beene most happie in the meane conuersation of some rusticke Shepherd. The wished sight of a friend or kinsman hath the same operation vvith a prisoner, that the Phisicians presence in a fainting Patient; but (*Gerardo* barred of this comfort) well may it be thought, how hardly he might suffer his torment; yet his vvisedome predominating, made his constant spirits patiently beare vp, (Fortune still vvith fresh varieties strengthening his vvndaunted determination.)

Some two moneths after this remoouall, and one night, being the first of *Aprill*, after he was a-bed, something late in the night, a pleasing Consort of different Instruments of Musicke, not farre from his Tower, cunningly plaid on, awoke him; and so, inuited, aswell by the nouelty, as desirous also of some more pleasing harmony then the noyse of his shackles, he went to his window, from whence (the night pretty cleere) he might discerne fine or sixe persons, vvho (leaning to the Towers foundation) two of them accompanying the sweetnesse, grauitie, and consonancie of a Cornet, Harpe, and Lute, beganne to sing this ensuing Dialogue.

1. *Faire Enemy! once, ere I goe,  
Yet curse, or kill me, vvith a No:*

*To this say, I,*

*Then, then I die.*

*Then hauing stop't my latest breath,*

*No more thy rigour after death,*

*Or sadder ill,*

*Shall haunt me still.*

2. *No.*



2. No. 1. *Is it she that mockes me?* 2. Try.

1. *Shall I awhile be absent?* 2. I:

1. 'Twould double woe

(Made greater,) 2. No:

*Take heart; resolve to live againe:*

*Absence best cures a Lovers paine.*

1. *Her crueltie*

*Helpes absence?* 2. I.

1. *But absence (as most Lovers know)*

*Forgetfulnessse begetteth.* 2. No:

'Tis present sight,

Gluts the delight,

*And thence oblivion riseth; where,*

*Desires, in Absence best appeere:*

*As want of meat*

*Doth stomacke get.*

*Then bid Adieu to thy Vnkind,*

*Since Absence most doth ease the mind.*

1. *But shall I flie*

2. *To Absence?* 1.

The sweet Musicke bred in *Gerardo* no small admiration, and though in part it diuerted his sorrowfull remembrance, yet his curiositie to know the cause of it, not a little troubled him, musing extremely, that in those solitarie fields, no neerer the Cities concourse, and in the height and ruggednesse of those Towers and Walles, there should bee any occasion of such obseruant watchfulnessse; as also, the preparation of the Company, Voyces, and Instruments seemed to him to bee more then ordinary. Each particular was a noueltie to him, and the whole duely waighed and considered, a particular aduenture. In these and the like imaginations was he busied, all the while that the Musicians



ans ceased, till (having new Order) tuning afresh, they played diuers Lessons, and sung severall Ditties of pretty Inuentions: but at length *Gerardo* might perceiue one of the Squadron, (leauing them) draw neere to a neighbouring Wall. He could not view the end of his intent and voyage, in respect of a small Skonce of the Tower vvhich hindered him, vvhich forced him to leaue the Window where he was, and goe to another, in the next open roome to him, vvhich was directly opposite; from whence hee might more plainly perceiue, that the party made a stand at the foot of the other Tower; vvhich being nothing neere so high or strong as his, yet (adorned with many faire Bay-windowes, Grates, and Galleries) was neere enough to the roome where he vvas imprisoned; insomuch that speaking but indifferently lowd, the voice might reasonably vvell be heard. There (as soone as *Gerardo* looked) he might see the liddes of a lower Window set open, and a woman also appearing at it: but his eyes vvere no *Lymxes*, nor the distance of places so very short, that hee could ghesse at features, and therefore his sole care was, to hearken to the end of their intentions; vvhich he did, and their discourse, (the surest Clue to guide him out of the Maze and Labyrinth he now remained in.) At first, a few sighes and grones, which the vnknowne Amourist sent forth, held the hearers in suspence, till breaking out from the middest of them, with an afflicted, changed Tone, he fell into these words: In fine, discreet *Aminia*, your Sister, or (to speake more properly) my cruell *Lissi*, giues you leaue to come hither all alone; a sure signe, that her rigorous and rough condition is still the same: an vniust punishment to one that so firmly loues her, and in lieu of reward, an vnequall recompence to my ancient affection. Here, *Gerardo* might perceiue that hee was interrupted by her, whom he called *Aminia*, that thus replied:

replied : I must not permit you, worthy *Liseno*, with so little reason to complaine of *Lisis* or her coldnesse, since you neuer at any time, found her more tractable, nor my sister lesse wary of her honour : so that, having giuen you no encouragement, you neither iustly can taxe her of cruelty, nor may she vniustly bee offended with you, that by this meanes giue the world to thinke, there hath beene something more then ordinarie betwixt you. Suffice it, *Liseno*, I am come to you, without any distaste to her, and though she giue not that entertainment which your affections desire, yet (which might be to her reputations cost) shee forbids not your care, nor these your seuerall louing demonstrations. That is it (quoth hee) that augmenteth my torments, and whereon the Iustice of my complaints and resentment is grounded, to haue so long serued and obeyed, is that which maddes me, to consider how vn-pittifull *Lisis* hath beene to my sighes, how silent to my papers, flinty to my teares, scoffing at my loue, and angry that I am sensible of it; these doe quite confound mee in my best of iudgement. This kind of desperation, *Liseno*, (said she) is like to profit you little; for, in matters of this difficultie, wisdom should rule our actions, which are then best gouerned, when by skill and industrie, not outrage and violence. Suffer, *Liseno*, beare, and yet forbear not your amorous pursuite; follow the path you haue begun, and bee not wearied; nor cloudie, when her frownes doe raise a storme: for let mee tell you, (that better know then you, our generall naturall conditions) long persouerance in the end vanquisheth: but if your impatience be such, as not to withstand a little crosse fortune, the fittest aduice I can giue you, is, to make to the wholesome Port of Absence, (the best Letter of credit to a Louer) as sure to be payed at home: some few moneths, and a mountaine or two put betwixt you and *Lisis*, may chance

chance to effect more then many daies, many yeeres presence vwould bring to passe. Here *Liseno* more greedily answered, Sure, faire *Aminia*, your eyes haue penetrated my hearts intent, if so be the counsell you giue me, proceed not from the subiect of those Verses you heard the Musicians sing; for know, that I am now resolued, no longer vvith my wearied voice to torment these fields, nor with the venime of my enflamed sighes to parch their plants and flowers. I will not onely leaue these Walles in quiet peace, but get me farre off from this Kingdome; that, so diuiding the causes, that (vnited) torment me, their effects may in part or wholly cease, diminishing the fire that consumes my soule. I should be happy, if *Lisis* by her presence would animate me to this last sad farewell, but my hardinesse is not so presumptuous, as to thinke, that either your intreaties, or my importunitie, may obtaine that of her, neither from my impatience can I promise any toleration that may secure my tongues silence; for I should sure speak to her, that so vniustly inforceth me to leaue the quiet of my natieue Countrey, and therefore I had rather desist from my-vaine purpose. Adieu, *Aminia*, Heauen giue you better successe in your affections, and temper the sad influence of my unhappie Starres. These last words vvere accompanied (as I might ghesse) by some teares and sighes, and so not so much as expecting a reply from *Aminia*, he turned his backe, and came where the rest of the Companie with the Musicke expected him; and commanding them to follow, they vvnt toward the Citie: but passing vnder *Lisis* her Tower, ere they sheathed vp their Instruments, they ioynly sung the following Sonnet.

*The Sonne is set, gone downe to the cold shade,  
(The misted brightnesse of his piercing eye,*

*Couer'd*

Couer'd with blacke Clouds the red Easterne sky : )  
 My cruell faire, to restfull sleepe hath laid.  
 Now mur'd'ers walke, and such as are afraid  
 Of dayes cleere light : now chanteth mournfully  
 The Turtle chaste, complaints to multiply,  
 'Gins she, whom crafty Tereus once betraid.  
 O night ! thou Image of sad absence, tell  
 My Lisis, her two Sunnes are set from me  
 For euer : If it chance, that she doe sleepe,  
 ( May Morpheus wake her with a dreame from Hell)  
 Tell her, of her disdaine, my Iealousie;  
 That though I present am, I (absent) weepe.

*Gerardo* reioycing much at this vnexpected passage, returned to his bed; there forming to himselfe notable digressions, touching *Liseno's* strange loue, *Amintas* wise discourse, and the seuer condition of *Lisis*, from whence, all he collected (after an houres watchfulnesse) was; an extraordinarie, and more then curious desire, to see and know the well-painted cruell picture of *Lisis*, and the pleasing personage of *Aminta*, thinking, that if his good fortune might make him gracious with either of the two, (the neighbourhood being so comodious) they could not but exceedingly diuert his cares, which thing in this wretched imprisonment he much needed; for that which doth most disquiet and dis-harten a poore Prisoner, is, his own solitarinesse, and the barrennesse of occasions to diuert his grieve. With this new hope *Gerardo* slept out that nights remainder, so soundly, that, till the Iaylor came in the morning to see how he did, he had no more to doe with his wandring imaginations. As soone as the Iaylor had bidden him, Good morrow; the first question he asked was, if he had heard the last nights Musicke; which wonderfully reioyced *Gerardo*, (as

being now resolved, cunningly to informe himselfe of the two Sisters; and so, seeing occasion offered, and making somewhat strange of the matter, he replide, asking, whether he mocked him, or dreamt of some such thing in his fancy? Rather, Sir, said the Iaylor, because you haue slept so soundly, you attribute to me the effects of drowsinesse: but this which I tell you hath really passed: though indeed I cannot be perswaded, that so many Instruments and Voices could otherwise chuse then come to your eares.

*Gerardo* seemed much more to wonder at this second reply; and so faining a greater earnestnesse, proceeded; Prethee Keeper; who in these fields can your Cities Gallants make court to, but their Elmes or other Trees? Except happely such be my happinesse, that the Nymphs and Goddesses of the neighbouring Mountaines, or some enchanting Syren of the famous *Dauis*, lest the wilde Cliffes and Cristalline Vnes, to offer vp to mee this their solemnitie. Then said the Iaylor, smiling, *Lev* vnder not, Signior, that (vnacquainted with the faire Dames your opposite neighbours) you thinke I lest with you; or imagine, this place can produce no occasion for such, as the passed accident: let mee therefore tell you, that you are not (as beeing the onely *Non-Parcels* of these parts) far from the faire *Liss*, and discreete *Aminta*, Dames, whose beauties, together with their good names, long since famous in this Citie, are now celebrated thorow the whole Kingdome.

These and the like extolling speeches vsed the earnest Iaylor, giuing *Gerardo* also strict account of many other particulars: as, not onely telling him who their Parents, were but withall hee made knowne *Liseno's* cares, shutting vp his Discourse with this, that the cause of them proceeded from hauing once seene *Liss* in a Monasterie, where her Parents in her yonger yeeres had placed her, and where

*Liseno*



*Liseno* then enamoured on her, (shee beeing now come home) prosecuted his suite night and day vpon all occasions : and yet though hee be a Gentleman of very good qualitie, and euery way meriting, hee is by her but coldly respected.

*Gerardo* hauing now enough, would bee no farther curiously inquisitiue; and so (the conuersation dissolued) the Iaylor went his way, giuing the Prisoner opportunitie to goe to the window, that from his Tower was iust opposit to his faire neighbours. His beginning was so successfull, that he had no sooner opened his Window, when the two Sisters were gotten to a Bay-window of theirs neere the Tower, where they sate them downe to their worke, but little dreaming they were so carefully espied.

Neuer saw *Gerardo's* eyes a *Flanders* Picture or *Romane* Piece vvith such curious Art, and goodly perspectiues, as vvvas the linnen of that louely Tower set out vvith. The Bay was of white and blacke Marble, diuided by two small Arches, and a Pillar of painted Iasper, whose smooth stones also serued as a Carpet to faire *Lisis* and her Sisters Cushions. *Aminia*, that seemed somewhat the yonger of the two, vvith her twinkling eyes, gaue the more cheerefulnesse to her pleasing countenance, vvwhose complexion vvvas neerer browne then white; her mouth and Nose most perfectly proportioned, vvith two blacke burnisht Arches, that (being the Diadems of her eyes) made vp together an absolutely round Ebon Circle. *Lisis*, who differed but a very litle in yeeres from *Aminia* (for from both, time might scarce challenge a Tribute of thirty) was somewhat of a more awfull maiesticall aspect, but cleerer countenance; exceeding faire, that, the threds of her smooth-combed haire, falling vvith a kinde of gracefull neglect vpon the Margent of her snowie forehead, shewed like the strokes of



a Pen made in the finest Paper; so perfectly white was she, so incōparably black the resplendent Tresses of her well-ordered haire, from which her eyes were no vvhit differing in Colour, in Proportion, neither neere great, nor any way yet too small (no expression able to paint out the quicknesse of their alluring motion.) Her lip and chœke were of equall tincture, such, as (they present) Vermillion were but muddy. Her hands, which, embroidering vpon a Greene Sattin frame, danced to and fro, shewed like Snow, melted by the Sunnes of her eyes, which (though blacke) more inflamed me then the tothers yellow beames. In fine, the vvhole, and all of her was a miraculous draught of her diuine Painter, vvhom *Gerardo* in his perfect workes, with all reuerence could not but adore.

A vvhile he remained somewhat doubt-strucken, but most ioyfull with the gracious sight before him, till the two Sisters, aware of his carefull eying them, hee bestowing a low salutation on them first, returned him an equall courtesie; yet, he durst not so much as offer the least speech, as fearing their vvvarinesse vvould affoord him but a slender warrant. He supposed, the nouelty of his presence would cause them to retire: and therefore loth to bee troublesome, shutting the vvindow close to, as he found it, he got him back to his Chamber, yet from the same place many a time after hee participated of that content (the two Sisters growing euery day more free, lesse strangers on his behalfe.)

'Twas not bashfulnesse in *Gerardo* made him forbear to speake to them, for he wanted not language, nor courtly boldnesse, and aboue both, experience, to make good his Discourse: but, to speake somewhat lowder then ordinary, by reason of distance of places a little troubled him, fearing, that (howsoeuer they in courtesie might make him answer) yet, the raritie might raise some needlesse curiositie

in the neighbours, or an angry diffidence in his own house.

And therefore purposing to attain by some other meanes to his purpose, he resolved to write to them, and so steaded himselfe with the carefull diligence of a shee-Slave that belonged to the Iaylor, whom, by gifts and larger promises, he made sure to him for that, or, a greater enterprize. Having first therefore instructed her what she should doe, bidding her deliuer the Letter to *Lisis* or *Aminta's* own hands, with no small care of the successe, he dispatched her with it, whose Contents were these :

*If, faire Ladies, you shall blame this presumption and boldnesse, sure I am, I shall want it to returne any excuse; for, to rely upon mine owne forces (utterly unequal) to resist your beauties; were rather a rash folly, then sufficient discharge: since, the selfe-same cause ought to strike dumbe my senses, respecting your fairenesse as a Deitie; and therefore I resolve to use no stronger shield for my defence then your discretion: to which with a prostrate affection, I consecrate a firme heart, a loyall and noble minde, which shall ever acknowledge the being your creature; if raising it from so miserable a being, you shall receive it as a vanquished spoile of him, that adores your miraculous parts and vertue: Heauen protect you.*

GERARDO.

From the time of deliivering of this Letter, and the Slaues leauing him, he ghesse'd euery minute an Age, that passed: but for all his watching, hee remained three dayes in this confusion; in all which time his shee-Messenger could finde no opportunitie, to put her matter in execution. At length she got meanes to speake to *Aminta*, who, being strangely importuned by her, at last tooke the Letter. This successe was presently made knowne to *Gerardo*;

who now confidently promising great matters to his hopes, expected the resolution of the two Dames; whom, neither in all that day, nor the next following, he could so much as once espy at their window; whereupon (what you haue heard, being all that passed) his solitarinesse did more (then might well be imagined) afflict him, as thinking this their absence and retiring, was a kinde of giuing him to vnderstand, how much they were offended with his boldnesse.

But the true cause of it was, that they had occasion to accompany some kinswomen and friends of theirs to certaine shewes and solemnities in the City, which seemed so much the likelier; when, presently in the Euening, after they were returned home, they appeared both together at their window, more frolicke and liuely then they euer hitherto vsed to doe, all the while that *Gerardo* stood at his: which made him sleepe peaceably that night, expecting Morning; at which time going very early to the grate of his Window, he might pereinue *Aminta* at the vsual Stand; from whence, when shee saw *Gerardo* drawing a Paper out of her bosome, and making signes to him, to send some seruant for it, she let it fall into certaine high grasse that grew at the foot of the Tower, and without expecting farther, onely shutting to the leaues of her Bay-window, shee went in.

*Gerardo* was much astonished at the accident, imagining by the manner of *Amintas* action and retirement, that the Paper shee cast downe, was the same that he had sent; and therfore in maruellous anguish for the contempt, longing to bee resolued, and calling a seruant that was there ready to attend him, hee bade him goe downe and looke for the Letter, which he speedily did, and deliuered it vnto him; but opening, he knew it to be none of his owne hand,

hand, which made him with lesse feare venter vpon the Contents.

If the commiserating your painefull imprisonment, did not giue a sufficient discharge for our facilenesse of answering you; beleeue it, Gerardo, these lines had beene excused, though wee might haue been held disdainfull: but our breasts are so open to honest pitie, and your selfe so well deserue it, that when the heauy occasion of your thralldom, might not induce vs; your own discreet cariage, would lay a tie vpon vs to alter our determination. And that you may rest fully assured, that our conditions are not so rigorously cruell, as (happely) there they may haue informed you; Know, that Lisis and I, are resolved, (not to let you passe your imprisonment so solitarly) to giue you all the comfort we are able, to dimert your sorrowes. And though (I presume) you may equally dispose of our affections; yet, least you may thinke wee both ioyne in bare complement, wee from this instant resigne our good wils to your liking, that is, that she, whom of vs two you shall make choise of, will most accompany you in your misfortunes.

LISIS, AMINTA.

More comfort then this was not possible to haue befallne our Gerardo, and therefore extraordinarily gladded, taking Pen, Inke and Paper, in prosecution of his happy pretension, thus he sent his reply to the gracious Dames:

I know not how to extoll sufficiently in these lines my great good fortune, by shewing in them, the least shadow of my true thankfulness, with which my minde is wholly yeelded and rendered vpon to your mild and pittying dispositions. The best way (not to come short) is to be altogether silent; onely this I must acknowledge, that the fauour you offer, is more to be esteemed then my liberty: the which I shall hence-forward leane to hope for; or if I

at all desire it, it shall be little for mine owne sake, more then to employ both that and my life in your seruice. The way you haue giuen to my happinesse, hath brought mee into such a confused Labyrinth, that it will be impossible for me get out, if you please not to change your intents, by reuoking the election you remit to my opinion, which may unwittingly hurt me (as ignorant) which of you is freest to fauour me. This inconuenience may easily be removed, by your owne consents in appointing which shall bee the Owner I must obey, since, in the rest of your parts and perfections, there is no knowne aduantage in either, but a most harmonious simphonie worthy eternall estimation.

Gerardo was not a little in the right, with this discreet reply; since, so, he not onely aimed at the absent *Liseno*, but resigning vp also the election to them, secured his feare from any other powerfull emulator; and besides, shee that had beene left out, must needs haue beene much distastd: for euen in matters of iest, the imperious (though weake condition of females) loues no declared neglect. And so to giue order for the deliuerie of his Letter, he got him to his window, from whence hee might also see *Lisis* at hers, as if her thoughts had promised to her, his comming thither.

Gerardo had not, till this present, scene the faire Dame alone, whom cheerefully saluting, by some amorous signes he sent her thanks for the singular fauour she shewed him: At which, *Lisis* smiling, gaue him in the same dumbe language to vnderstand, that it was not her selfe, but her Sister *Aminta* he meant, shewing in her clouded eyes a kinde of irkesome ieaiousie, that Gerardo made more court to *Aminta* then her; a suspicion that he (like an olde weather-beaten souldier) soone perceiued; and willing to haue fully expressed himselfe) the approach of *Aminta* hindered it; so, drawing onely a Paper out of his bosome, and (they who vnder-



understood his meaning, casting downe a long String, the Counter-signe) it was his part to send one to tie his Letter to the same, vvhich speedily done, *Aminta* hoisted it vp, and both taking leaue of *Gerardo*, left him more perplexed then euer: for now new cares began to keepe him vvakefull, and one of the louely Dames, by a particular sympathie of stars, had absolute power and dominion ouer him, in whose pleasing remembrance he vvasted the tedious darknesse, and by morning early hee receiued this ensuing answer to his second Lines.

*Lilis and my selfe, Gerardo, with notable content read your Letter, which would haue beene greater, if (taking the freedom we gaue you) you had not with so vnnessefarie circumstances refused it, but now (such is our determination) you must not deny: and therefore, let not the doubt of our freedoms trouble you, since assuredly neither of vs that were pre-ingaged, would be so light, as to seeke a new Owner: wherefore there needs no more, but to end the strife, and to make choise of Aminta — or Lilis; for (secure) that your discretion will make a sisting election, we haue ioyntly wagered; and it now rests in your power to make either a winner, or unhappy loser.*

*A M I N T A.*

*Gerardo* well perceiued by this Letters short Contents, how the vvorld went: fearefull therefore to offend by chusing, and yet more fearefull of an offence to both in not obeying, he made choyce of the former; but as warily as hee could, that one of them might not haue too iust a cause of resentment. With this good forecast, (though she, whose secret influence attracted him, vvvas already set downe in his heart) he sent these last Lines to the faire Dames, who with much ioy gaue them welcome and a view, as followeth:

*Heanen*



Heaven knowes, faire Lisis and Aminta, I had rather divide my heart, and lay it at both your feete, then see my selfe in this confusion I now am in: but the necessitie of obeying you, beates downe all difficulties of feare, obliging mee to the performance of your forcible commands. My affections (I know not by what happy Starre conducted) are particularly inclining to the miraculous subject of----- But passe not on, my Quill: how my hand shakes, and my heart trembles, timorous of the incertaintie of this matter! Pardon me, sweet Pledges, that I suspend my cowardly determination in a businesse, whose important well-speeding doth so much afflict me: let me onely first perswade you, that you both being every way equall and conformable, as well in the marvellous parts of minde, as rare and excellent features of body, no singularity that way hath mooved mee, to make choyce of one more then the other, but onely the performance of your willes: and beleene therefore, I beseech you, that as it happens when wee see Gamesters, we desire some one, whom we know not, or (happely) neuer so much as saw before, should winne; so, my soule and all her faculties are strongly inclined, and wholly yeilded up to----- The diuine Lisis. And thus haue I, desiring to appeare worthy of her noble thoughts, declared mine, and complied with your commands. I begin then from this instant, faire Lisis, to serue you, protesting on my part, a most humble permanent slavery, a singularly inuiolable faith, and a minde euer subject to Lones lawes, whilst life shall last most thankefull.

Aminta vvvas she of the two, whose hard fortune it vvvas to read the Paper, but so lothly, that as soone as shee came to Gerardo's declaration, vnable to dissemble longer, her trickling teares made knowne the inward sorrowes of her heart; vvherewith retiring to her Chamber, she left her Sister alone; but so glad and ouer-ioyed a creature, as if Gerardo had obtained her some famous victorie, whom shee determined to reward vvith the glory of her conquest-expressing

pressing thankfulness, by instant vvriting how pleased shee was vvith his election; enlarging her Lines vvith frequent iterations of gratitude, in such discreet Phrase, as made *Gerardo* rest most confident of his happiness. A successe, that amongst all those which I haue set downe of this Vnfortunate Gentlemans, seemes to me worthy of the greatest admiration: for though the inconstancie of his prosperous and aduerse fortunes, vvith their incredible euent, doe oft amaze me, yet this easinesse in *Lisis*, and her facile inclination doth stupefie my consideration; there being no reason to proppe with reason so inordinate an affection. *Lisis* was courted, long serued, loued by *Liseno*, yet shee could neuer afford him (though a deseruing Gentleman) the least looke of acknowledgement; this day, satisfied vvith two or three smooth papers, her open minde is vvholly giuen vp to a man incompasssed vvith chaines and bonds, vvwhose liberty is as vncertaine, as his conuersation vnsecure; from which conuersation, they that are best acquainted vvith loue, say, the firmest loue is ingendred: but alas! vvhat conuersation haue they had? vvhat actes, either to oblige or to perswade? from vvhence shall we conclude this affection to proceed, or whereon happened this Loue, the firmest that hath beene knowne, as vvill appeare in this Discourse? There is no way to know, no way to search or penetrate the cause of womens wilde and violent affections. In fine, from this moment, (the happiest for *Gerardo* that might be) in stead of darknesse that obscured his sad Prison, *Lisis* her two Sunnes, with their powerfull rayes enlightned it, turning his night also into brightest day: and now vvith his present glorie, he forgot all his former miseries; and this fortunate employing his affections, not onely bettered his Estate, but totally (as you shall heare) occasioned his desired freedome and libertie.

Thus

Thus diuerting himselfe with the sight of *Lisis*, hee past the greatest part of the daies; and Time, which before in euery minute of his seemed too prolixely tedious, was now in-sufficient with his short houres, for answering his Mistresses amorous Tickets; with which (though they wanted meanes of neerer discourse) his affection most pleasingly encreased; and, howsoeuer the limitation and curbe of his imprisonment, kept him from expressing the great seruices he desired to performe, yet he laid hold vpon all good occasions to expresse his loue and gratitude: and to this purpose, vnderstanding that *Lisis* was exceedingly affected to the sweet delightfulness of Musicke, many a night paying from his Window, the humble tribute (as it were) of his voyce, he sought to increase it: though the vnsauourinesse of the matter was such, that he must not expresse the least part of his affection in Poeticall amorous Conceits, in respect of the warinesse it behooued him to haue in his proceedings; and so he durst not once offer at a Loue-straine, for feare of giuing any motiue of suspition to some ouer-curious listeners, which made him for the most part sing some short Satyricall toyes: and one night amongst others, for want of better matter, (hauing first tuned his Violl) he sung these ensuing Couplets, whose contents were to dissuade an old Dotard from marriage.

*Wool't, old Colt? what, all this while  
Single, now at length beguile  
Age, and after Sixtie odde,  
Serue the little blind-fold god?  
Well, since trust thou wilt no friend,  
No sharpe knife, or strong ropes end,  
Goe, for once, be youthfull; Woo  
Speedily, and marry too.*

But thy fortune, truth must tell;  
 Shee's no Gypsie, listen well.  
 Is the party faire and young,  
 From a noble Kindred sprung?  
 Beauty much may comfort thee.  
 I, but youth will ne're agree  
 Long with Age, so whose cold roomie,  
 Quickly shee'l prefer the Groome.  
 Birth, to thy posteritie,  
 Lustre addes, and dignitie.  
 I, but breake her of her will,  
 Pow'rfull friends shee'l mention still.  
 Or, when thou to sleepe art laid,  
 Thee with fortunes shee'l upbraide.  
 Is she one of tougher yeeres,  
 Thirty upward thus appeeres,  
 One, (since first she new was nam'd)  
 Frequent child-beds well haue tam'd?  
 Or wist hall she neighbours knew,  
 She to first good-man was true?  
 Is she loyall, is she chaste,  
 (Nener so) too much embrac't?  
 I, but silence go along  
 Must: for chaste with too much tounge,  
 That's as thou shouldst in thy meat  
 Three parts Gall, one, Sugar eate.  
 Still she wrangles, still shee'l scould,  
 Brawle, and word is (vncontroul'd.)  
 Nay, when thou the Act hast done,  
 There's a quarrell new begunne.  
 Sweet-hearts keepe she two or three,  
 Know not thou the mysterie:  
 Be she any thing allow'd,

where,

*whore, so still; not honest loude.*  
*Is she one call'd doubly good,*  
*Chaste and silent vnderstood;*  
*More then birth, or to be faire,*  
*Meerely toys, and termes of ayre?*  
*I, but though her tongue lie still,*  
*She hath hui'rous trickes at will,*  
*which wil vex thee more, then flowres*  
*Often wet by April showres.*  
*Is she widow that is knowne,*  
*Ioyntures two or three to owne,*  
*Old and rich? (good signes of health)*  
*Soule be merry, thou hast wealth.*  
*I, but hard it is to sift*  
*Her Estate; who, Deed of gift*  
*Made before to kindred; they*  
*Carry coyme and mirth away.*  
*Say, thou die first, (no such art)*  
*She will of thy goods haue part;*  
*And out-line she must, to bring*  
*Euery ioynt a wedding Ring.*  
*Goe, be youthfull then, and woo*  
*Speedily, and marry too.*

As vwell had *Lisis*, her Louers preface imprinted in her heart, as the pleasing sound of his voyce engraued (as it were) in her eares; and therefore though she vvere asleepe, (awaked by the Ecchos of that) she vwould instantly get to her Window, accompanied by *Aminta*; vwho, now lesse passionate, vvas well enough satisfied vvith her ill fortune. *Gerardo* well perceiued the fauour she did him, and vwould willingly haue expressed his thankfulnesse, but fearing lest some ouer-busied care might hearken, he refrained; the like also

also happened in the beautifull Sisters, in respect of their parents and family, by vvhom they vvere not causelessly obserued, and the more at this time, by reason of the ensuing accident.

*Liseno*, vvho griued with the rigour of *Lisis*, (as you heard) left his home and Countrey, some foure moneths after (the time that *Gerardo* spent in his amorous conquest, with the ancient infirmitie renued by his absence) returned againe to *Granada*, and consequently to his pre-accustomed watchfulnesse, and so continuing his night-walks about *Lisis* her vualles, and *Gerardo's* Tower, his care was by *Gerardo* soone discouered, and himselfe also and his pretension quickly knowne, vvwhich made the imprisoned Louer not a little suspect and feare; and the more distastfully, vvhen his reason represented to him, the aduantage *Liseno* might haue ouer him for a Corriuall, (he free to prosecute his sute, and himselfe with his hands bound, without freedome to make his party good with him.) Besides, it did not a little torment him, to thinke, that *Lisis* in honestie and loyall affection, had precise obligation, to make the relapse of *Liseno's* affection knowne vnto him, (in which hauing failed) his scrupulous thoughts formed no small exceptions: vvwhich *Lisis* vnderstood by a Letter from him, though beeing (as indeed she was) faultlesse, she easily satisfied with her innocencie: the assurance of vvwhich so long rested with *Gerardo*, as the passionate *Liseno* appeared not: but hee once returning to his old haunt, the suspicions increased, and she was still put to a fresh purgation. So that in short time, *Gerardo* had many distastes against the poore harmelesse Dame, thinking it impossible for *Liseno* (vvithout some encouragement from *Lisis*) so long to continue his sute. Hereupon it happened, that as the two Louers were after this both at their windowes now better reconciled, (for the cause of *Gerardo's*



*Gerardo's* distaste had beene some time absent) vpon the sudden they might see *Liseno* mounted vpon a lustie dapple Courser, so gallant, as might well haue bred strong ielousie in the brauest Competitor. *Gerardo* was somewhat astonished with the vnexpected sight: which when *Liss* perceiued and his trouble, she grew to such an outrageous distemper, that hurried on with the blindnesse of passion, not once considering, how much she might preiudice her selfe and her poore prisoner, minding nothing though but his satisfaction, and beholding *Liseno* with the terriblest aspect that Disdaine could frame, she thus sets vpon him: How long, foole-hardy *Liseno*, shall this vnmanly presumption last? how long shall my fond silence suffer your infamous pretension to be the motiue to my dishonour? Betake your self the sooner to some other course, or (beléeue it) I shall not want some that will reuenge the iniurie you goe about to doe me: And so, furiously clapping too the leaues of her Window, in she went, leauing the good *Gerardo* all hush't, confusedly timorous, and the vnfortunate *Liseno* quite bereaued of his senses: and the poore beast his horse too, it should seeme, was charmed, when she began to speake, neuer so much as stirring all the while the storme lasted. But when the forsaken Lover perceiued, that aswell at his Mistress Window, as many others of the neighbours, there appeared diuers persons incited by the loudnesse and noise, vnwilling to prooue a spectacle to the street, all bashfull and ashamed, he returned backe againe toward the Citie; leauing now his amorous sute behind him in the hands of her cruelty and contempt, so that, within awhile after (an effect euer incident to such cases) Loue, which brought him to these hard extremities, was turned to mortall hatred and deepe desire of reuenge; and therefore suspecting the good parts and neighbourhood of our Prisoner, as also hauing

at

at times seene him narrowly prying at *Lysis* her window, and hauing found them (surprized vnawares that very day in the stealth of some amorous signes) made him rest fully assured, that, her desire onely, the more to oblige her Louer, and no other cause had incited his Mistris to her heavy rigour and disdaine.

This and his iealous rage together blinding him, he was now resolued to vn-piece the amorous engine, and to seuer the couple, chusing (as the surest means thereunto) to make knowne to her Parents what passed, by the stratagem of a fained Letter, in which, setting down the whole state of the businesse as dangerously and bloudily as hee could, hee caused it to be deliuered, but without setting any name vnto it; so that this and some other suspitions of the Parents of *Lisis* conferred together, they made meanes to haue *Gerardo's* recourse to those windowes hindered, which, accordingly, when hee least suspected any such matter, were dammed vp; which was to him so strange a nouelty, as (besides his feare that their other conueyances of Letters were made knowne) bereaued him almost of his vnderstanding.

Touching *Lisis*, no more needs bee said, but that poore she, like one vn-accustomed to these brunts, grew to such extremes, that had not *Gerardo* plyed her with fained hopes of his liberty, shee had quickly made an end of her selfe. There is nothing more cheeres a passionate soule, then the diuerting her restlesse vnsettled faculcies; for, with the variety of seuerall entertainments, shee is much dis-burdened, and miseries make no settled impression in her: all which, to one deprived of these, succeed quite contrary; as appeared in *Gerardo*, whose blinde loue had turned his heart wholly into *Lisis*; that, forgetting with strange neglect, the importance of his liberty, all hee spoke or thought, was no other thing but his *Lisis*, finding no content at all in any thing,

now he was deprived of her deare and precious sight. The desire of which, (hoping it might attaine to some good effect, though he was farre from dreaming a more happy one drew neere) made him one day descend into certain lower roomes, that (in the midst of the Tower) serued to keepe filth and rubbage which was cast into them, ghesing that some of the lightes thorow those Chambers, might happely looke towards his Mistresses window: and so, fitting some stones together, that he might the better clime vp to them, being mounted, seeing there was little hope of his purpose that way, going angrily downe, as he laid hold vpon one of the iron grates barres, to keepe himselfe from falling, the one halfe of it slippt from him: at which strange accident something troubled, yet looking more narrowly vpon the broken barre, he might see that it was cunningly filed, and as it seemed, to dissemble the matter, neatly gined together with soft Waxe, and some other *lituminous* matter, that the filing might not be perceiued.

Whereupon leauing it ioyned as hee found it, without being by any body espied, he went vp againe to his Chamber, but not so satisfied with the matter, and ignorant of the Author, made him thinke it miraculous; though considering his owne loose life, he thought himselfe altogether vnworthy of so celestiall a fauour. But (as afterwards he came to know) not Angels, but men were the Authors of the same; for, there hauing been not long before, two Gentlemen Prisoners in that Tower, and in some danger of their liues, they tryed that remedy: and the very same day they thought to haue effected their liberties, they were vunexpectedly (as was *Gerardo*) remooued to another lesse close Prison, whereby defrauded of their hope, the fruit of their vnperceiued handy-worke remained to the good fortune of our Prisoner, to which hee speedily prepared his nimble apprehensi-

on, as also his bold courage (all little enough in an occasion so desperately hazardous:) and taking with a little clue of thred (that serued him for making vp his Letters) the depth from the light to the square of the Towers foundation, hee found some ten fathom. but from the square to the ground he could not measure, by reason of the maine stones that ierted out: yet his principall intent, beeing but to quit the Tower, made him to take no care for a second leape; and so, without more adoo, tying the sheetes of his bed and a thinne Quilt he had together, which might make in al some fixe or seuen fathom, remitting the rest to the nimblenesse and actiuitie of his body, and taking away (when it grew towards night) the barre, sure that the Laylor was abroad, before it might grow darker, and he returne, he recommended himselfe to heauens protection, and so determined his sally, though, seeing the depth he had to passe, wrought no small feare in him, howsoeuer the hope of his liberty and his loue more then life (making him boldly winke against all danger) he instantly began to let himselfe downe, crossing his legs and armes strongly in the sheetes, from the end of which, fetching a sudden friske, hee alighted without any danger vpon the Square; and from thence by certaine old ruinous walles scrambled to the ground, giuing Heauen infinit thanks, that with so little labour, and without making any humane creature priuy to his purpose, hee had so vnexpectedly escaped.

*Gerardo* knew not his Brother *Leoncio's* lodging, nor where any the rest of his friends lay, ignorant of the *Libe-rian* streetes, as hauing neuer been there before the time of his imprisonment. And therefore not to hazzard his good beginning, by giuing cause of suspition to any that should meete him he got him the surest way as he thought, by fetching a tedious compasse about into the Citie: when

he suppoed himselfe at the farther end of it, hee enquired after a certaine Friarie in the Sub-vrbs, in which, a neere friend of his, one of the Religious Order at that time liued; where he arriued, but by reason it was now vvaxed somewhat late (though he knocked and called lowd in the Porch) yet no body came, as (belike) not willing to heare, at least not to open to anythat knocked at that time of night, which made him (not daring to returne againe into the Citie, or passe further on) resolute to climbe the Garden wall; and as he proposed to himselfe, hee forthwith put it in execution: but this boldnesse might very well haue cost him his life, for hee was no sooner gotten vpon his feete on the other side, when suddenly, with the noise his fall made, two fierce Mastiues, the Gardens keepers, so vnexpectedly clozed with him, that without giuing him leaue or leifure to help himselfe, they tumbled him flat vpon his backe.

*Gerardo* had about him a knife of about his hands length, (the onely weapon allowed him in the Prison :) and so seeing himselfe halfe woorried, hee couragiously drew it out, and instantly thrust one of them into the short ribs, who, with the paine he felt, leauing him, hee might the better grapple with his companion, that hauing but onely fastned vpon the folds of his Cloake, gaue *Gerardo* leaue to get vp, and with incredible nimblenesse to skippe into the neereft tree, but so bitten and wounded, that hee verily thought the anguish and cold aire would kill him before morning; but by that time it began to be light, his comfort was to see one of the fierce Curres weltring in his owne blood: but, sorry though, and vnwilling to make himselfe Owner of the distaste, which the good Friars were like to receiue with this accident, especially in such an occasion when he came to be protected by them; hee thought fit to get him from thence; and so, hoping the fore-gates might bee open,



pen, going out the same way he came, hee came without being by any scene, to the Porch, where asking for his friend, the party was quickly brought vnto him: who not onely ioyfully and charitably welcomed him; but seeing how the Dogges had in seuerall places of his body bitten him, he was very carefull to get his wounds healed. Some few dayes after, by aduice of both, the good Friar with another his companion, was to goe into the Citie, where (instructed well what he should doe) hee discreetly learnt the whole state of *Gerardo's* businesse; beeing informed, that, at the instant when hee was in the Tower missing, there were seuerall searches made for him, and the Iudges also caused his Brother *Leoncio* to bee apprehended together with his seruants, suspecting that by his meanes his brother had escaped: so they went very cunningly to work to sift out the truth; but the new Prisoners beeing found innocent enough of the matter, *Leoncio* tooke no great care of it, onely that which troubled him most, was the vncertainty of his brothers welfare, touching which, the Friar soone satisfied him, by letting him know (though not where) that his Brother was very wel and in safety, so that hauing left him much contented, within a few dayes after, (himselfe with his seruants at liberty) he might see his loued Brother, and with his comforting wisedome giue him the surest aduice for the dispatch of his affaires. That vvhich most of all afflicted our Gentleman, was, absence, and the remembrance of his gracious *Lisis*; for the glad-somenesse of his libertie made not him a whit forgetfull, neither could the feare of her dangerous conuersation one iot awaken his stupid senses, rather, hee desired nothing more eagerly, without all apprehension of misfortunes to succeed. And surely in these amorous cares, he had not the aduantage ouer *Lisis*, who that very night of his fortune



nate escape (vncertaine whether shee might reioyce, or be sorrowfull) indured a kinde of liuing death, most irresoluedly perplexed, as altogether ignorant what was become of her Louer; or if he were in safety, whether hee would still loue her. She knew of *Leoncio* and his seruants their imprisonment, and therefore considering that amongst them, there was one that had beene often the bearer of their amorous Letters, she could not, nor durst she blame *Gerardo's* loyaltie, from whom, the same day that *Leoncio* and his seruants were at liberty (the occasion seruing, and the Messenger too free) she receiued a large Ticket from him, wherein he promised her, that when the heat of his enemies and troublesome affaires might bee a little ouerblowne, hee would see her: but her Posting desires could brooke no delayes; and therefore contriuing that an Aunt of hers might lend for her out of the Citie, (it being effected) shee perswaded her also for particular Deuotion to heare Masse one morning at the Monasterie, where *Gerardo* had taken Sanctuary: and giuing notice of it beforehand to him, without her Aunts suspicion who knew not him, they had some short conference together, and the tender Louer seeing himselfe so neere that mirrour of beauty, holding himselfe too vnworthy so rare a piece, grew more and more enflamed.

*Lisis* (no lesse satisfied) tooke leaue, and from hence (I suppose) the force of their loues grew to a further heighr, so that she returning now with her Aunt, and shortly after, to her owne home, beganne to thinke vpon some possible meanes, that her *Gerardo* and she might haue a priuat meeting: and by him, (strange rashnesse!) she was many nights after visited, he being onely accompanied with one trusty seruant, and in that manner he resorted to that side of the Tower where her window looked to the fields. But so trouble-

troublesome it was to them, to vnderstand each other, being so farre distant, that (incouraged by the conformity of their own willing minds, that equally mett in their desires) they at last resolu'd, that *Gerardo* causing an artificiall thred-Ladder to bee made ) *Lisis* should on the night of their agreement cast downe a Rope from her window, vvhich fastened to the barres aboue, and the Ladder tyed to that beneath, he might without any difficultie get vp into her Chamber. All this so happily resolu'd on, and the prefixed time set downe against the second ensuing night, *Gerardo* returned to his Sanctuary, and *Lisis* to her bed.

It was not for nought, that the two enamoured Louers, in all their proceedings were so vvary; for you shal know, that the night, when their agreement was made about the Ladder, the Father of *Lisis* (to her ill fortune) lying awake, and hearing, (if not dreaming he heard) some noise and sound of Voices very softly, not once making his Wife priuy to his purpose, stealing out of his bedde and Chamber, and drawing neere to the window where she was, he might distinctly heare all that passed betwixt them, and their settled agreement: wherefore returning from whence he came, and craftily concealing his intent, hee determined against the time to take *Gerardo* in the manner, and before the matter should bee spred abroad, either to kill him, or, cause him in the occasion to be apprehended. He knew well enough of our Gentlemans suites, and the cause of his imprisonment; and thinking it bootelesse to treat with him in the way of marriage, in his blinde passion, carelesse of his owne and his daughters infamie, incited onely to reuenge, hee would not, or could not lay hold vpon some more conuenient remedy. Whereupon giuing notice to some kinsmen of his, that they should

against such an houre bee in a readinesse, making knowne no further his intent, nor they curious to enquire more, but vvilling to obey him, all of them in expectation of the businesse vvere well provided. Now the danger thus surely carried, much threatned the life of our secure Louer, who wholly ignorant of any such preparation, onely minded the accomplishment of his loues designe, and in the *interim*, tooke order, to haue the Ladder made euery way fitting for his purpose.

The wisht for night approached, in which (that his seruant might more securely crosse thorow the Citie) hee sent him before with the Ladder, vvilling him to expect him at the Orchard gate, which belongs to a Religious Order of the Monastery of the Holy Martyrs: (vvhich done) not long after, himselfe tooke the same way, coming to the Mountaines top about eleuen of the clocke, and to the gate where he bade his man to expect him, but found him not there, neither looking all round about him, could he get so much as a sight of him. The raritie much troubled him, and made him suspect some mischance had happened to his seruant; yet, thinking with himselfe, that happely the fellow might haue mistaken him, and vnderstood (in stead of the Orchard) the Church doore made him without delay goe thitherward, and looke round about him as he went.

In this manner hee drew neere the Monastery, whose high walles hee no sooner touched, when without seeing or hearing any thing that might affright him, vpon the sudden, his heart beganne to tremble, and his eyes to dazle, that (his haire standing on end, and his courage and strength vterly failing him) he fell down in the field; from whence (taking heart to haue risen) a blacke and dismall apparition kept him backe. Here his horrour increased,

creased, and in stead of calling on Heauens ayde hee was quite tongue-tyed; but, at last his manly resolution expelling and getting the masterie ouer his feare (groping on forward) he found a rest for his body and hands; and his amazement now prettily well ouer, opening his eyes, which with the gasly affrightment of the shadow hee saw, were before closed, hee perceiued hee was now at the Church doore: so that, leaning vpon the iron railles before it, and afterward sitting him quietly downe in the Porch, he might heare a husht, and confused sound of Voices, and frequent blowes by intermissions, to which somewhat more listningly hearkening, hee might plainly know that all of it was caused by the Religious men of that Order, who at those houres certain nights of the weeke vsed to scourge and discipline themselues; vvhich in this occasion, serued as an alarme to *Gerardo*, to rowze vp his drowzy spirits, and vvorke a feeling compunction in his hardened heart, as from his eyes it drew compassionate teares:

And instantly the prodigious passages of his life were represented vnto him, his disordinate affections likewise, and the danger into which by *Nise* and her friends he was drawne; together with his no lesse happy escape from imprisonment. After this, hee began to consider the sinfull course he was now in, which hee ought rather to leaue, or indeed conuert his life into a deuout and Christian profession. Lastly (weighing with himself) that happely all those Religious soules were not indebted to such bitter sacrifices, nor worthy for their crimes of the torments they put themselves to, that his iustly might merit; yet notwithstanding, they (poore men) tearing their macerated flesh, held on that strict course; his contrition was such, that without further expectation shutting the doores of his desires, and retiring  
his

his vwearied remembrance from the intimate affection of *Lisis*, he resolved to leaue her and it in the state it now was: and vvith this happy determination, about to returne, he stumbled and had like to haue fallen vpon his man, who carelesse enough of any such accident, lay fast asleepe vpon the cold earth, not hauing in all this vvhile once perceiued his Master, vvhich made him not a little vvonder, but awaking him, he bade him follow; and so they held on their way, faire and softly to the Citie. So farre backe on his vvay was hee gotten, as to come inſt euē vvith *Lisis* her Tower and Bay-window; vvho no ſooner ſaw one paſſe by (as being ſure it could be no other then her Louer) but with a tender and pittifull voyce ſhe began to call him; which notes, touching *Gerardo's* eares, (like *Syrens* accents) worked in him the effects, that they in the heedleſſe Mariner, depriuing him ſo ſtrangely of his remembrance, as if there neuer had beene any ſuch things as vvhat formerly beſell him: ſo, vnable to go further on (the ſtrong *Remora* of his diſordinate luſt ſeizing his ill-gouern'd Barke) hee returned backe where his Miſtris expected him: excuſing as well as he could, his ſtay; but ſhe (deſiring more neerely to bee ſatiſfied) caſt downe the Rope, to which as hee would haue tyed the Ladder, foure men roſe haſtily vp, out of thoſe ouer-growne weedes that encompaſſed the walles, and with drawne ſwords ſet vpon him and his ſeruant. It may well be ſuppoſed how much the accident amazed him, but perceiuing the certaintie of his danger, he fell as ſpeedily to his defence. *Gerardo* (by reaſon of the Ropes ſhortneſſe to faſten the Ladder to it) had gotten vpon a little dung-hill, which ſtood to more aduantage then the reſt of the ground, ſo raiſed by ſome traſh that was ordinarily throwne out of the windowes, whereby his enemies (not able to incompaſſe him round) were forced to come all before, which made



made his resistance somewhat the lesse difficult; though all had beene insufficient, if at the same instant, with the noise and plashing of weapons, some other company had not issued out of the house, who came in to the hottest of the skirmish. These were the Father of *Lisis* and his Kinsmen, who lying in close ambush to effect their purpose, and seeing by the other vnlooke-for occasion their reuenge was prevented; yet thinking that now with lesse danger they might apprehend or kill the partie, they made forward to the euent: but heauen was pleased to free *Gerardo* from that extremitie, and to permit, that they, who fought with him, supposing these new commers were of his partie, began to retire, so that he encouraged too by the approach of the latter, (presuming vpon what his Contraries imagined) began now with his seruant to let flie at them amaine, laying manfully about him, as they in like manner sent their returne of blowes; till at length the one partie pressing forward, and the other, flying backward, they were gotten as low as certaine Elmes that adorne the Valley, where (inui-roned with darknesse) one of those that first set vpon *Gerardo* fell downe, crying out for confession; which *Gerardo* no sooner heard, but calling to his man to make away, they both by helpe of the thicke-growing trees hid themselues, and fetching a wide compasse, returned to the Citie, and himselfe to Sanctuary.

At this time *Lisis*, (who seeing the mortall danger her Louer was in, was faine into a faint swoone, and new come out of it) no sooner tooke notice of her father and kindred, when, perswaded verily that they knowing of her affection, meant by that cruell meanes to preuent her, and ouercome with this miserable imagination, fearing the like sacrifice should be made of her; and at last hearing that pittifull voyce from amidst the armed troope call for confession: withall,



withall, that her father and friends returned hastily into the Fort, her amorous passion suggesting to her, it was her *Gerardo*, surprized with her sudden griefe, and none neere to comfort or hinder her, (having the Ladder in her hand) without farther delay she stepped vpon it; but had scarce gone foure steps downe, when intangled in her coates, and weakened by the sudden affrightment, or the secret iudgement of high Heauen so disposing it, she tumbled downe to the ground, at the instant that her father arriuing in the height of his reuengeful furie, to his sad griefe & soules torment, became a wimes of the lamentable disaster, the bitterness of which bereauing him of iudgement, he was euen ready to haue accompanied his vnfortunate child: they that accompanied him too, came out with Torch-light; but going to the place where *Lisis* fell, found her not, for (by reason of the hilles slopenesse thereabouts, and the force of her fall with her owne forgetfulnesse) shee was sent as farre as the thicke Elmes, where the party fell, that the wretched Dame tooke for her Louer; and (though pitifully bruised with her fall) it seemed she would be a sharer with him in his mortall agonie. Here then with extremity of anguish, the discomfortable father found her, and though the vitall breath had not quite left the pale disfigured Trunke, shee was as good as dead; whose miserable body the father taking in his armes, and sprinkling her wanne face with his teares, acknowledging (too late his rash proceeding) such and so great were his wofull lamentations, as might haue turned a *Niobe* to softnesse: but his griefes did not so end, for his kinsmen going to see the dead *Gerardo* that lay in those gloomie shades, (resolved of their doubts) to their strange admiration, might perceiue the death-strucke bodie of the gallant *Liseno*, whose reuengefull mind had hurried him to that end, he (you may remember) offended with *Lisis*, and  
enuying

enuying the happinesse of her new Louer, not onely contriued the Letter, and aduice given to her father, but alsoone also as he had notice of the Prisoners escape, suspecting, and not without likelihood, that at one time or other hee would not faile shortly to see his Mistris, (his opinion not deceiuing him) hee purposed so to handle the matter, that *Gerardo* might no longer follow his pretension; and thinking that to take reuenge cruell enough of *Lisis*, vvas, to remoue from her the cause of her affection: vvith this intent hauing seuerall nights vvatched *Gerardo*, this (his owne last) hee tooke three of his friends vvith him, (sure friends indeed, that so basely forsooke him vvhen he had his deaths wound) that hiding themselues in the ouer-growne Weedes, set vp-on *Gerardo*, vvith the successe here set downe. Now *Lisis* her father and his kindred fearing the generall danger, that might befall them, returning to the sad Mansion, they indevoured all they could for some time, to conceale the wo-full Tragedie; but it was not possible for them to do so, in respect of the noyse and shriekes of the mother and her maides, together vvith the lowde exclamations of the pit-tifull *Aminta*, that breaking thorow the ayre, made known the vvhole proceeding: so that now euery man began to shift for himselfe the best he could. All the rest of the night, and part of the next day, vvas the vnfortunate *Lisis* dying, and at last in the morning, in the East of her age, her life was set, and shee expiring, gaue vp her noble spirke to her pious Maker.

Farre from the least thought of his Mistrisses sudden end, (vvhilst these things passed) was *Gerardo* secure in his Couent, now in contemplation of his incredible accidents, and rendring high Heauen condigne thanks, that pleased to free him from the danger. In fine (his night passing on in such profitable watchfulnesse) day approached, by what time

time *Liseno's* bloody end was divulged thorow the whole Cittie, and consequently the vntimely death of the faire *Lisfis* came to her Louers cares. At first the vnlikelihood banished all credit from *Gerardo's* brest, but beeing visited by his brother *Leoncio*, he not onely told him the certaintie of that, but vvithall, that *Gerardo* vvas made a principall actor in the businesse; vvich at first so dismayed, and next, cast him into such an outrage, that had not his brother more by plaine force, then forcible reasons, detained him, hee had (doubtlesse) crying out like a mad man, ran into the Cittie, and committed himselfe into the hands of the Iudges; who, now extremely incensed at the haplesse accident, (and as if the poore Gentleman had beene guilty of all) they caused extraordinary search to be made for him, as vvell in particular houses, as Churches and Monasteries, (which knowne to the discret *Leoncio*, and vvifely apprehended by *Gerardo*) the danger forced him to shift for himselfe; and so to his griefe he disposed of his flight, and vvithin two dayes in an Euening, he left the famous *Iberia*, resolved to bid his native Countrey *Spaine* Adieu for euer; vvith which purpose embracing his brother, and vnwilling (for the secrecie of his affaires) to make vse of any seruant, hee tooke his vvay toward the next fitting Sea-Port: but yet before hee went, hee left and performed the last funerall Obsequies, due to the sacred Memorie of his lucklesse *Lisfis*, in these Elegiacall Verses:

Pure spirit! that lea'st thy body to our mone,  
 From whence, now dis-imprison'd, thou art gone  
 To thy more happie Region; where, each Field,  
 Eternall Aprill of faire flowres doth yeeld.  
 Looke, if the Soule can downeward looke, and see  
 A Soule (once thine) all seares, for want of thee:

when I was doubly pris'ner by thine eyes,  
 How little dream't I of, Here *Lisis* lies?  
 Or, when a smile would her *Gerardo* blesse,  
 Little, that earth, thus early should possesse  
 So faire a Casket. Little thought indeed,  
 Base wormes on sixteene yeeres sweet flesh should feed.  
 So, fruites are in their blossomes nip't by frost:  
 So, a tall ship, that oft the Seas hath crost,  
 At last, when glad some Port she leanes behind,  
 How the smooth waters court her, and false wind,  
 Till, when a sudden gust and storme doth rise,  
 Rocke-dashed, she becomes the Oceans prize.  
 Live (yet) my *Lisis*, on thy Marble Tombe,  
 whilst Time beares date, free from Oblivions doome:  
 That, when the world's last passenger drawes neere,  
 In in-corrupted letters may appeere:

Here *Lisis* lies, that leap't from vitall breath,  
 To meet a Lover in embrace of death.

Having travelled all night, day came on, vvith vvhose  
 approach and cleerenesse, he vv as a little reuiued; yet hol-  
 ding the light lesse secure for the safety of his trauell, vvith-  
 out delay, (to auoid the danger of such as might follow  
 him, leauing the roade) he got into the thickest and vvildest  
 parts of the famous *Alpuxarran* Mountaines. His nights  
 waking and vvearinesse made him drowzie, so that looking  
 about him for a fit place to giue his body some rest in, vpon  
 the sudden a noise and hollow murmure of some persons  
 neere hand diuerted him from his purpose. Many times  
 the very shaking of leaues causeth suspicion in those that are  
 (like *Gerardo*) flying; and so a slighter cause might haue  
 troubled him. He vv as euen about to haue turned backe  
 againe,

again, but (ere aware) he vvas too farre engaged, and gotten so neere, that stirring either forward or backward, hee must needes be discouered; vvhwherefore confirming his vva- uering resolution, he determined to goe on; and so tying his horse to a Masticke tree, he alighted, and taking his Petronell, that hung at the Saddle-bow, in his hand, the better (if need should be) to defend himselfe, hee vvent very gingerly on, toward the place, from whence he heard the noise: and vvilling to approach as neere as was possible, by and by a lamentable voyce increasing by degrees vpon him, made him at length take stand, and giue eare to the ensuing dole- full expressions.

Is it possible, *Don Diego*, that so beastly and lustfull a passion should thus brutishly depriue thee of all humanitie? and if for thine owne sake thou bee not at all mooued, yet, can the blood of thy noble Kinsman, and the knowing mee to be his, preuaile no more to stay thee from thy barbarous attempt? To these complaints, he might also by the changing of the voyce, heare this reply: 'Tis vaine (faire and cruell Owner mine) with lowd words to hinder my pleasure, there being nothing to keepe me from the satisfying that, from vvhich (had my Cousin, as thou deniest, enioyed thee) 'twere impossible to dissuade me; and therefore protract not, Sweet, my glory, by enforcing mee to lose all pittie. Ay me! what shall I doe? replied the other, with a mourn- full grone: Cannot my teares, *Don Diego*, make thee relent? nor the forc't pleasure of a rauish't creature? well, since my curst fortune hath brought me to this sad passe, be assured, that before thou execute thy lustfull purpose, it shall bee first with my death. Here the afflicted voyce gaue ouer, leauing *Gerardo* in deepe suspence with her wofull complaints: who perceiuing that they beganne to grow now to extremitie, determined rather to lose his life, then not re-  
leue



leue the distressed party; and thinking it to bee the act of Heauen, to guide him to so necessary a remedy, rushing forward with his Petronel aduanc't, hee came to the place, where he might see two men struggling on the grasse, (one of them (as it seemed) the partie, that vanquished, sent out those grones) which spectacle so moued *Gerardo*, that extremely intraged, clapping his Pistoll to his girdle, and drawing his sword, he made to the Couple: but no sooner got the guiltie party a sight of him, when letting loose the other, that lay quite breathlesse vnder him, he auoyded the first blow; but running to lay hold on his weapon that lay by the rest of his Clothes, hee was preuented by a second from *Gerardo*, who (reaching him with a terrible slash in the head) made him tumble sencelesse to the ground; where he had presently dispatch't him, (so much had his basenesse incensed him) had not the other stepping betweene with teares begged his life. *Gerardo* till then had not scene that face, nor the intangled tresses of haire, which were loosened in the aforesaid contention; and therefore perceiuing his mistake, and that the party (though disguised) was a woman, he granted her request, and time to him that lay on the ground, to rise; but so shrewdly hurt, and disheartened with the losse of much blood, that minding no other reuenge then the sauing his life, he asked leaue of *Gerardo* to depart; who (reuling him a little for his vn-worthinesse) soone condescended, and courteously first helped him to mount vpon one of the two horses that stood tyed vp to the hedge.

*Gerardo* was not so heedlesse, but that (seeing in what manner this man parted) he sought to preuent all danger, and making knowne so much to his new companion, helping her withall to horse, and mounting his owne, they hastened to the high-way, riding speedily on, till such time, as



(supposing they were far enough from the former place) they alighted to passe the heate of the day, each of them chusing in the pleasant solitude of those Mountaines a convenient shelter.

The earnest desire *Gerardo* had to haue full notice of this past Aduenture, bred no small care in him, maruelling as well at the v unexpected chance, as the singular beauty and good parts of the afflicted Dame; who, considering, in what hazzard she had been, and the danger from which *Gerardo* freed her, extremely thankfull to his Noble proceeding, was ledde on with the same thoughts touching him, desiring by all meanes to know, who it was to whom she vvas so much obliged: wherefore, vnable to resist longer her affectionate longing, she first of the two, with this speech to *Gerardo*, broke silence.

When your generous proceeding, worthy Sir, might not warrant my curiositie, your vndaunted valour shewed in hazzarding your life, to repaire my honour, would tye me to request your name; since, knowing that, together with the noble parts wherewith Heauen hath blest you, I shall at least acknowledge with them the Owner of my life, to whom, for the restoring of mine honour it is indebted.

Lesse earnest intreaties would haue serued *Gerardo*, and made him passe by all difficulties or dangers to obey her; and therefore (loth) to lose aduantages, euen in courtesies, with a pleasing countenance he thus answered; Omitting, faire Gentlewoman, the small seruice I haue done you (which deserues not to call you a Debtor) the merit of so great beauty, and the disagreeing habit you weare, together with the late accident, make me so desirous to know their Originall, that I should be most willing to obey your command, if in exchange, I might vnderstand it: and, confident,  
that

that you vwill herein fauour me, referrring my felfe to your courtesie; you fhall know, that my Country is *Castile*, my birth-place *Madrid*, and my name (the first time happely you will haue heard it) *Gerardo*. *Gerardo* (said shee) if that be so ( with a blustering alteration she interrupted him) either you are he, whom of all the men in the world, I most desire to see, or there be more of the name : yet, to resolute my doubt, be pleased, I beseech you, to let me know, if you haue at any time beene a Prisoner, in the famous Citie of *Ilberis*. Well might *Gerardo* haue feared no few inconueniences by confessing this truth, but his free condition neither could nor would dissemble it; which the faire Dame no sooner vnderstood; when (her eyes swimming in teares of ioy) she ranne hastily to imbrace him, saying, 'Twas not possible for my remedy to proceed frō any other hand: and certainly to yours, Heauen hath reserued the cheering and ease of afflicted hearts: for, first you were not onely a comfort to my beloued *Leandro*, in that miserable estate of his imprisonment, but also, in these desarts, by your inestimable valour, you haue succoured me his wofull Pledge. Heauen that reserued you in both occasions for a remedie to our misfortunes, recompence what you deserue from *Violante* and *Leandro*, and so leauing her words, she beganne greedily againe to cast her armes about *Gerardo*, whose admiration I can hardly describe. When he heard this, and knew that shee before his eyes was the discreet Dame that cost his friend *Leandro* so many watchfull moments (as in the History so strange and notable you heard, vvhich vvas interrupted by *Gerardo's* remoouall to new imprisonment, that broke off the Tragical Narration: and therefore maruellously reioysing now with so admirable a successe) hee began with more lively affection, and courtesie, to offer his seruice, telling her, how much hee esteemed *Leandro*, and

how glad hee was at present ( had the danger beene farre greater ) to haue aduentured himselfe for one that so neerely concerned his friend : but withall his curiositie a-fresh inciting him (for *Violantes* strange disguise, and the vnexpected knowing her, equally moued him ) he could not but request her to leade him out of that Labyrinth, by letting him know how she came to her extremitie.

The faire Dame willing to expresse her gratitude, and hearing likewise from *Gerardo's* mouth, the most essentiall part of that pleasing Story of their loues, was glad (though to her honours cost) to afford him that small content ; and therefore taking her beginning, where *Leandro* ended, (not without a few teares, effects of a bitter remembrance) she began the rest of the History in this manner : There hath neuer beene enterprize so difficult ; but perseuerance hath attained vnto it ; whether *Leandro's* then were worthy a more glorious conquest, your selfe, Best *Gerardo*, shall bee Iudge, determining in your honoured brest, whether my resistance could haue beene greater, since it proceeded so farre, as to make me almost deserue the rigorous stile of a cruell *Anaxarete*.

Indeed (vanquisht at last) I resolued to equall his loue with like affection ; and ( to this purpose ) instructing him what he should doe, that wee might as that night enioy our selues ; the greatest part of the afternoone being spent, *Leandro* ( for so we agreed ) faining himselfe ill at ease, and telling my Husband hee would goe to bed, made as if hee went to his Chamber for that purpose ; but from thence (my good-man yeelding a fit opportunitie) hee went out, leauing his owne doore but pulled too, and so came to my Chamber, where, for more assurance, I made him get betweene the bed-Curtaines and the wall.

This diligence was of necessity to be vsed before-hand,  
for

for my wary Owner at night vsed to locke our Chamber doore, and that which was neereſt *Leandro's*: who (by the way) had alſo deſired my Husband, that hee ſhould by no meanes awake him, becauſe (as he ſaid) his want of reſt was the cauſe of his indiſpoſition: but this was to preuent any longing deſire to ſee him: my heart was at this time in a ſtrange diſtraction of ioy and feare; for, vnaccuſtomed to ſuch cares, the expectation of my pleaſure was much leſſened, and happely this vnquiet alteration in me, might bee the fore-runner of the ſad ſucceſſe you ſhall ſtraight heare.

I know not how it came to paſſe, but from the firſt day of my *Leandro's* being with vs, there was a great league of friendſhip, betweene him and the Vicar of our towne, by whom he was for his vvants ſupplied vvith moneyes, and now and then viſited.

This Vicar hauing been abſent from him all the time of his ſickneſſe, comming home as that night from a iourney, and vnderſtanding by his people in how great danger *Leandro* had been, ſuppoſing he performed not the part of a good friend, if he did not (as ſoone as he had knowledge of his ſickneſſe, ſee him) leauing his owne houſe, immediately he came to ours, vvhere (though the doore was ſhut) hee called our, and my Husband hearing his Voice, preſently roſe and opened vnto him. I could not in any time know vvho it vv as; for careleſſe too of any danger, the deſire only of ſeeing my good-man laid to reſt, kept me awake, and thus I wanted meanes to ſhift *Leandro* away; for whom the Vicar asked, and for all his ſickneſſe and deſire of reſt vv as made knowne vnto him, yet he would not be ſatiſfide nor away, vvithout ſeeing him: whereupon my Husband not vvilling to gaineſay his will, was glad to obey him; vvhen (calling at the Chamber) he no ſooner touched the doore,

but he might see it open, and *Leandro* missing, so that with no small alteration hee vvent downe and told the Vicar so much, & assuring himselfe he must needs be within doores, besides, his iealous condition easily egging and perswading him on, at last he traced out the truth, and our hard fortune; and so hastily dispatching away the Vicar, vnable longer to keepe in his torment, he instantly came running into our Chamber; vvhether finding me at my wits end, and my colour quite lost (for the discovered businesse had left me like a dead body) confirming his suspition, he began to pry vp and downe the roome. Imagine, good *Gerardo*, to vvhether extremitie I was brought, that though my imminent danger was so neere, I had not the power or strength to runne into some place of safety. My husband hauing espied *Leandro*, ranne at him with his sword: but hee perceiuing before-hand his danger, had presently gotten to the light; and (putting it out) had meanes to slip by the thrust; but his persecutor running blindly on, stopped not, till hee had clozed with him, so that I might now perceiue they vv ere both grappled together, though my faint heart durst now no longer stay to expect the issue; and supposing the worst, running suddenly down to the street doore, I left my house, and stopped not, till I was gotten into the fields (fortune being in this more fauourable to me, then my misfortunes could expect) for falling accidentally vpon the high-way to *Iberis*, a Coach passed by thitherward with passengers, who (when I had recommended my miseries with a world of sighes and teares to their pitties) were so compassionately charitable, as to take me along with them to the aforesaid Citie; whither as soone as I arriued, making sale of those few Jewels I wore at my eares, necke and hands, with the moneyes, I might for some time relieue my necessities. Heauen likewise was pleased to affoord me the happinesse  
and



and company of certaine vertuous Gentlewomen, with whom after I had some few dayes remained, I dispatcht a secret Messenger to *Osuna*, charging him, strictly to inform himselfe of my vnfortunate affaires, and giuing him likewise a Letter for my *Leandro*, if (to my grieffe and suspicion) he had bin that night taken Prisoner, which indeed could not otherwise be, considering how subiect I left him to my Husbands clutches and cryes. (All which effected, and the Messenger returned) I vnderstood by *Leandro's* lines, what had passed from the very instant, that my fright sent me packing: at which time, as my husband and hee were struggling together, *Leandro* perceiuing, that if either he got the aduantage, himselfe was sure to be slain, or, that the other with his noise might call vp the warch, so that his danger vvas euery way equall, relying wholly vpon his naturall defence of life, and forced as it were to a desperate course, he stabbed my Husband with a Ponyard he had on, whereof vvithin few houres he dyed. *Leandro* tooke Sanctuary in the first Church he could finde open: where being by diuers persons laid vvait for, as a stranger they persecuted him, and the Iustice of the place taking notice of the businesse, causing a strong Guard to watch about the Church, hindred his sally: yet his friend the Vicar sticke close to him, as had the case beene his owne, resisting their going about to take him from the holy refuge, vvich, indeed at first they sought to haue done *de facto*. My soule euen melted vvhen I read these wofull passages, as well for hauing liued so long in my Husbands company, as in respect also of the tender affection hee alwaies bore me: and lastly, considering him by my light proceeding, so vnhappyly made away, could not out in a brest of Marble haue caused a lamentable effect.



But my passion shall not prolong my Story, which (not longer to trouble you, or afflict my selfe) I much desire to end. And therefore, Noble Sir, considering my being alone for want of my Louer, and the impossibilitie of souldring my errour, determining to seeke his protection that was the cause of it, I vvrote to him a second Letter, desiring him by all meanes to leaue the place vvhere he was, and come to me, making knowne vnto him (the better to dispose him to the iourney) my great affliction; which he no sooner receiued, when, not without great danger, furthered by his friend the Vicar, he accomplished my desire. But Heauen or my aduerse fortune permitted not that it should take effect: for *Leandro* had no sooner set footing on the threshold of my doore, when, encompassed by officers (though he did all he might to defend himselfe) he was seized on and carried to Prison: so farre preuailed the vigilant sagacitie of my Husbands kindred, who following him that night hee left *Osuna*,; and keeping aloofe till hee was alighted, had leisure to prepare Officers, that, following him to my lodging, he was no sooner come thither (I hearing his voice, & rising to let me in) but hee was beset with clamour and noise. Wherefore seeing my new danger, instantly crossing our Turrets and Tyles of houses, I got mee into safety, in which I was not a little happy, for they left no place in my house vnsearched, induced by their suspicions of *Leandro's* comming thither.

To declare the torment this second disaster bred in me, were to begin a new Tragedy; and therefore leauing it as superfluous, you shall heare the rest of our successe. My courage was not lost, rather, after some few considerations, began more to increase, since, now in person I might see

see my *Leandro*, and by comming disguised, and at vnseasonable times to one of the Prison gates, speake to him; where I had full notice of all these particulars: withall he told me how contentedly he liued, and was lodged vvith you in your Chamber, till such time as your remoouall from Prison, made vs both (without flattery) lesse happy.

With this poore comfort at the aforesaid place, we gaue some little ease to our griefes, though fortune, not satisfide with what wee had already suffered, so disposed our affaires, that our enemies had notice of our priuate conference, yet there wanted not some friends, who, by way of anticipation did let *Leandro* know, how fit it was for him not to let me perish, but prouide for my safety: which he presently put in practise, taking order to send me as secretly as might be with this Letter of his to the Citie of *Almeria*, with which (re-commending mee to the care and company of certaine Gentlewomen his kindred) he committed me to a Cousin-germanes of his to accompanie me in the iourney, and serue mee in any occasions by the way; who performed the trust giuen to his charge so faithfully, that, had I not, by Heauens good prouidence, and your noble courage bin relieued, I had either by this time been by him slaine, or deprived of mine honour by his barbarous lust.

Here the distressed *Violante* ended her so long-wisht-for Story by *Gerardo*, which made present vvay to his thanks, who, as full of admiration, as the strangeness of those accidents required, perceiuing the gracefull Dame begin to sigh a-fresh, commiserating her solitude, and the being by her base companion left, his noble heart not suffering him to doe lesse, regardlessse of lifes hazzard, hee resolved to accompany her, till such time as she might safely arrive at her  
wished

wished iourneys end. Within a day or two they came to the Citie of *Almeria*, where *Violante*, deliuering the Letter of her imprisoned Louer to his Kinswomen, was by them ioyfully receiued: and *Gerardo* thinking now hee had fully complide with all humanitie, (not without teares and a lo-ving imbrace from the sad Dame) tooke leaue, and parted: And hearing that in the next Port-Towne a Ship was ready to set sayle for *Genoa*, glad of his passage, agreeing with the Master, he purposed with the next dayes faire winde, to leaue *Spaine*, and begin his Voyage.

*The end of the first Discourse of the  
second Part.*

---

THE



THE SECOND PART  
OF  
GERARDO,  
THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD:

*The second Discourse.*



GERARDO with the nights approach withdrew to his Chamber, where his memorie renewing past disasters, and wandring in their vvretched contemplation, with this vvatchfulnesse hee stole some howers (before it vvas due) vpon soft rest: and so, vanquished vvith leaden slumber, he committed his wearie eies to sleepe. But not long had hee beene settled to this slumbering,

bring, vwhen his fancie falling to vvorke, made him dreame, that his Lodging was beset with Officers, who comming to apprehend him, had broken the doore vpon him. This fright tossing him to and fro, soone awoke him, so that opening his eyes, and looking about him, he might by the snuffe of a candle left burning by him, see a white Bulk rushing in at a window, that not farre from his beddes head was violently pushed open, which caused such a sudden alteration in him, that though hee had it fast in his armes, he could hardly belecue it was a naked man, that in one hand carried a small fardle, and in the other his sword; on whose Hilt the warie *Gerardo* caught hold, and was about to haue raised the house, had not the vnexpected Ghest with gentle intreaties, and this ensuing discourse kept him from it: For Heauens sake, noble Signior, discouer me not, since my comming hither was no way to wrong you, but onely (to my griefe) to flie a most vnluckie danger; and hauing climbed from house to house, I could not till this time find a doore or window open, whereby I might escape those that I supposed followed mee. Pardon, deare Signior, my forc't rudenesse, and giue mee your succour, since Heauen and my good fortune haue imposed a necessarie obligation on you. The courteous *Gerardo* was stricke dumbe with this language, though re-collecting himselfe, not any way doubting the party, hee gaue him full credit, and (more compassionate) his armes to boote: whereby the other now somewhat secure, vnloosing presently his fardle, began to clothe himselfe, and soone appeared as gallant to *Gerardo's* sight, as hee had (but euen now) ghastly; who fel into a new admiration also by the following euent. The equall fright that possessed both, had hitherto robbed them of their better heed; but beeing each now more quieted, they no sooper tooke a fresh view of one another, when

*Gerardo*

*Gerardo* was knowne by his new companion, and he also by *Gerardo*; who with no small amazement, first breaking silence, said, If I dreame not, and my eyes be not enchanted, this is not the first time they haue seene you. You are in the right, worthy *Gerardo*, said the other; for, time was, when wee were companions in miserable imprisonment, from whence I by a heauy sentence was freed, the same day that your self was remooued to the strong Fort of *Alhambra*; frō thence (as since also I heard) you fortunately escaped. Gladder would *Gerardo* haue beene that his misfortunes had beene lesse publike; but making no shew of distrust in his friend, hee rose vp, and cheerefully embracing, throughly knew him to be *Claudio Alcino*, a Gentleman of good qualitie of *Almeria*; who from thence, after long imprisonment, vpon some offences was remooued to *Granada*: hee returning the like courtesie, and infolding *Gerardo* in his clasped armes, sayd, In these armes I may rest well assured of my safetie, which are sufficient to free mee from a greater danger then the present, though this bee not so small, but it might much trouble some other, destitute of your valorous companie. Your courtesie preuents the phrase that I ought rather to vse, quoth *Gerardo*, but our danger is equall, and therefore let vs equally comply vpon all occasions with our obligation. From this they passed on to other discourse, till by little and little they fell vpon the occasion that brought *Claudio* to the narrow strait. *Gerardo* desired to know it, not so much out of any curiositie, as to giue his friend the best aduice he could, for preuenting growing inconueniences; who gheffing at *Gerardo's* intent, though the night inuited them to a more quiet diuersion, engaged in the businesse (the other attentiuely listning) he thus began: Though you may haue heretofore knowne the cause of my imprisonment, as beeing the originall of this present successē,



celle, it shall be necessarie, that I refresh it here againe, but with all the succin&nesse that may be. Some fixe yeeres since, from the Cittie of *Marcia*, to this place where now we are, to discharge an Office which the King had conferred vpon him, there came a Gentleman with his house and family; and amongst them a faire daughter, vvwhose rare personage hath beene and is, the chiefe subiect of my misfortunes: her name, for some respects, I conceale, though to make good the Story, wee will supply it with *Silvia*, to whom my cruell lot so violently destin'd me, that from the very first moment in which I beheld her, neither tedious absence, nor infinite troubles, haue once beene able to temper the heate of my burning affection; which from the very first instant increasing, continuing more and more, grew to be a flame. The first time I saw her was at a Bull-running, where hauing vpon a goodly Ginet performed seuerall luckie exploitcs, I began to be gratefull to her eyes; and vpon a second encounter, as shee was comming from Church, more gracious; at which time I was bold to speake to her, and finding encouragement not long after, I vvrote, and to her liking prosecuted my loue, with such continuance, but warinesse withall, as that, obliged by my frequent importunitie, she came many nights to her Window to discourse with me; these treaties gaue stronger nourishment to my wishes, which by my faithfull perseuerance also were maturely seasoned: In so much that when nothing (not *Silvia's* affection) but the manner was to my happy possession wanting, my vvunfortunate starres prouoked the forwardnesse of a proper Gentleman of *Genoa*, one of the best qualified persons naturalized amongst vs in this Cittie, to be my Riual: and when I doubted no such matter, he began to court my Mistris, who gaue me present notice of it, vvunwilling to incurre my suspicion, rather so preuented it: well might this  
faith.

faithfull prooffe of her loue excuse her; but vnſatisfied, opened the gates to infernall Ielouſie, which euen ſcorched my very ſoule. Oh, how oftentimes, friend *Gerardo*, in this hard plight, would I contemne and ſlight my oppoſite? how oft, confident of my *Silvia's* loyalty, was I comforted in my paine? which inſtantly (fearing the remembrance of womans frailtie) was encreaſing: thus fell I from one thought to another; and then reſuſing all, ran blindly on in the conſuſed maze of my cares, driven on by differing gales of winde; for, miſerable is the nauigation of a ielous Lover. Long ſuffered I in this infirmitie, which is ſcarce yet remooued, but cleaueth to my very intrailles: and though the remedie lay as then, in mine owne hands, yet my loue to *Silvia*, and the reſpect to her reputation, held me backe; (the vnwiſer I) for had I happily taken that courſe, my affaires not once comming to this paſſe, might haue had better ſucceſſe. Every day my loue produc't new changes: for with *Aſcanio's* continuall walkes and watchfulneſſe, (for this is, if not the right name, that which at preſent onely I muſt declare) I neither could ſpeake to *Silvia*, nor ſhee ſee me, with the priuacie we were wont; and ſo, many a night his importunate care broke off our diſcourſe in the miſt of our moſt pleaſing conuerſation; whereupon, my deſpite increaſing, and my patience by little and little wholly diminiſhed, being one day in conuerſation amongſt friends, I grew, for a very ſlight matter, in choler with him, and ſo from words to blowes, we fell to, and I on a ſudden raught him a cut vpon the head. The Spectators (ignorant of the myſterie) ſome of them accuſed me of Hare-brain'd raſhneſſe, but others leſſe paſſionate, who afforded mee their better cenſures, ſounding the matter, found the full depth of it: and as in theſe leſſe populous places, ſuch circumſtances are hardly concealed, there wanted not ſome, who made:

made relation of what happened, to *Silvia's* parents and mine, and gaue notice likewise to *Ascanio* of their doubts, though I presume for him the labour might well haue been spared; for sure he could not be ignorant of vvhhat hee had deserued. My parents hereupon thought best to secure their feares; for seeing mee so ingaged in *Silvia's* affection, they vvvere afraid lest I vvould marry her, for their mindes were much against it; as being now also in treatie with the friends of a Kinswoman of ours for me: and therefore they sent me away cunningly to *Senil*, telling me, that it was for my safetie; vvvhich I beleeued, and ignorant of their purpose, easily condescended, taking first leaue of my *Silvia*, who, though she much grieued, yet assured of my loue, preferred my good, before her owne content.

In this absence, by meanes of a seruant, I receiued my Mistresses Letters, and sent their Answers; vvvhich beeing faithfully put into the Post-house, came safely to each of our hands; yet, one amongst the rest I receiued, turned my ioy into mournfull teares. About a moneth after I had bene absent, *Silvia* vvrote to mee, that her parents, after long deliberation, at the intreaties of some principall intercessors, had promised her to my enemy *Ascanio* in marriage; and that though shee refused it by might and maine, (knowing the cause of her contradiction) they kept her so close and afflicted, that she vvvas almost become desperate, and resolutely determined rather to lose her life, then mee, pleased I to accept of her as a vvife; and so accordingly she expected my answer, and vvith her amorous conclusion, lett me on such termes, that vvithout any delay, baited by my terrible feares, I got me a good Mule for my iourney, as thinking, the surest answer vvould bee my selfe in person. But my contrarie fortune disposed more crossely of my happinesse, then I expected; for hauing made vvhat  
speed

speed I could, passing neere the Cittie of *Antequera*, and crossing over a Foord carelesse, that by the extraordinarie showres that had falne, vvas risen, my beast at her very first step tumbled ouer head and eares, and caught by the Current, vvas after drowned, hauing left me cruelly wounded, by a blow she lent me, for a farewell, vvith her heeles: in vvwhich mortall danger I had there suddenly perished, had I not beene drawne out by certaine men that issued out of a Water-mill hard by, though in so bad plight, that hauing quite lost my sences, after I had remained some two dayes in this manner, awaking out of the drowzie astonishment, I might perceiue my selfe in bed at an Inne of *Antequera*; vvhere, after many fittes and changes, now in health, and then vvithout it, I vvas euen giuen ouer for a dead man, till at last vvithin some forty daies I recouered; in vvwhich time, though I vvrote to *Silvia* and my friends, yet, vvhat by carelesnesse of messengers, or my ill lucke (the more likely) would so haue it, not a Letter came safe vnto them, neither, with the forgetfulnesse my hurt caused in mee, had I the braine to send them by an expresse bearer. At length making vse of a Chaine of Gold I had, vvwhich my disaster yet had left me, I payed for my Cure and other charges, and so held on my voyage, comming (as ill lucke vvould haue it) to this Cittie, the very same day, that my Mistris, overcome by the perswasions or her friends threats, but most of all by the neglect and small estimation, vvwhich I (in her opinion) made of her Letters, and suspecting (more then shee needed) that I had forgotten her, shee gaue her hand to my Contrarie; vvho, not able to deferre his happinesse, vvould needes the very same day to Church; and so, about ten of Clocke in the morning, as I entred the high street of the Cittie, passing before the Church doore, I became a miserable vvitnesse of the present solemnitie; seeing my beloued

Mistris, in the midst of a great troope, hand in hand with her new Spouse.

Here, friend *Gerardo*, as if heaven and earth should come together, I forsooke the Reines, and (a spectacle of misery) was with the vnexpected accident, transformed (as it were) into an vn-mooued Image: but calling presently againe to mind my former loue, past pleasures, and my paines taken, to see another now Owner of the fruit, so horrible vvas my soules anguish, that (void of all consideration) my iudgement quite gone, and nothing left, but a desire to satisfie my griefes, from the Saddle thue I, and vvith my drawne sword, in midst of the presse, set vpon him; vvho, in all probability, to be reuenged on me, had demanded *Silua* to wife, and crying out like a mad man, before hee could defend himselfe, or any other assist him, he receiued (if not so many as I could haue wished) wounds sufficient to lay him along; where I had also dispatcht him, had it not beene more needfull for mee, to looke to mine owne life. And though I vvas hard beset by some Kinsmen and friends of his, yet some acquaintances of mine running in to the noise, by their helpe I escaped the danger: but not so surely euery way, since before I could get the Church for my Sanctuarie, some Officers ouertooke mee at the very doore. They presently conueyed me to strong hold, and the successe diuulged, that *Ascanio* was dying; his kindred fearing my friends would be too powerfull for them in this place, repaired to the Royall Chancerie, by which meanes (though the wounded partie were out of danger) I was remooued to the Prison of *Granada*, where your selfe and I grew first acquainted: in vvhich Cittie, not long after, *Ascanio* perfectly recovered, pursued the matter so eagerly against me, that had I not found especiall friends, it might haue gone but ill with mee: but hee at last was forced to  
rest



rest satisfied, onely with my banishment from this Kingdome, not to returne againe on paine of death. *Silvia*, whilst I remained thus Prisoner, still continued her affection, and (by meanes of the aforesaid seruant) to write to mee; discharging her selfe from all blame, by alledging the violence of Parents, but chiefly my neglect: so that, considering she had reason, I, without it, began againe to plunge my selfe as deepe as euer, (her Letters beeing the principall comforts to my fetters.) So blinded was I with this womans affection, that (though any mans else, as hauing lost her, might haue beene cooled) I quite contrarie, for the same reason *Afcanio* enioyed her, more violently loued her then euer; and was now ielous of another mans wife. And not passing fixe dayes since, I receiued this Letter, vvhich *Claudio* drawing out of his Pocket, *Gerardo* approaching neeter to the dimme light, might view the following Contents:

*Our sad fortune, my Claudio, doth now abate her rigour, since at this time shee offers vs a so long wished opportunitie: my husband is absent, and will bee yet some dayes from home; see, whether the occasion would be lost, or if Silvia deserue to see those eyes. Omit not then the faire coniuncture, and coming warily: on Thursday at midnight I will expect you at my doore. When these Lines shall come to you, you will not fayle. Farewell, deare Owner mine: Heauen send you safely hither.*

This Letter (proceeded the tender Louer) I receiued in *Granada* at a Friery, where I had taken Sanctuary, and instantly, with what content you may imagine, I fulfilled her desire: arriuing punctually as yesterday in the euening at a Village, some halfe a League short of this place: vvhether leauing my horse, I came on foot, vnknowne, and vn-ac-



companied, saue by mine owne rashnesse, and quickly touched my Mistresses happy threshold, who there expected me. But the ioy my heart was possesst with in seeing her, was quickly dasht by a lucklesse accident, which as then hapned; for, after a noise and clashing of swords, iust as the doore opened to let mee in, one of the parties of the fray, flying backe, fell at my feete, crying faintly out he was killed. I perceiued my danger, if I stayed longer there; and therefore quickly got me in with *Silvia*, where (that hauing been the first time we euer met so neerely) I was so out of countenance, that I knew not vvhich way to begin to speake to her: (experience then teaching me how much, ouer-ioyed passion doth tongue-tye our expressions:) but at last with a tender sigh, forcing a way from my silence, I thus began:

What greater prooue of my affection and fidelitie could I render, since forgetting my iust exceptions, I come thus dangerously to your presence? where though death should seize me in midst of my effected desires, I should not thinke my selfe at all vnhappy.

To this, *Silvia* with teares replied, To such loyaltie, all that my affection can answer, is; To runne thorow all the hazzards that may befall a woman (to her mis-fortune) in anothers power, to be euer truely yours: and thus both our affections shall still be equall: but (leauing this) my present griefe is, that, our content is like to last lesse time then I supposed, since, this day I receiued a Letter from my Husband, in which he writes, his returne is like to be very speedie; though for the time of his absence, neuerthelesse (besides that I haue alwayes beene yours) I shall more freely now be so.

These last words and her newes, were like crosse-barres in my soule; yet, (making a vertue of necessitie) hand in hand, we walked towards her Chamber, where I no sooner offered

red

red to take possession of what I longed for, vvhhen preuented from the sweet occasion, wee both were equally affrighted vvith a terrible noise and knocking at the houses fore-dooere and backe-gate.

At first I could not but thinke it was *Ascanio*; and, so, whilst my *Silvia* ranne fearfully to the window, I was about to haue dressed me: but, the sudden surprisall neuer gaue me the least aime; onely my memory serued me to make my cloathes vp in a bundle, and being ready to runne out of the roome where I was, *Silvia* laying hold on me, began to cry out more cheerefully then I could expect: Whither are you going, Sir? will you vndoo your selfe and me? 'Tis the Round that thus knockes in seuerall places, whom (doublesse) either your small heed, or my misfortune haue brought hither. In hearing this, I was quite out of my vvittes, and in two so imminent dangers vvholly vn-determinable, considering the breach of my banishment, and *Silvia's* infamy; who, bidding mee follow her, hearing lowder knocking, with her Maids helpe and hers, I got vp into the Chimney stocke, in midst vvhereof, finding an iron barre athwart that serued to the Pot-hooks, I stood vpon it, whilst *Silvia* getting on her Gowne, bade open: so that instantly, they of the Round were come vp, where I might heare what they would haue. The chiefe of them very ciuilly desired my Mistris to pardon their vn-mannerlinesse; for though her Husband was absent, yet they vn-willingly were forced to this diligence, by reason there was a man slaine at her doore; and, as some of the neighbours declared, the murderer at the instant when hee fell, ran in there.

My heart with this was not a little reuiued, but still some feare of my misfortune remained: and that, I hold to bee the seuerest, when vpon mistake, worse faults are discouered.

red. My Mistris with more confidence bade them search all the Chambers : for (besides that she was ignorant of the partie) she assured her selfe he durst not abide in her house , and therefore she willed them to look into all the Roomes, and not to leaue the least moate vnsearched. I, in the meane while, like a forlorne Sentinell , pierst thorow with the nights sharpe aire , and my feete galled with the narrow barre in extremitie of torment, knew not how longer to endure it : but perceiuing now by the hurry and shuffling of legs, weary of farther search, they took their leaues, I began to take heart, and faire and softly to descend ; which, that I might (wanting helpe) the better be able to performe , I sought to quit my sword ; willing to fasten it some-where by the Hilt , and groping in the wall, I found a hole about the opening of the Plaistred worke and the Bricks , into which I thrust one of the crosse-barres, and so, lesse cumbréd, returned to my intent : but my hard fortune not content with the former surprisall prepared for mee , brought on a second incomparably farre more frightfull : for no sooner was the *Round* got out of the streete , vwhen her Husband newly arriued from *Seuill*, and wondring to see his house at such an vnreasonable houre beset with troopes, entred.

Consider, friend *Gerardo*, my feare as soone as I beganne to heare his voice; yet *Silvia* (though the suddennesse amazed her) cunningly dissembling her distaste, and giuing him notice of what passed , brought him leisurely on into the roome, where I was, not dreaming till then of this second traunce. And certainly, had not shee by her purposed discourse giuen me a lowd warning, I had beene discouered, and both of vs ruined : for (ignorant of what passed) I was gotten more then halfe way downe, vwhen, taking notice of the present danger, not without infinit paine I turned back againe;

again; and had much adoo (considering my fright) to keepe my selfe from falling. Her Husband with much perswasion satisfied (for the rudenesse of the Officers much troubled him) by reason of his weary iourney, would needs goe to bed; but the seruants that came with him, called for their Supper. *Silvia*, though she were with *Ascanio*, hearing them, fearing (as I suppose) least they would make fire to dresse some viſuals, commanded that they should haue onely cold meate to stay their stomakes till morning; but they grumbled in that sort, that, her Husband hearing the noise, gaue new order, that (considering their wearinesse) they might haue something hot; so that clapping wood to the chimney, I was instantly nothing but sparkes & smoke. This danger being almost helpleſſe, made me madde, and therefore I resolued vpon a desperate course, rather to cast my selfe into mine enemies hands, then to be stifled in the vn-mercifull smoke and flames; and (ready to effect it) heauen that had not vtterly forsaken me, permitted, that, drawing out my sword where I had fastned it, vsing with the suddennesse more strength then needed, there dropt out a huge square Bricke, insomuch, that discovering now goodly broad Moone-light (a new remedy offered) I chang'd my purpose; and, for all the seruants below were in an uproare with the Bricke that fell; I beganne notwithstanding to vndoo some more, and to make way in the wall: from whence skipping vpon the Tyles, for their noise below hastened me (crying out, Here's the Murderer the *Round* fought for) I crossed from house to house, till at last, finding this window open, I cast my selfe (as you see) into your protection.

Here, *Gerardo* hearing the end of this desperate story, with admiration and new embraces gaue thanks to the Re-ator; and encouraging his friend withall wisely (for his

more conueniencie, and lesse danger) dissuaded him from an enterprize, which, it seemed, Heaven it selfe so manifestly contradicted. And continuing in their Discourse til day-broke, *Claudio*, with good aduice, determined to returne; and so hauing escaped the danger, with *Gerardo* in his company, they passed on to the first Village, and there friendly parted. He went toward *Granada*, and the same day in the afternoone, our *Gerardo* beeing imbarckt with fauourable wind set saile for the *Straits*. Much ioyed hee was, to see himselfe, after so stupendious miseries, now free and secured from his powerfull enemies, though the remembrance of *Liss* and her disastrous end, did something sowe his contentednesse. The pittifull successe indeed deserued a farre greater resentment, and therefore (no maruell) if his ioy and griefes were thus intermingled.

In this manner, sometimes reuoluing in his sad minde an infinitie of misfortunes, and then againe, hoping that thus leauing his natue soyle, their wofull remembrance would leaue him, *Gerardo* stroue to beguile the prolix wearinesse of his Voyage, and the discommodities of being at Sea: and thus they launcht (beeing gotten from sight of their Port) into the maine, steering their course directly for *Italy*.

The Master Marriners and Passengers were all generally filled with ioy, for the smooth calmnesse of the weather did almost assure them a happy passage: and so by Sunne-rise, they were gotten about threescore miles from the Coast.

The affaires of humane frailtie haue their ends as vncertaine, as their stablenesse vnure (a good fore-warning to our vaine confidence, & a true exprefion of the poore validitie and weake strength of mens designs.)

*Gerardo* well perceiued this truth, and his companions  
with



with him tasted of fortunes heavy indignation, feeling the power of her inconstancie: for before it was fully foure of the clocke, the ship-Boy with an out-cry from the Mainetop had discovered five Sayles, and not long after, to the terrible affrightment of the hearers, he replide they were Vessels of Barbary, Frigots of that Coast. The poore Passengers grew straight into a cold sweat, which, changing their bloudlesse colours into pale white, left them all equally amazed: but fore-warned by the certaintie of the danger, incouraging one another, and trusting to the Ships swiftnesse, with the faire winde they hoped to escape, and yet made ready for their defence.

*Gerardo* in this distresse made known to the whole company the noblenesse of his courage, by his resolute alacritic. By this time the Frigots that had a pretty while giuen the Ship chase, seeing her with the windes helpe gaine of them, mad to loose their booty, and scourging the waues, with the violence and fury of their Oares, they stroue to equall their speed; but they had infallibly lost their labour, had not the winde scanted vpon the poore Ship, leauing her by that meanes quite distrest, which the others perceiuing, soone fetcht her vp, incompassing her now vvith shoutes and noise. They within her, changed their first resolution; for, seeing themselues so suddenly becalmed, and considering the aduantage of their enemies, and that, though they neuer so well defended themselues, they could not auoid either being taken or sunke, to *Gerardo's* great griefe, who would rather haue dyed then yeilded, they strooke saile, without expecting so much as a shotte from the Enemy: which as soon as the Pyrats perceiued, they boarded her, & dis-arming them that were a-boord, (who with Mariners and others might bee some fortie persons) they also distributed them to their seuerall Vessels, and



and now, wonderfully gladdened with their prize, rowing her on with two of their Frigots they made for Barbary. The five Vessels had each of them foure and twenty Oares on a side : two of them belonged to one *Ferru* a Turke by Nation, and the rest to *Ali Mami* a Renegate Greeke : who (besides the present booty) had in this Voyage mett with many more of goods and Prisoners on the coast of *Spaine*, whom, in respect there wanted roome vnder hatches, some of them they kept chained on one side of the sterne: these were *Gerardo* and some five or sixe more, to whose lots it fell, to bee in the selfe-same Frigot where *Ferru* vvent, who, seeing *Gerardo's* goodly presence, (besides his being well clad) questioned much with him, till such time as hee was interrupted by a sudden balling noise which the Turks and Moores made, crying out that the Christian Rowers were vp in Armes, and meant to force away the Frigot. *Ferru* himselve all in a fright, presently sought to appease the tumult, frō whose beginning resulted the pitifull successe you straight shall heare: which (the better to expresse, and the barbarous cruelty of those impious Infidels, because it is the first torment that in this captiuitie afflicted the good *Gerardo's* heart) I will particularly set down the beginning and motiue of it. The Barbarians for ioy of their Prize, had licensed the poore Christian Slaues to rest, as hauing been wearied with their continuall former rowing; especially, with the last spell to ouertake the Ship: and being in this quietnesse, a Christian found, that one of two Turbants was missing, which amongst other things were committed to his charge (as the manner is) that the Turkes euer vse to commit their things to the custody of such Christians as row at the Oare where they sit: wherefore the poore man much troubled, for feare lest the Turke would baste him, sought vp and  
downe

downe euery where to find it, but all in vaine : his feare increasing, he desired some fellowes of his, that rowed neere him at the same Oare, that giuing the word, they would also passe frō one to another the Turbant that remained, to see if any had found the other which was lost; & doing this simply without any ill intent, one of the Renegates noted it, and giuing notice to the Turkes and Moores, vvith the suspition and doubt it caused, they beganne to cry out. The Christians rose, and that the Turbant vvhich passed from hand to hand, vvvas the counter-signe of their intent : the rest vvvere in such an uproare, that they forced *Ferra* in a hurrie, vvithout expecting any further discharge vvhich the Christians offered to giue, to haue them punished; and therefore like so many rauenous Woolues, they set vpon him that sought for the Turbant, stripping him, and binding his hands, and tying a huge stone at his feet, and him at the Maine-yard, snatched vp by a Pully, they so cruelly racked him, that his very sinewes were plucked frō his limbes, and his bones broken, and the poore soule left euen for dead : though in all his paine the Christian was so honest and constant, that for all the demands they made touching the Authours or Conspiracie, they neuer could get other from him then the truth, rather faithfully calling on Heauens sauour, he freely and boldly said, they were basely and maliciously accused : yet all would not serue to mollifie the obdurate hearts of these bloody miscreants; and so they caused the rest of the captiue slaues to be stripped, and stretcht from Poope to Prow, cruelly whipped; but when fresh Executioners were ready to haue renewed the fearefull sacrifice, a Turke looking by chance into his bundle of Clothes, found the Turbant which the miserable Captiue sought for : whereupon perceiuing the innocencie of the Christians, crying out to loose them, hee stept in, and told  
the

the occasion; declaring, that neither he whom they had first racked, nor any of the rest were in any fault at all: and so with much adoo, by these and the like reasons, which made ignorance appeare in the one, and no purpose of commotion in the other, he appeased his angrie companions, who had well-nigh with stripes and lashes torne the miserable Christians.

A sad and horrid spectacle indeed, worthy of more then humane commiseration, vvhich vvrought in *Gerardo's* tender heart so sad an effect, that vnable to refraine, the trickling teares dropped downe his manly cheekes, his courageous spirits drooping, to see himselfe in the power of such barbarous enemies. The ship vvvas towed still on by the Frigots, that were garnisht and set out with their Banners, Flags, and little Streamers; and so they steered towards the Cittie of *Argiers*, vvhere the next day they easily arriued; and scarce had their cutting Prowes toucht in the quiet harbour, when opening, and lifting vp their hatches, they began to discouer a great number of captiues taken from sundry Parts and Prouinces, of both Sexes, all ages. Our sorrowfull *Gerardo* was with the discomfortable sight strangely daunted, and the more, when hee might see the poore creatures runne to imbrace each other with weeping eyes; for hauing beene vnder Decke, and in seuerall Vessels, they had not, since the time of their beeing taken till now, spoken to one another; and now astonisht and bereaued of their senses, to see such multitudes of Turkes, and Moores, as ranne to the Wharfe to view them, their grones began afresh, and *Gerardo's* dolefull resentment to increase, by seeing the diuision that was made in the midst of the harbor, separating children from parents, parents from their children; brothers and sisters rent from each others embraces. Here, the afflicted wife sends soorth a sigh parted from her vnfor-

vnfortunate husband; there, the disconsolate mother, embracing her little chickes; (so much the more vvretched, by not apprehending their owne vvretchednesse) some hanging at her amorous breasts, others at her armes, the rest (poore fooles) tyed to her coates, vvho lowdly crying out, and bestowing her last farewell-kisses vpon those deare pledges of her intrails, beholds them, vvithout all pittie, lesse hope of remedie, snatcht from her eyes, she remaining like a sencelesse Statue, condemned as it vvere, for euer seeing, neuer to enioy againe those sweet comforts of her life. Amongst the rest, *Gerardo* expected vvhen his turne would come to be disposed of: but not long after in the diuision, he fell to *Ferru* his share; so to his great grieve and discomfort, he vvvas conueyed, vvith others that fell to the Turkes lot, home to his house.

His manly presence had much pleased his barbarous Owner, who promising to himselfe, that *Gerardo* must needes be some person of qualitie, hee made sure also of a large Ransome, at least a good Composition; for the best part of their gaine consisting in Prisoners, the Turkes of small matters make mountaines, boasting (though they know the contrarie) that their Prisoner is some Prince or Lord: so, they that buy a Slaue of them, first informe themselves what he is; and though some pre instructed, conceale their condition, yet it little auailes them: for inquiring, if the day they were taken, they were well clad, let them bee otherwise neuer so truly informed, they straight baptize them for Titular persons: and the ill lucke is, that so a poore Cobler, if he were but indifferently clothed at his beeing taken, passeth for such: and straight-way they call him, tell him, they are well inough informed of his qualitie, and know him to be Brother or Kinsman to such a Duke, Marquesse or Earle, (which comes first into their heads) and  
that

that therefore 'tis bootlesse to deny it; which done, they presently clappe a strong Chaine, or Shackles vpon him, in such manner that he can scarce stirre. And if, seeing himselfe in this extremitie, the poore slaue make answere, protesting they are deceiued or mis-informed, it nothing helpeth; for they, still obstinate, will haue them to bee such as they fancie them, whereby many are for euer deprived of libertie, wanting meanes or ability to pay the price of the others vaine estimation: in which these Barbarians many times settled, are not ashamed also to send young Youthes to *Constantinople*, presenting such to the *Grand Signior* and his *Basba's*, or other Viceroyes, and great Potentates in those remote parts, giuing out, that they are the children of great Personages, and such as will bring huge Ransomes. Thus it happened in the time of *Gerardo's* Captiuitie with three poore Souldiers, who taken prisoners in certaine Vessels of *Ragusa*, and comming into the Viceroy of *Argiers* his hands, the one a *Spaniard*, and the other two *Flemmings*, he sent them to the Turkes Generall his Patron, with the titles of great Personages: but the least beeing by him discovered, he caused them to be sent backe againe to *Argiers*, writing ioyntly to the Viceroy, that since those Gentlemen were so noble, and their Ransomes like to be so great, hee should suffer them to be redeemed, and send him the monie; (a trick, that for a long time after much disgraced and shamed the poore Viceroy:) but with many other Captiues it fallies out lesse happily, since with this tyrannous vanitie, they are oftentimes perpetually banisht from their native Countries: for hauing once such titles bestowed on them, they are kept vp close in their Bathes, Prisons, or Towers of the Blacke-Sea, from whence they neuer come out againe; rather, baited with the intolerable waight of their Chaines, hunger, miserie, and deadly stench, and  
where



where none can know or relieue them, they end their sad and loathed liues.

*Gerardo* passed not this ill fortune yet, though in part, he had some taste of the vnsauourie afflictions, that in such occasions oft torment a noble and generous spirit: for in the night of that bitter day, he was equally shut vp with his other companions in a dismall obscure Dungeon, in which, he till next morning remained, accompanied aswell by vncleane and nastie creatures, as sad and lamentable cares: now considering with what barbarous rigour he beganne to be treated, and then acknowledging, that if hee should make knowne what he was, the price of his Ransome would be so enhaunced, as should bee impossible for him euer to procure it: so that determing till some happier time, to dissemble and conceale what he was, in the midst of these afflicting cogitations, the Dungeon was opened, and hee (remoued) carried to the presence of his new Master; whom he found dressing himselfe, in certaine spacious vpper Roomes, but void of any furniture or household-stuffe; for euen the best and richest of those *Barbarians* neuer vse any; all their mooueables and ornaments, consisting onely in a Bed, with two or three hard Quilts, foure Sheetes, two Blankets, two or three Cushions, and three or foure Shirts a man, with as many paires of linnen Breeches, a couple of Towels, three Handkerchiefes, a Carpet or two, and as many Mattes to sit downe, lie or eate on; a couple of Turbants the men, and as many Coyfes after their fashion the women: and with some scrappes and pieces of different colour'd Silkes, the Roomes are hang'd, where they ordinarily sit vpon two Cushions. This (as I say) belongs only to the best and richest of them; for, for the rest, there needs no longer description, then, that most penuriously base, they liue promiscuously like beasts.

*Gerardo*



*Gerardo* here making a low obeysance to his Master, standing aloofe, expected his pleasure, by whom hee was presently in reasonable good Spanish demanded, who and whence hee vvas, adding vvithall this following speech: Christian, from the very houre that thou wast taken, I had a purpose (thy presence liking mee) to haue thee for my Slaue, though (for the effecting my desire) I vvas, in exchange, forced to forgoe two others for thee; in vvhich, I suppose, I haue not done amisse; for if thy gentle presence, and good Clothes deceiue me not, thou art (doubtlesse) a Gentleman of vvorth: if so, 'tis in vaine to deny it, for besides the incurring my iust displeasure, thou vvilt also be the cause of thine owne ruine, by beeing either bound at an Oare, or put to some other most laborious toyle. This I am willing to make knowne vnto thee, because, knowing my mind, thou maist also procure thine owne good and Ransome accordingly: I say accordingly, for I am not ignorant of thy qualitie, and the Maile that was found with thee in the shippe, as the Master of her, and some of thine owne companie confessed, vvas of good value in Jewels and Apparell, vvhich clearly testifie the truth. Besides, diuers letters and papers found in the same, not onely declare thee to be a Gentleman vvell descended, but likewise thy name, calling thee, *The Spanish Gerardo*.

Here *Ferru* ceased, and our sad Gentleman much wondered at his strange and craftie diligence, and therefore seeing how bootlesse it vvas to deny himself, he neither would, nor durst conceale the truth, though (disguizing it all hee might) informing his Owner largely of his life, and long imprisonment, he told him also, that by meanes of that, he and his kindred were vtterly impouerished; but in conclusion, put him in hope, that if he would be pleased to come to reasonable agreement, he could make meanes in Spaine  
for

for his ranfome; at vvhich the Turke much pleased, looking more cheerefully vpon him, replied, that hee vvas glad of his resolution, and that they would not difagree of price; and fo caufing a great vvhite loafe to be brought out, with fome fruites, and hony cakes, he bad him fall to: and commanded alfo, that two of the oldeft Captiues fhould goe abroad with him into the Cittie, to fee it and recreate himfelfe. *Gerardo* vvondred not a little at his new entertainment, vvvhich feeming to him (by what he had heard) very vnusuall amongst thofe Infidels, hee could not but in his mind render thanks to high Heauen: and much more might he haue wondred at this fingular proceeding, had he knowne by what meanes the higher Powers guided his affaires, and the manner how his Owners brutifh and cruell mind, vvith fuch contrary testimonies of his bloody nature, vvas made thus tractably propitious. The barbarous Pirate had, in diuers Dungeons, Bathes, and places of Tillage, aboue three hundred Chriftians, and within the houfe where he liued, almoft an hundred more; who hearing of *Gerardo's* courteous vfage, incompafling him round, thought they could neuer haue fight enough of him, nor time to demand the caufe of this noueltie. For they who had a long time beene fubieft to his more tyrannous condition, could not but thinke in what he now did, there was fome particular myfterie.

Thefe and other extremes pondered thofe poore foules, as they gazed vpon the afflicted Gentleman, and not without caufe; for none of them (doubtleffe) had received, nor onely no fuch fauours, but, not a word that fauoured of the leaft humanitie from his unhallowed lippes: nor was he accustomed to make knowne at all, to the partie hee would haue ransomed, his pleasure: they rather feeme to faigne an vnwillingneffe, to the intent there may bee interceffion

made, and so they more largely enhaunce the price; which if the parties accept not, or flie backe from their promise, they double their Chaines and Yrons, increasing more and more their torments and miseries.

So that, they thought this proceeding quite contrary to their Masters sell disposition, and therefore their admiration was not to be wondred at, which might very well too, be so much the more, when they vnderstood, he had a reasonable handsome Chamber furnished to his mind, appointed for his Lodging.

The next day after dinner, *Ferru* commanded two Christians to goe out with *Gerardo*, and shew him the most remarkable things of the Citie, and causing likewise his Bolts to be knockt off, he made him put on some of the Clothes which had beene formerly taken from him; this, increasing in his poore companions their former astonishment, the least they could coniecture, was, that the Turke enamour'd on his goodly presence, would with that gentle vsage disswade him from the Christian Faith, that so he might turne Infidell: but others of more settlednesse, remitted all to the successe of Time. *Gerardo*, not a little comforted with these fauours, went ioyfully out with his two new companions to see the Cittie; of which (hauing precisely viewed and obserued it) he might easily in his remembrance set downe a briebe and exact description, aswell of the forme, situation, and edifices, as Inhabitants, their habits, and the Strangers of different Nations; which for the Readers more delightful varietie, I haue thought fit, not to passe ouer in silence.

The City of *Argiers* being the chiefeft, and of most fame in all *Barbary*, hath in it some thirteene thousand houses, inclosed with a strong wal, and is in manner of a strung Crosbow. The Fore-front, Harbor, Turrets, and Galleries stand exposd to the North-wind. The hinder-parts (which make the

the aforesaid Bow) ioyne to a huge hill, partly steepe, part otherwise; in such sort, that, as the houses are built in ascents, they stand so one above the other, that the first, though spacious and high, hinders not the prospect of the rest, the latter.

The lowermost part of the Cittie becomes the String of this Bow, which stands so neere to the Sea, that the waues furiously beat against the Walles.

There reacheth naturally from thence a long necke of Land into the Sea, vvhich inuited *Cairadin Barbarossa*, to build a Harbour there, to make the hauen more secure, and ioyne to it a little Island neere the Cittie, vvith a goodly Rampire.

The whole Circuit is of most strong Lime and Stone, and (after the ancient manner) battlemented, and in height it hath some thirtie handfuls, yet towards the Sea (as being founded vpon high Rockes) it is much higher. In thicke-nesse it may be some three yards and a halfe; and besides, vpon the Rampire, that cuttes off the distance from the Cittie to the Island, there is another strong Curtaine of a Wall about some three hundred paces in length. This Counter-circuit was built, to resist the swelling furie of the deuouring waues, vvhich beate terribly on that side, when the West, and North-west windes doe blow: to the intent also, that they hinder not those passengers that walke vpon the secure Wharfe.

The Cittie hath nine goodly Gates to it, and vpon them and the rest of the Wall, Watch-towers and Bulwarkes, in which there is vsually great Artillerie, though the chiefe defence relies not on them, but consists most in three Fortresses, which the Turkes haue made: the first, neere the Gate called *Babaluete*, founded by *Vchali*: the second, vpon a little raised Mount neere the Castle, made by *Mahamet*

*Basba* : and the third and last, neere the very self-same place, where that renowned Prince and Emperour *Charles* the first in his vnluckie enterprize, pitcht his Royall Pauillion, at what time he layd siege to that denne of Rascals; a siege (though memorable) vnfortunate for the successe.

Within the Cittie, all the houses, poore and rich, one with another, may containe vpon the aforesaid number: for, though the circuit bee not very spacious, and that no house hath passing one court to it, yet the streetes are so streight and narrow, that a man on horse-backe can hardly passe them, or for two a-breadth on foote it is vnpossible: except in the Market-place, the principall street called the *Coco*, that thwarts the whole Cittie.

In fine, the whole and all of it lies so compactly close, and in-wouen together, that it rather appeares a confused Maze, then humane habitation. They haue neither Bay-window, or any other that looks into the street: for their ielousie ouer their wiues and daughters permit not the vse of such.

The Inhabitants are Turkes, Moores, Renegates, Iewes, besides the greatest part, Christian captives, which are sometimes (a strange number) neere fise and twenty thousand persons.

The naturall Inhabitants, are, some of a reasonable good complexion, but the most swartie, all passing well fauour'd. The vvomen are generally white, and many of them braue and very handsome; all of them clothing themselues (according to their calling, or indeed rather, their abilities) sometimes in died Linnen, cloth of seuerall colours, Silkes and Taffera's, and otherwhiles in Damaske or Veluets. All which, when *Gerardo* sawe, together with an innumerable number of poore Christian slaues, that dragging their long Chaines after them, and busied in base drudgeries, covered the



the very streetes and Gates, his heart could not but yerne, considering how God, for our sinnes, had so long permitted that Nest and Sanctuary for Pyrates, from whom Christendome hath, and daily doth receiue so continuall damages.

In all former Ages, *Africa*, the Worlds third part, where this barbarous place lies, hath beene (as all Writers testifie) taxed of periurie and basenesse. And the reason is, because the property of the Climate, and native condition of the Soyle is such, that it seemes to haue no other vertue more essentiall, then to produce wild Beasts, frightfull Monsters, pestilentiall Serpents, deadly and effectuall poysons; and by reason the Ayre here was so vnwholesome, *Lacan* counsels men to liue farre enough from such a Countrey, vvhether the drowzie *Aspis*, the inconstant *Chersidros*, the spotted *Cenchris*, the landie *Amodites*, the disioynted *Ceraustes*, the drie *Dipsas*, the *Scitalis* that casts her skinne in Winter, the heauie double-headed *Amphisbena*, the great and venimous Dragons; and lastly, the murdering *Basilisk*, King and Monarch of those fearefull and frightfull Goblins, were not ingendred, but to the destruction of mankinde.

So that, of necessitie, men borne vnder such a Constellation, and participating of the qualities, must needes bee barbarous, rude, discourteous, inhumane, and consequently, they who haue to doe with them, miserable and wretched; and not such alone, but their seruants and poore slaues, aboue all others most vnfortunate. Wherefore, no resentment might seeme exorbitant in our sad Gentleman, considering himselfe now gotten into their clutches. The two captiues his Guides, were in some comfort, and *Gerardo*, to sute with their good courage, dissembled all he could his owne sad disquietnesse, by diuerting himselfe with the



different fashions, shapes and severall complexions, that, at each steppe of his, were to his eyes presented: till coming to the Market-place (the Cities chiefe street) in midst of it, he might see certaine smooth stones, all couered and spotted with fresh blood; at which, amazed, he asked one of his companions if he knew the reason: who, not without aboundance of teares, made answere; That, not passing three dayes since, the Viceroy of *Argiers* had commanded a valiant Christian, by Nation a *Spaniard*, by Country and Birth of *Casile*, and *Teledo*, to be dragged at a wilde Horses tayle, and afterwards put to the horriblest death, that barbarous fury could inuent; such, as his inhumanitie will neuer be forgotten, as long as there is an eye-witnesse, or an eare to heare it left.

The compassionate *Gerardo* was strooke dumbe with this dolefull Preface; and at last infinitely desired to heare the whole Story; and (if it might not bee too troublesome to them) the Originall occasion of this bloody spectacle. At which, both his Companions equally willing to satisfie, that it might the safelier be done, they thought good to retire themselues into the fields, which they soon did; and sitting them downe vpon a hard Rocke, hee that first gaue notice of the Tragedy, began thus to make his Relation.

I would not, worthy Countri-man, that your selfe or any other that shall heare this wofull Story from my mouth, should owe the least thanks to my slender paines in reciting it; since the cause and motiue of recounting, must be to me sufficient satisfaction; which is, the exalting Gods glory, and his inscrutable Iudgements, which, in the deeds and actions of this most happy, most excellent Martyr, seem with particular admiration to shine bright: whom, hauing first, by incredible meanes deliuered from many mortall dangers,

dangers, in which he might haue been irremediably ruin'd, at last he brought him to this happy end, and to the greater aduancement of our faith, and reproach of Moorisme, his diuine Maiestie permitted, that in this rare man should bee ioyntly seene the Constancie and Valour of all the ancient Martyrs, the contempt of temporall riches, of life, which naturally wee so much desire to nourish and conserue.

In the yeere sixe hundreth and three, this valiant famous *Toledanian* was taken Prisoner by *Iaser Basba*, Vice-roy of this Citie, his name was *Fernando Palomeque*, who came to his slauerie in this insuing manner.

To begin first necessarily with his life, he was, in his yonger dayes, guiltie of the death of a certaine Officer of Iustice in *Toledo*, that for some disorderous ryot would haue apprehended him and others: but himselfe, knowing his companions were taken, and willing to escape the danger, retired secretly into the Kingdome of *Valencia*, where, hauing liued some yeeres (age and change of manners coming vpon him) an occasion offerred, he married neere the Sea side, and with some small wealth hee had in portion with his Wife shortly after, set out a Brigantine Vessell with fourteene Oares to a side, to Sea, which (manned with tall fellows that had long been vsed to Roue vpon seuerall Coasts) held her course for *Barbary*, and all that Coast ouer he vsed to doe notable hurt to the Moores, bringing home with him diuers booties and Prisoners, so that in time, the valorous *Palomeque* grew to be so couragiously hazardous, that landing often at this Port, he would march vp to the very gates: and from thence carry away the Moorish Pesants, that (as their manner is) draw thither to rest more securely vnder shelter of the Courts of Guard, and sometimes hee would leaue his Dagger sticking in the gate, cal-

led *Babalute* (which looked towards the Harbour) and the Turkes in the morning finding it without farther enquire, soone presumed whose doing it was : such was the opinion they had of his valiant courage, which made his name terrible ouer all that Coast ; insomuch that the Moorish women, when they would still and quiet their little ones, vſed in their language to cry out vnto them, *Acute, caychi Palomeque*, that is, *Peace*, or *Palomeque* will come.

Proceeding thus in this Rouing Trade in the beginning of the aforesaid yeere (being winter time) hee left the Wharfe of *Valencia*, hauing now also another Brigantine, which, by meanes of his gaines by seuerall booties gotten, hee had with valiant Souldiers manned out; and now hee began to plot and lay about with himselfe, how hee might performe in this Voyage some notable stratagem: and with that intent lanching into the deepe, and (supposing, like one cunning in the Trade, that Winter being now so farre entred, all the shipping of *Argiers* would bee in close Harbour) hauing the wind fauourable, and not passing two hundredth and fifty miles from *Valencia* hither, in lesse then two dayes hee got sight of *Barbary*, where one night about a League to the westward of this Citie, hee tooke a Moore, who told him, that most of the Pyrats Vessels were in the Harbour vnrigged, as well of their Frigots, as Brigantines; wherefore, *Palomeque*, thinking it very facile for him to effect his designe (which was, to enter the Port and fire the secure Vessels) without more delay, taking his trusty companions aside, he made knowne vnto them his intent, and finding their willingnesse answerable, by midnight (that being the fittest season) he set the Prowes of his Vessels to *Argires*, and vn-perceiued, boldly entred the Port, insomuch, that he presently grappled with the enemies Frigots, amongst a world of Turkish Shippes hard by at Anchor:

And

And ( his companions instructed ) their order was this:

*Fernando* had charged all his Souldiers, that they should be very circumspect in casting fire into all the Shipping; to which purpose, he delivered them store of wilde-fire balles, and other such materials, of which he was plentifully provided; and himselfe, whilst this was effecting, leaping on shore, would goe to the Bulwarke or Citties Gate towards the Sea-side, on which (as a token of his valour) he would (according to his custome) fasten his Ponyard, but not without much hazzard, in respect, that the Turkes kept Watch and Ward all night long, as well in the Harbour which he was to crosse ouer, as at the Bulwarke and Gate, whither he meant to goe.

With this resolution, the valiant *Teledanian* got on shore, and marching boldly on to the place, strooke his Dagger in three seuerall times, leauing it at last fastned in the nailed Boords. In the meane time his companions with all the speed and cunning they could, cast their wilde-fire into the Turkish Ships; but such was their ill lucke, that (doe what they could) the fire would neuer once take hold: vvhich when the intraged Christians saw, some of them leapt aboard the Frigots, doing all they might to burne them; and beeing (though to small purpose) busie in this worke, the Turkish Guard about the Harbour and Bulwarkes, as also some Moores that lay a-board the seuerall Vessels, awoke, and tooke notice of the Christians and their intent, which made them cry out to those within the Citie, whereby, in an instant, both within and without, there arose a terrible noise and vproare. By this time *Palomeque* was comming Backe from the gate, and hearing the Turkes and Moores in alarme, running in to his Souldiers, hee began to encourage them not to desist from the commenced enterprize, and giue fire againe; which, notwithstanding, to their com-

mon:

mon amazement, would neuer burne ; wherefore he, mad with what he saw, not fearing the infinit numbers of *Barbarians* that stood before him, with his sword in hand made way, casting himselfe amongst the formost, and satisfying his anger with the deaths of some two or three of the Watch-men, he got safely aboard his owne Brigantines ; and seeing the Moores now flocking together from all parts, hee commanded his men to weigh Anchor and to Sea. In this manner got *Palomeque* out of the Port, and his men tugged as fast as they could at their Oares ; but he himselfe was so sadde and pensatiue, that, after he had gone fifty miles, hee vvas vpon resoluing (as hee told vs since) to returne, within three dayes againe to his enterprize.

Whilst these things passed, the Viceroy had notice of the successe ; and therefore (though it were night) he willed that five of his best Captaines should come to him : whom he presently commanded, that they should with all speed, disperse themselues seuerall wayes in pursuite of the Brigantines, and though they rowed themselues to death, not returne without them. The five Masters hauing heard the Viceroyes pleasure, were willing to effect his desire : and so, suddenly manning their Gallies, one of them held his course Eastward, and the other West : two others North ; and the last Greeke No-North-East. And hauing lustie Rowers, and a strong desire to ouertake the Christians, they droue amaine. The Pyrats that went Northward directly for *Valencia*, rowed so fiercely, that, the next morning before noone, they descried the two Brigantines, that had now also kenned the Gallies : and suspecting the worst, began to fly, and the Turks to giue them chase about forty miles ; till at length, the Gallies hauing too great an advantage, ouertooke the hindermost, in which our valiant Spaniard



Spaniard went; which, beeing boarded, but not without many wounds, deaths and braue resistance, was at length taken, and the men in her, Prisoners, whilst the other in the meane time escaped.

The Turkes were not a little glad of the good successe, and so much the more, when by the Christians they vnderstood the famous *Palomeque* to be one of them, and also the intent of his Voyage: wherefore with wonderfull reioycing they came back to this Citie; vvhether they were no sooner landed, when (his Captiuitie being knowne) all the Harbour and Sea-shore vvas couered with Turkes, Moores and Renegates, desirous to see vwith their eyes, him, vvhom formerly they so much feared in their hearts. The Viceroy was exceedingly gladded, and thanking the Masters, for hauing so well discharged his commands, hee willed that *Palomeque* should be carried to his Bathes, and there placed vwith the rest of his Slaues, whither by next day a huge rabble of Moorish boyes were gotten together to behold (as a Prodigie) the distressed *Palomeque* tyed with a long Chaine, and marked in the face for a Slaue.

The Viceroy longed for examples sake to performe some notable piece of Iustice vpon him; and so, without deferring his purpose, commanded, that setting vp a Gallowes in the place where the Spaniard was landed, hee should bee taken, and as chiefe Ring-leader of such bold enterprizes, bee hung by the heeles at a Tenter-hooke, till with that miserable torment he dyed.

This barbarous intent was euen ready (to the whole Cities reioycing that went out to see it) to be put in execution; but Heauen, that had not yet determined the happy accomplishment of his martyrdome, permitted, that (comming to notice of some of the Captaine Pyrats, how hee should



should be put to death) they thinking it too great a cruelty, and consulting amongst themselves, they resolved to present their supplication to the Viceroy, and desire him to reuoke the sentence: and amongst many forcible reasons they alledged, the chiefeſt was, the custome of good Warre, to procure what spoile they could to an enemy, in goods, lands, or shipping: but not to punish the persons with death: and the former they did, as, likewise the Christians to them, by destroying and pillaging all that came in their wayes: but such cruelty, they said, was vnfitting; for that haply the Spaniard might require them in the like kinde, if they (as it was likely enough) should at any time be taken Prisoners: and they that insisted most vpon this, were the two that had taken him: wherefore the Viceroy, much against his will, was forced to giue order for vn-hanging him, and (hauing remained so a long houre) to be returned to his bathes to the rest of the Captiues, by whom he was most louingly comforted, and by a very good Surgeon then amongst them, cured.

Along time after his recouerie hee remained in this Captiuitie, the Viceroy not once offering to treat of his Ransome; though, diuers, at *Palomeques* instance and intreatie proposed it: but hee to auoid those frequent perswasions, towards the end of his Gouvernement, in exchange of other Slaues and handsome Youths, which hee hearkened after to present to the Grand Signiors Fauourites, gaue him to one of the Gouvernours of *Tramesin*; to which place *Palomeque* was shortly after (to his no small grieſe) carried: and now all his meanes being gone by the losse of his Brigantines, he was vterly destitute of all his hope; which yet at *Argiers* he had, that by helpe of the *Trinitarian* Friars, who collect and carry charitable Ransomes for diuers Captiues, as also by the goodnesse of  
some

some other Christian Merchants trading in those parts, his libertie might be effected: but wanting both these in *Tremefine*, he altogether despaired of remedy; besides, his misery was more increased; for his present Master, no sooner had notice of the Viceroy his leauing *Argiers* (for feare of whom he durst not sell him) when, he caused him to leade the wofullest life that was possible, all to the intent that the poore man should procure him a round ransome, beeing impossible for him to effect, as you haue heard. In fine, seeing himselfe so strangely afflicted, and misse-used by his cruell Owner, he was forced to demaund of him, in how much hee esteemed the price of his liberty; telling him withall, that though himselfe were extremely poore and wretched; yet, if his demand vvere any thing reasonable, he vwould write to some friends at *Argiers* and others in *Spain* to relieue him; which, when the *Barbarian* heard, he made knowne vnto him, that hee esteemed his ransome at two hundreth Ducats, which hee would haue paid downe vpon the naile (threatning a most horrible death withall vnto him, if hee did not speedily provide the aforefaid summe:) Whereupon the poore Captiue, not daring to reply, thought vpon some meanes for his liberty, and to this purpose, wrote to many Christian Merchants, as also to the Bathes and Captiues of *Argiers*, in which, for his great Valour, he was well knowne and esteemed, giuing them particular account of the infinit miseries he endured, and requesting them for his ransome: so that at last, against all expectation, the redeeming Friers helping, the two hundreth Ducats were sent him, vvhich hee forthwith deliuered to his curst Patron; who very leisurely sell to telling the money, and hauing done, without a word spoken, laid hold vpon a knotty Truncheon, & catching the poore Slaue by the Collar, gaue him diuers bangs, crying out as then:

then, Traitor, Dogge; Is this all I asked for thy Ransome? To this the miserable Christian, not a little afflicted, made answere: Why, Sir, are not the whole two hundreth there? perhaps, there may two or three be wanting. Good Master, be not angry for so small a summe, since it shall goe hard, but I will make them vp. Whereto the Infidell striking him a-fresh with the Truncheon, replide; Dogge, I demanded no lesse then two hundreth and fifty; which when *Palomeque* heard, and perceiuing withall the *Barbarians* villany, he was glad to write againe in the same stile for the other fifty, that were wanting, which, being not long after remitted vnto him, most iocund now, as thinking the miseries of this captiuitie might haue end, hee presented them to his Patron, which was no sooner done, when, that Infernall Monster, caught hold on him againe, and with blowes and buffets most shamefully intreated him, saying, he was to giue him two hundreth and fourescore Ducats, or he should dye for it.

What should the vnfortunate man doe in this case? seeing himselfe so causelessly tormented; and on the other side, considering, that, that cruell beast had neither word, nor honesty to rely on? Poore soule! hee accused his hard fortune, bewailed his misery, importuned Heauen, melted himselfe to fighes and teares, and wounded the very aire with sad grones: but seeing there was no other remedy, he durst not resist the infamous minde of his barbarous Master; and, so, re-soliciting his charitable benefactors, by giuing them to vnderstand of his strange misfortunes, he so moued some of their hearts to compassion, that, in a short time they furnished him with the thirty Ducats that were yet behind: and, so, carrying them to the Gouvernor, he desired, that his Letter of freedome might be drawne, since he had now gotten him the rest of his money.

Who

Who could haue thought, but that all was here ended, and that the Barbarian was throughly satisfied? but nothing lesse: he rather (shamelesse) tels him, he must make vp the price of his Ransome, to iust three hundred Ducats; for that he, vvho could so speedily find two hundred and four-score, might easily procure the rest. And to force him to this, sweares by his Prophet, that if he did not comply, he vvould burne him aliuie. When the valiant *Palomeque* had heard out this incredible wickednesse, and that the inhumane Rogue, had neither feare of God, faith nor reason, considering also how much paines and shame that money had already cost him; that, with the importunitie of his strange, seuerall new demands, hee had vwearied all his Christian friends; and that now no place vvvas left from vvhence to expect further remedie, (his patience quite giuing him ouer, and his loathed life growne desperate) in an instant he ran to a sword, vvwhich hung in the Chamber where they vvvere, and clozing with his Patron, thrust him (vnable to defend himselfe) so often thorow the bodie, that he tumbled to the ground; and there, cutting and hacking him, at euery blow vvith furious indignation repeates, There, Dogge, take and satisfie thy insatiable auarice of money.

There were present towards night when this vvvas done, two of the Gouverneurs Renegade Boyes, (or Ingles rather) each being about a sixteene yeeres of age. These, when they saw their Master thus slaine, began to enforce their cries, but *Palomeque* quickly ouertooke one of them and slue him, the other vvvas too nimble for him, who had now raised the neighbours well-nigh, so that *Palomeque* seeing his danger, was saige (the best he could) to shift for himselfe, and vvanting no courage, vvith crossing three or foure Lanes, thorow an open Gate in one of them, hee got into the fields, and

and running vp and downe there, at length (vnespied) hee made to the chiefe Gouvernours Garden, in which he knew a captiue Counttriman of his serued as Gardiner. To him then *Palomeque* addressing himselfe, made knowne his distresse, and considering how strict a search vwould be made for him, by mutuall aduice of both it was agreed, that *Palomeque* should be locked into a Vault, vvhich stood in a secret part of the Garden, where for his safety hee remained fifteene dayes, without comming day or night out of that dismall obscuritie, till at last hoping the worst was past, hee determined to flie by land to *Oran*, a Garrison towne in *Barbary* belonging to the King of *Spaine*. To this resolution, though full of danger, (as being his last refuge) he was forced; and such was his ill fortune, that the second day of his trauell, before he was aware, hee lighted vpon certaine wilde *Alarbes* Cottages, and perceiuing his danger, about to haue retired; they seeing him, and he defending himselfe, and withall offending those which followed him, vnable long to resist their violence, especially by beeing ouerturned by a horseman, that pittifully rode ouer him and brui- sed his face; and wounded in his body, with some Arrow- shots, hee was forced to yeeld. Not many daies after the misfortune, this *Arabian*, whose prisoner our *Palomeque* was, comming to the Port of *Sargel*, a towne not passing twenty Leagues to the Westward of this; he sold him to a *Tagarin*, or *Moriscan* Pyrate of *Andaluzia*, who straight set him to the Oare, with the rest of the Christian captiues that were in his Frigot, where (though his face was brui- sed, and hee disfigured) yet hee was by many knowne, who had beene formerly acquainted with him in this Cittie; where the oc- casion of his flight was by this time diuulged. Well knew the sorrowfull *Palomeque* the danger he was in, and therefore very sad and pensatiue, not knowing what course to take,  
he



he iustly feared, that if the Frigot went to *Argiers*, he should there be put to death : which made him resolute to set vp his rest vpon his valour and industry, either nobly to die, or brauely to escape.

It seemed that Fortune dallying with this man, presented him with all the occasions he could wish for, that she might in the accomplishment, the better shew her wauering inconstancie ; and so in midst of this troublesome confusion, she offered him this last meanes, in which he shewed to the world his courageous mind, vndaunted courage. *Argiers* was at this time much afraid, lest the forces of men and munition, which our King *Don Philip* the third caused to bee in a readinesse, (for the more safe expulsion of the *Morisco's*) in the most important Ports of *Spain*, were meant to her; and therefore one of her Viceroyes cares was, to commaund, that all the Wheat which might bee had in the Territory, and other parts of *Africa*, should bee brought hither; to which effect, he sent to *Sargel*, giuing order to the aforesaid *Tagarin*, Owner of our *Castilian*, to repaire to the City of *Bona* for prouisions ; which hee accordingly effecting, as soone as he came thither, landed Wheat, Butter, and other prouisions, euen till Midsummer Eue, at which time all the Turkes and Moores went on shore, each desirous to buy some things for his family at home, so that, not passing twelue or fourteene Souldiers left now aboard, the courageous *Palomeque* intimating thus much to his companions that carried Victuals and burdens to and fro from the Towne to the Frigot, they perceiuing the slacknesse of their Masters, began to lay hold vpon the vvondrous occasion that was offered, to seize the Frigot. *Palomeque* too so helped on, that at length they resolu'd at their next vnloading to effect their purpose. The Christians vv ere in all, of those the Viceroy sent, and those that belonged to the bar-



barous *Andaluzian*, some sixty and odde persons; and being thus resolved, as they entred vwith their Clothes and Viſtu-als, the Steward of the Frigot, vwho vvas also one of the conspiracy, gaue them ſoure Turkiſh Semitars, which hee had kept ſecretly hidden; and the reſt that had no ſwords, layd hold vpon Plankes, Billets, or any kind of Armes that came next to hand, which fury or neceſſity miniſtered to them; and this done, they as ſuddenly ſet vpon the Turkes that remained in the Frigot: *Palomeque* ruſhing amongſt them, gaue one a terrible cut in the head, and hee and his companions ſo outragiously beſtirred themſelues amongſt the reſt, and ſo furiously oppreſſed them, that they forced ſoure of eight Turkes which defended the Sterne, to caſt themſelues ouer-boord into the Sea. They that remained fore and off, fought all they could to hinder the Chriſtians from cutting the Cables, in which all their hopes conſiſted; for they were ſure (if they could keepe the Chriſtians from making to ſea from their Anchors) their own companions would ſoone from Land giue them ayde: which ſell out as happily for them as they could wiſh; ſince their enemies vnable to withſtand, gaue leaue to the multitudes of Turkes and Moores that euery way beſet them, to come aboard to their fellowes; who with their ſhot made ſuch a ſlaughter amongſt the poore vnarmed, naked Chriſtians, that hauing ſlaine moſt of them, they now entred all in at the fore-Caſtle, which they compelled the Defendants to yeeld vp.

The *Tagarin* thus re-poſſeſſed of his Veſſell, the firſt thing he did, was, to clappe ſuch (as hee thought fit) vnder Hatches, and threatning the reſt with grieuous torments, he began to inquire out the author of this rebellion, (which vnderſtood by ſome) their baſe feare made them not onely confeſſe the truth, but deſiring alſo to gaine their Patrons good will, they made knowne vnto him, (which they might well

well haue concealed) that the causer of this sedition, was, the famous and feared *Palomeque*: with which, he extremely intraged, though in part well pleased to haue that partie in his power, of whom so many wished to bee reuenged, caused him to be kept in sure hold, and being arriued at *Argiers*, he gaue the Viceroy account of the vvhole successe, and the Author of it: desiring him for cloze and vp-shot of his discourse, that he vwould bee pleased to haue some exemplarie iustice inflicted vpon him. The *Basba*, from the first time of his arriuall from *Constantinople*, desired much to know *Palomeque*, as, beeing extraordinarie affectionate to his strange valour and courage; and so vnable to dissemble his longing, hee commaunded to haue him soorthwith brought to his presence, vvhether hauing vvistly eyed him, and duly considered, that if this man vwould turne *Mahometan*, (besides the great good seruice he might do his Prophet) hee should also gaine the *Grand Signior* an excellent, important Souldier; after hee had a little questioned with him, he proposed at last his intent: sometimes seeking by faire meanes, and then againe by threates to reduce him to his purpose; and not onely assured him (if he would fulfill his desire) his life, but with great oathes and offers obliged himselfe, to chuse him a vvife that should bring him large possessions, vvherewith he might liue nobly, and maintaine himselfe in all plenty. To all vvwhich, our honest *Spaniard*, with much freedome answered, That his Highnesse needed not so vainely trouble himselfe, to perswade him to so desperate a madnesse, from the accomplishment of vvwhich he was so farre, that with the trial, hee should better perceiue by his constant resolution: for that not only the riches and earthly fortunes proposed, vvwere insufficient to make him forsake his Religion he professed; but from that instant also he promised to suffer for it an infinitie of Torments, death,

and Martyrdome. But for all this answer, the Viceroyes hopes, nor their perswasions present ceased not; though neither one nor other, nor the Racke set before him, were once able to mollifie his firmenesse, rather with an inuincible courage, when they most threatned, hee (least caring) smiled: wherefore the Viceroy, as well vexed with his perseuerance, as importuned by a great number of Turkes and Moores, that cried to haue him put to death, without more delay, caused him to be deliuered to the kindred of those that were slaine by him, that they might take what reuenge they thought fittest on him: and straight this newes was blowne throughout the whole Cittie, so that (being known who it was that should die) the streets were in a trice euen strewed with people; and the women vnaccustomed to be seene, got to their doores, and vpon their Turrets with confused showtes of gladnesse to be spectators. ○

Whilst these things past in euery corner of the vproard Cittie, the Turkes and Moores that were with *Palomeque* in the Palace, wearie of reuiling, commaunded a vild horse to be brought, and tyed him with cords to his taile: and in that manner he was dragged to the Market-place, where those dogges perceiuing, that if they passed farther on, the Prisoner dying in that torment, might escape others more cruell and bloody prepared for him, mooued with their rauinous desires, they made him to bee vnbound, and a base Moore, that was to be his Executioner, suddenly stepped out; who fixing on the ground a paire of Stockes neere *Palomeque*, of some yard long, he layd hold on his left legge, and putting it thorow a hole of the logge, proceeded in his Office, saying, Faithlesse Christian, is it possible that (the Viceroy hauing pardoned thee, by offering thee life, if thou wilt turne Moore) persisting so obstinately in thine error, thou wilt rather suffer thy selfe to be torne in peeces? Consider,

sider, wretched man, whilst yet thou hast breath, and time to repent thy folly, beseeching his Highnesse to vse his accustomed pitty and clemencie to thee. To this not falling one iot from his high courage, with an angry tone *Palmeque* suddenly replied: Wretched *Barbarian*, thou, and all those of your damned Sect that behold me, are those that blindly erre, and are most miserable; since following the senselesse abuses of a cursed Impostor, you suffer your selues to run headlong into damnation: and therefore I neither feare the torments of so loathsome, nasty a generation, nor make any other reckoning then thou hast scene of their menaces. Cut, diuide, teare, and dis-ioyne this wearied Trunke of mine: vwhen you haue done all, and that this feeble body perish by your miscreant hands; yet my soule, neuer forsaking her true Creator, shall mount to heaven, and his diuine goodnesse shall (I doubt not) giue mee courage and sufferance for the extremest tortures you can inflict: and with this, raising a more then manly voyce, he concluded, crying out, A Christian I am, and a Christian I will dye, maugre your powers, and Hels together. No sooner had he so ended, when the mercilesse Hang-man at foure or fise blowes cut off his stirrop legge close by the knee, and some Moores holding him from falling, gaue order to the same *Barbarian*, that as hee had cut off the legge in the supporting place, he should do the same to his sword-arme, seruing both members alike, vvhich had beene the cruell terrours to their nation. This was (as the former) fulfilled, and our valiant Spaniard now turned into a double Spring of blood, the griefe and torment of his dismembred corps, could not but be euen insupportable; but heauen gaue this blessed Soule strength and courage to suffer, filling with amazement, all the Turkes, Moores and Renegates, by whom in infinit numbers this horrible spectacle was incom-

passed. After this, the body vnder-propped by foure persons, they expected till the Gibbet was set vp, where he was to bee hoysed, and fastened vpon Tenter-hooke, which was soone done, and his body caught vp in the midst by a Pulley, to the highest part of the Gibbet, and being furiously let downe againe, fixed vpon the Yron hookes, which were set vpon the fearefull Engine, and so the expiring body was strooke thorow by those sharpe points: but the blessed *Palomeque* in midst of that dolorous Traunce, lost not the least part of his manly courage; rather, in all those cruell and fearefull torments, the marueilous splendour of his true faith, and firme affection to his Redeemer, shined more gloriously; vpon vvhom calling vvith miraculous perseuerance, he gaue vp the ghost, after hee had remained almost foure and twenty houres in that terrible anguish, to the generall astonishment of a vvorld of barbarous Turkes and Moores present at his glorious departure. The next morning vpon the Boord, to which his arme and hand was nailed, appeared an *Epitaph* in Verse, written in a faire sheete of white Parchment, which beeing read by many Christians, before the Moores could take that and the member downe to burne them; and my selfe hauing beene one amongst the rest that had a sight of it, I thinke it not amisse, for the goodnesse, to make repetition of it vnto you.

*Fixe, Christian Passenger, thine eyes  
On this brane hand: that Trunke, that lyes  
Now, (a void Carkase,) prey to Fowle,  
That late inclos'd a glorious Soule.  
Weepe not for him, that soy'd to dye,  
To liue a Martyr lastingly:  
Dry vp thy teares, for him; who (blest)  
Pitties our woes, that want his rest.*



*Let such as love their Countries good,  
Dye Skarfes in Palomeque's blood,  
And weare the Red; that, when some he  
Halfe Barbary in Armes shall see  
Hereafter, with the Skarlet fight,  
Whole Squadrons he may put to flight.*

*Ten Captiues, home to Spaine that wend,  
Those golden Sands bid Tagus send  
His Ransome; and, Granada's Towne,  
Thy sacred Mount, this Martyr, crowne.*

Here ceased the compassionate Christian, leauing *Gerardo* to equall pittie, but with much more admiration at the strange successe, and now before their Patron should bee at home, to finde fault with their long being abroad, they were willing, by way of preuention, to returne to the Lodging.

You heard before, how *Gerardo* had a Chamber appointed by himselfe, where separated from the other Captiues, he might with some cheerefulnesse passe the irksomenesse of his slauerie. Hither (taking leaue of his companions) he entred, and ready to sit him downe in a little corner where his bed stood, vpon the Couerlet (contrary to his expectation) he found his supper wrapped vp in a poore course linnen Clowt; which was, a loafe of bread, and some little fruite; and giuing thanks presently to his diuine Maker, who in so great miserie had granted this particular fauour vnto him; about to cut the bread, hee found a piece of paper, which (to conceale the bulke and bignesse of the same, was oft folded) stucke in it; which held him in no small suspence, till vnwrapping the folds, hee might see a womans hand (as he gessed) in *Spanish* Characters, which, though an ill one to reade, yet looking more warily vpon



the Letters, he might make a shift to collect out of them the ensuing Contents.

*Christian, Pleaue that hath permitted thee to come to so great misfortune, comfort thy afflicted heart; be of good courage, and despaire not of thy remedy. If the Patron this night set a price vpon thy ransom, and it may seeme excessiue to thee, be not troubled with his exorbitancie, nor disquiet him with thy excuses: rather (because thou canst not help it) yeeld to his demand, asking first, sufficient respite. In which time, if, from Spaine thou shouldest not be relieved, God Almighty may be pleased, that here thy wants shall be supplide. I enioyne thee no secrecie, since thine owne affaires will well represent vnto thee, how much it imports thee.*

Whom would not the Contents of these lines haue rapt with admiration? and, who againe, in so sad an estate could but haue receiued comfort, with such hopes? which, though doubtfully fantastical; yet, did much rowze vp Gerardo's afflicted spirits, who (it may well be said) neuer found himselfe more wauering and irresolute, then with the present successe: for, though on one side his willing confidence might giue some credit to it; yet, on the other, his iudgement and good aduice obliged him to a heedy seare of his barbarous Masters subtiltie, whose stratagem he might well suppose this was, to make him yeeld to his demand, (which once performed) it would be altogether impossible for him to be againe freed from it.

In this manner he rested, betwixt two opinions, vncertaine in his election, till, such time as *Ferru*, beeing come in, he was called to goe to him; so that with this shortnesse of time, hee now at length resolu'd to conforme himselfe to the instruction of the Letters vnknowne Owner.

*Fernu*, had but as then newly supped ; and, therefore (though he found him alone) hee well perceiued, that iust as he came in, some women had retired newly out of his company, for his eyes got a sight of them, as they drew certaine Curtaines that serued for the roomes partition.

*Gerardo* had many times heard, that the Moorish women were neuer so nice, as to hide them from being seene by their Slaues; and therefore this seemed the stranger novelty vnto him : but without consulting further with his suspitions, hee hearkened to his Patrons discourse, who, hauing courteously asked him of his health, and he answered as respectiue to his Masters content, hee heard him on, in this manner : Esteeme it, Christian ; for no small happinesse, that thou art come into my power: for (let me tell thee) hadst thou beene in any of our hands else, thy captiuitie would haue beene so insupportable to thee, that, thou wouldest not onely not haue expected thy Masters pleasure, but thou thy selfe wouldest haue proposed thine owne liberall Ransome, though it might not haue been accepted : which we vse to doe often, not, that any of vs are vnwilling to ransom our Prisoners, but that they with seeing how difficultly their liberties are obtained, may make the greater estimation of them, and accordingly their owne offers voluntarily the larger. I, *Gerardo*, omitting this common custome, haue beene willing to excuse towards thee, all prolix suspension of misery ; and haue therefore left thee free to exempt thy selfe from my other Captiues, which I shall continue so to doe, if thou resolve to pay mee for the absolute cleering of thy person and ransom two thousand Ducats, which price, measured with moderation, I demaund : and, that, being no greater a summe, thou maist cause it to bee the sooner raised in thine owne Country. Thus, thou hast heard my last resolution:

lution, goe then to thy Chamber, and bethinke thee of a fit time and respite for the accomplishment (which beeing not ouer-tedious) thou shalt the better please mee : but withall know, that it is in vaine, and to thy preiudice, to reply vpon the said quantitie ; for (not to weary thy selfe) I am assured thou art well able to pay it.

*Gerardo*, as soon as euer he heard the exorbitant summe named, would willingly haue answered the Patron, making knowne his impossibility of payment, neither had he omitted so doing (knowing the scarcitie and shortnesse of his owne fortunes, which by his suite and long imprisonment had beene decreased ; ) but that, iust as he was ready to vnfold his lips to speak, he might see one of the women from the Curtaines beckn with her hand from her, giuing by that dumbe language to vnderstand, that he should be gone : (which increasing his care) yet he immediately obeyed, and left the roome, extremely sorrowfull ; for his Patrons wilfull obstinacie wonderfully afflicted him, and more, the difficulty of the accomplishment ; wherefore, his captiuitie now like to be more tedious then hee thought for, he could not but fall into afresh resentment of his calamities.

Plunged in these cares, *Gerardo* passed all that night, and part of the next day, when about dinner-time a Christian shee-Slaue brought him his ordinary sustenance, and leauing it with him, he found, as the first time, a Paper, vvhich (opened) shewed him these lines:

*She, who to day and yesterday wrote to thee, is the same, who last night made signes, that without replying to the Patron, thou shouldst turne thy backe : Take it not ill, Gerardo, for the experience of his condition, forced me to it, and baddest thou contradicted, the least of thy danger must haue beene to lye in a*  
close

close dungeon, which might haue crossed and dashed many good proiects wee must set on foote : Arme then thy selfe with patience, and demaund of Ferru sixe moneths respise (foure at least hee will be sure to grant thee) for thy ransom, in which time thou maist send and heare from Spaine ; and I, by heauens helpe, may thinke vpon some conuenient generall remedy for vs all.

The greatest light that this Letter gaue to *Gerardo*, was, to increase in him a greater astonishment and confusion, but, disposed wholly to follow the aduice of that inuisible Counsellour, he put it in execution : and, iust as the Paper fore-spoke, it befell him with his Patron ; and therefore from that very moment, he purposed to write to his Brother *Leoncio* & his deare Mother, giuing them notice of his miserable captiuitie, conueying his Letters by means of some Christians ransomed, by the *Trinitarian* Redeeming Friers, who returned for Spaine ; where they with the newes no sooner were landed, when (for his Tragickall successes had made him famous) his Captiuitie was spread thorow all those Prouinces ; I will not (for breuities sake) cumber my selfe, with describing the fresh teares of his loued Mother, or the iust griefe of his good Brother, his best friend *Leoncio*, and kindred : onely I must not slightly ouerpasse the sadde moane and amorous resentment of the faire ill-recompenced *Nise*, who still shewed to the world her firme and loyall affection, since neither *Gerardo's* obdurate hardnesse, his disdainfull proceeding, strange forgetfulnesse, nor time, that makes all things to be forgotten, could one iot diminish her affection, nor lastly, excuse her afflicted amorous heart, from the griefe and torment that seized it, as soone as shee vnderstood of the bondage of her deare desired Owner.

She

She had (if in this Histories first part you remember taken Sanctuary at a Nunnery, from whence (conforming her selfe to her Fathers will) she attended the prosecution of her suite with *Gerardo*, which she had soone giuen ouer, but that a filiall respectfull feare, and the hope of obtaining him for a Husband, detained her: and therefore the first happy newes of his liberty, she bore with equall ioy and sadnesse; though in her Father it made a deeper impression: for as in mens noble breasts such hurtfull accidents haue a more powerfull operation, then diseases or the bodies infirmities: so, the considering himselfe and his childe dishonoured, (hopelesse of amends) shortened his dayes, and quickly ended his life; insomuch that *Nise's* discomfort and solitarinesse was increased, and the more, with the care of her estate and Family: though none of all these were sufficient to drawe her from the Monastery; where, many a time, she would professe, that, liuing without her *Gerardo*, she would there end her weary life. Here then the newes came to her eares, and with notable sorrow to her soule, the discreet consideration of what difficulties might be opposed to his liberty, (she lighting on the very same, that there troubled *Gerardo* in his captiuiy) sure too that his suite & former imprisonment could leaue him very small meanes, and on the other side shee was no lesse afflicted in being ignorant of the place where hee endured his miserable slavery, for till then, shee had receiued no more then a kinde of confused knowledge of such a thing: so that, desirous to be certainly informed, shee purposed to send one of her seruants to *Madrid*, vvhom might there secretly vnderstand the whole businesse.

These things thus passed in *Spaine*, whilst *Gerardo* expecting in *Barbary* his Mother and Brothers Letters, wore away the tedious time of his imprisonment, sometimes, in



part diuerted, by the feuerall tickets hee receiued from the vnknowne Writer, and otherwhiles with the hope of his expected ranfome. But that was long delayed, till at last, when euen vveary with gaping attendance, hee had reckoned dayes, measured houres, and numbred minutes: the time drew neere, in which, by all probability, (his Letters delivered) he might expect an answere: After this, all hee receiued vvas onely a poore Letter, from his poorer Mother, as full of comfortable words and sorrow for his misfortunes, as void of satisfaction for his Patron, concluding at length, with letting him know, that his Brother *Leoncio* had beene absent from her, and that to effect his desire, she had carefully dispatcht one to him; but it seemed *Gerardo's* ill lucke was such, that though his sorrowfull Mother vsed her best diligence, she could not so speedily as the limited time required, prouide his ranfome, by reason of *Leoncio's* dangerous sicknesse, which was necessarily first to bee looked into, that with the recovery of his health, his captiued Brothers liberty might the better be effected.

*Gerardo* altogether ignorant of what passed at home, fearing least the limited respite once expired, the Patron would change his stile, falling to his vsuall rigour, grew extremely melancholly, in such sort, that one of those Captiues vvhose first bore him company, and with whom he most of al conuersed, perceiuing his griefe, mooued with pitie and compassion, endeuoured what he might, discretely to encourage him, & ease his forlorne hopes; and one day amongst others, in which he saw him most heauy and sorrowfull, taking him by the hand, and leading him into a by-Court (lesse suspitious place) he beganne thus to set vpon him: I much vvonder, Signior *Gerardo*, that with so great vnquietnesse you thus goe about to hurt your selfe, not onely in discomforting your secret heart, but in making known your griefes



griefes also to vs that conuerse vvith you; so that, by meanes of some one lesse trusty, when you least thinke of it, they may come to the Patrons notice, and giue him inducements to fore-stall his suspitious condition, and ghesse that your sadnes proceedes from some impossibility of attaining your Ransome, whereby you may fall into his extreme indignation. These two yeeres haue I put him off in the like kinde, giuing him, as, To day, one excuse, to morrow another, faining still seuerall inconueniences; and though my limited time hath often passed, yet I still beare him in hand with new hopes: besides, his barbarous condition is not now so fierce and bloudy (as formerly it was vsed to be) to which maruellous alteration, the affable, amorous conuersation of a Spanish shee-Slauer of his hath reduced him, whom he hath married, and (strange amongst these Infidels) so truely and tenderly adores, that for her sake he will doe any thing, a story (that if time would permit, and our companions at hand were farther of) I infallibly perswade my self, would be of no smal entertainment to your selfe, & diuersion to your eares. There could nothing in the world haue offered it selfe more happily in this coniuncture to *Gerardo's* knowledge; so that the Captiue no sooner touched vpon that straine, when, full of ioy, as thinking (doubtlesse) he could not but meane the party whose frequent Letters himselfe had receiued, he most cunningly laying hold vpon the occasion offered, cut him off, saying:

Gods prouidence, gentle friend, neuer inflicts greater miseries vpon vs, then we should be willing to beare: I confesse (for my part) I haue strength for heauier burdens, if he please to loade mee, how bee it my sadde countenance may perswade you the contrary; and, though I might iustly be excused for this small shew of weakenesse; yet, accommodating my selfe to your disposition, from hence-  
forth

forth I shall grieue no more, onely I desire, that my so willing embracing your profitable counsell, may be recompensed with the Relation of that womans fortunes, since the priuacie of my Chamber may keepe others from ouer-hearing, and the affection I beare you, excuse my bold demand: this I shall acknowledge for a most fauourable courtesie, (amongst many others I haue receiued from you) and Heaven may so order our affaires, that this vnfortunate man may one day stand you in some stead. *Gerardo* vied no further intreaties, and indeed lesse might haue preuailed with the affectionate *Fulgencio*, (so vvas the Captiue called) and hauing signified so much vnto *Gerardo*, towards his Chamber they vvent; where, beeing set, the other thus beganne:

There is none (I may well assure you) in all this Cittie, can giue you so faithfull a Relation of the present businesse, as my selfe, since Fortune still made mee an equall companion in all the circumstances of it.

The second yeere of seuen, (in which I haue beene Captiue) *Mahomet Zangra*, (my Master that then was) a famous and most cruell Pyrate, set saile from this Port in a Frigate, (where I was bound to an Oare) to his accustomed Trade of Rouing, and hauing taken some Prizes about the Iland of *Maiorca*, and done wonderfull dammage all thereabouts; being at last set vpon by a sudden terrible storme, wee were all likely to haue beene cast away; and vnable to resist the violence of it, suffered our selues to be hurried on by a forcible *Lenant* wind, (which beginning though in some few houres to slacken) wee found our selues a great way distant from the place where it first tooke vs: so, wee discovered a Coast, and willing to make to the Land, by reason the Seas went yet very high, at last we put into a little Creeke, whither (iust as we entred) a small Shallop had got from the storme

storme to shelter. We could not very speedily take notice what passengers were in her, till such time as our Frigot drawing neerer, we might see that all in the Boat (being to the number of some twenty persons) were furiously in a bloody conflict together by the eares, and some amongst the rest were tumbled into the Sea. But *Mahomet* came in so opportunely, that (beyond expectation) hee freed eight or tenne Moores that were yet aliue, and captiuated seuen Christians, who fought in that desperate manner with the others for their liberties: but this their purpose so vnluckily frustrated, our Captaine without difficultie seizing them into his power, desirous to be informed of the successe, vnderstood from some of the Moores in the Shallop, that hauing in the late storme lost a Frigot, in which their Captaine, and many others, with a great booty of Spanish Goods and Prisoners, perished; at the instant when she was sinking, hauing the Shallop ready, and taking some of the Christians for companie, they cast themselues into it, and made to that place for shelter, where they had beene thus furiously set vpon by those they saued; that had they not bin so fortunately by him succoured, not a man had escaped with life.

This successe (though told with many other circumstances, vvhich I haue quite forgotten) much pleased our Captaine, aswell for hauing succoured and deliuered his Countrimen, as to haue remained by this meanes with the Christians, they carried for his owne; these hee tooke with him, leauing the Shallop to the Moores, to bring them in safety afterwards to this Cittie. Himselfe the next day safely landed here; where making sale (as the manner is) of his Prisoners, amongst others, he parted with this woman wee now treat of, vvho by reason of her disguise in mans apparell, vvvas not presently knowne, till such time as our Pa-

trons affection discovered her : so hauing bought and brought her home vvith him, putting her into a Moorish habit besittng her Sex, he himselfe grew (vnexpectedly) to be as well captiu'd by her beauty, as she his Slaue by couetous purchase. At this time too *Zanaga* ridding himselfe of some vnprofitable persons, vvho by reason of sicknesse were no longer able to serue at the Oare; my selfe, one of the number, vvvas sold to our Master here, by which meanes it was not difficult for me to know, vvhat became of the faire Christian; and by degrees I came to vnderstand more, then I should haue presumed on, as being not only told of *Ferru* his violent affection, but also of her stout constancie, with which (searelesse of death oft mentioned vnto her) she resisted his barbarous lust : vvhereupon he most cruelly treated her, and his rigorous vsage was so extreme, that fearing to kill her, and so to lose the mony she stood him in, he purposed at last to let her be ransomed. At this time the Redeeming Friers were here, (who told of this Christian woman, and fearing her Soules perdition, vnderstanding the Turkes mind, they dealt with him about the price : which (with some difficulties, at last being agreed on) he receiued his money, and she vvvas committed to the custodie of a Iewish Merchant, with whom the Friers had also placed many other Christian women they had ransomed. Within some few daies after, the deuill had so vvrought in her Masters imagination, that presenting afresh vnto him the remembrance of his late affection, he repented him of hauing sold her; and therefore in a furious and raging madnesse, void of all shame, he ranne backe to the Friers, saying, that when they ransomed his slaue, he was out of his wits, and that now therefore (being better aduised) hee had brought them their money, and they should returne her vnto him againe; and the rather, because beeing turned *Mahometane*,

she was not to be redeemed. The compassionate Friers extremely wondred at the Patrons base proceeding; but that which most grieved them, was, the manifest danger of this Christian soule, by returning againe to his power: and therefore first they went about to perswade with the barbarous Turke, but seeing all their labour was but vaine towards him that was so resolutely bent, so blinded by passion, they hoped that the Law (as their last remedie) would on their sides decide the controuersie. The Iudge, whom they of *Argiers* call, The *Cadi*, commaunded the Slaue to bee brought before him; where being come, our Patron began disorderly to cry out, he would haue his owne: the Friers Redeemers alledged his owne voluntarie sale; so, debating the matter on both sides to and fro, the Turke perceiuing his cause like to goe hard with him, vrged, that the woman had turned *Mahometan*: which when the poore soule heard (trembling for feare) yet, vnable to suffer so manifest a falsehood, she cried out many times together alowde, that shee was a Christian, and had neuer beene otherwise, and would die in that profession: which the angrie Turke no sooner heard, but fiercely setting on her with his fists, he also said: Thou shalt with me, thou damned Bitch, ile pay thee for thy impudence. Some there present were much offended with this boldnesse, and chiefly the *Cadi* himselfe, who seuerely commanded him not to mis-vse the woman, but first to present witnesses to make good his cause. *Ferru* madde with choler, went straight out, and not long after returned with two as base periur'd Moores as himselfe, who came in and deposed, that the captiue woman was turned *Mahometan*; which the poore creature hearing, beganne to cry out lowder, they were false Villaines to testifie so notorious an vntruth; and in so saying, her many teares moued the Spectators to compassion: onely this monster stood like a ruthless



lesse Rocke, and hearing her say all this, catching hold on her, (the standers by not once offering to helpe it) hee gaue her a terrible buffet on the face, which hee had seconded, had not one of the Redeeming Friers put himself betweene; who laying hold vpon his Coate, told him how much hee forgot himselfe, to wrong a Christian woman, and one that was no Slave, in a place of so great respect. But the *Barbarian* with this temperate and sober reprehension, was not onely not mollified, but, in stead of relenting, hee began fiercely to cry out, saying, Why permit you this Frier to lay violent hands (a most manifest lye) vpon a Turke, and one that is a *Ianizarie*? and that therefore according to the Lawes, and their preheminences, he was either to bee executed, or at least, his right hand to be cut off. And that you may perceiue what a damned Nation they are, there were at least forty Moores present, that swore it was true; and perswaded the *Cadi*, that the Turke was stricken, and that therefore he was to doe him iustice vpon the Frier: wherefore the Iudge tormented with their cries and noyse, commanded his hand should be taken off, as the instrument of the disgrace.

Then a number of other Turkes and Moores began to lay hands vpon the innocent Frier, to haue executed the sentence; when a Turke assisting the *Cadi* in his place, (a great Lawyer) staid their furie, commanding them not to inflict so rigorous a punishment, since those kind of Friars were priuiledged persons aboue other Christians; but, that because the Frier had stricken a Turke and *Ianizarie*, which was vnlawfull, they should all there present inflict the like punishment with their fists vpon him, and so there might be *quid pro quo*, one for another.

This then grew to bee partly a matter of laughter and mirth, but 'twas mournfull indeed, to see how vnmercifully



those base vn-manly Infidels layd vpon the poore Frier; e- uery one of them reaching him such knockes, that had not some few of them (better minded) shifted himaway, hee might very well haue beene banged to death.

Thus the distressed vvoman was left all alone, like a silly sheepe in midst of those insatiable Woolues, who present- ly adiudged her to go along with her Owner, and so to be a *Mahometan* perforce.

Certaine it is, that the compassionate Frier vvould not, for feare of his life haue thus returned, had there beene any possible hope of recouering her. God sure had a hand in all, of whom none ought to demand a reason, who doth no- thing without it. Our Patron hauing her home againe, began to exercise his former crueltie; by vvhich shee van- quished, but chiefly by seeing her selfe thus vnfortunately abandoned, began to grow lesse coy, more pliant; which he perceiuing, a little also slackened his hard vsage: and to make short, (a thing common amongst them) turned off his other vvives, thinking by this demonstration of his, he might the better attaine to his Slaues affection: vvhich in- deed fell out accordingly, she resolving (vnable longer to resist) to free her selfe from the intolerable misery shee endured.

Three yeeres haue they liued in this sort, so contentedly, as that this change of his, hath not onely caused a singular admiration through all this Cittie, but with an extraordi- narie conformitie of manners, hath wrought maruellous effects in him; turning him from rude and beast-like, to ci- uill and affable, as your selfe best of all can iudge, hauing had experience; and which may most of all be wondred at, in all his actions, hee is wholly ruled and gouerned by the aduice and counsell of his faire wife, who is onely wayted on by women captiues, saue two Eunuch Renegates, that  
you

you may haue many times scene ouer-seeing vs.

Here *Fulgencio* finishing his relation, *Gerardo* doubled his thanks, but thence-forward his cares increased the more, by hauing now more notice of her that wrote his former Letters; but the care of his Ransome was incomparably greater, and the lingring of that lesse to be indured. It grew now towards Supper time; so his captiue friend taking leaue, gaue way to *Gerardo* to receiue another Ticket; which hauing opened, he read it with the content you may by and by perceiue.

*At length, Gerardo, the day I most wished to see, since I first saw you in Captinitie, is at hand: I (noble Signior) am a Christian, and one, that were she knowne to you, your pittying heart would helpe bewaile her sad misfortunes; which, so publicly notorious, cannot but in part haue come to your notice: as also the cruell affliction by which my frailtie was at last vanquished, though I was neuer desperate to forsake my Faith; wherefore heauen, I trust, taking compassion on my Soule, will afford me some remedie; the which with confidence I rely upon, helped by your valorous determination, and of that I haue had some experience, as you shall know in a fitter occasion. Looking accidentally into some Papers of yours, which were taken with the rest of your Clothes a-ship-board, I espied your name; so that (knowing you) I cunningly dealt with the Patron, that giuing you good vsage, he should likewise propose the price of your ransome: I prepared you in like manner to what you should doe, to giue him all the satisfaction possible in your answer, that so your person might in the Interim of your monies not being payd, enjoy the greater liberty. Touching my present purpose, it is, so to dispose and governe our affaires, that without their preiudice, we may once out-line this miserable Captinitie; for which, I haue waited till this present occasion, which is, (the Pyrates and shipping wintering now in safe*  
B 6 3 *harbour)*

harbour) our Patron goes to his Tillage, where he is like to busie himselfe for some twenty dayes at least: and with this happy con-  
iuncture (notwithstanding our Renegate Guardians remaine  
behinde) I haue so well ordered the matter, that, your industry  
helping, it shall (doubtlesse) obtaine the successe wee would wish  
for; and therefore (for more securitie) my opinion is, that  
you communicate the businesse with such of the Christian  
Captiues, as you may best trust, in this manner and forme  
ensuing.

First of all you may let them know, that they shall not onely  
haue all Ferru his Armes that are heere remaining, but the  
keyes also of his chiefeſt roomes; that so, being furnished with  
all necessaries the rest may be by your selfe and them performed:  
to which purpose it would be in the next place fitting to know, how  
we might rigge and set out one of the Frigats that lyes naked in  
the Hauen; for (this once compassed) it will not bee difficult for  
vs to get from Argiers, by letting our selues downe from that  
part of the wall, that ioynes to our house; and so, hauing our vi-  
tualls ready (of which our warehouse hath plenty enough for ma-  
ny Ships) we may set saile and away to Sea.

well know I, Gerardo, that, if my deuice suite with your dis-  
cretion, and our companions consider the facilitie that is offered,  
there will be no inconuenience in the effect: or, say there should be  
some little, let no small doubt hinder vs; and suffer not for hea-  
uens sake, your selfe, me, and so many poore Christians, that lan-  
guish in this miserable thraldome, to misse the blessed opportuni-  
tie of their desired liberties: let mee therefore, by the Captiue  
that brings your meat, know your resolution, her I haue still tra-  
sſel, and I know you may do the like; for to speake to mee is as im-  
possible, as mount the clouds; so warie and watchfull are our sub-  
orned Keepers. Heauen keepe, direct and encourage your Noble  
generous heart.

Hardly

Hardly could *Gerardo* keep in his ioy from breaking into lowdnesse, as soone as hee had read the maruellous Contents of this discreet Letter, in whose consideration busied, and mincing (as it were) each particular, refflesse, he spent the lasting night, and longing to impart the important businesse, making first choise of the well-knowne *Fulgencio* his brest, he vp, and told him all, from the first letter to the last; and hauing giuen him so strict an account, he found as willing entertainment of the braue exploit in his couragious heart, as he could possibly expect: who, thanking his friend with teares of his gladnesse, for imparting so great a good vnto him, desired him to leaue the ordering of it, to his care and industry, as being better experienced in the Countrey humours and conditions of the Christian Captiues, and therefore, best knew to select those, which might be fittest for the turne; and also the best meanes for the furtherance of their attempt. *Gerardo* vwillingly resigned the vvhole businesse to *Fulgencio*, vvho hauing made it knowne to as many as he thought good, to the generall approbation, their flight vvvas resolued on against the second night after their Patron his departure.

Their resolution, if it bee noted, was not rash; for according to the couragious shee-Captiues aduice, with the opportunity offered, they might easily effect their designe, since Winter vvvas now vvell entred, at vvwhich time all the Pyrats and Routers retire themselues higher into the Countrey from *Argiers* (sauing some few Ship-boyes, who lye aboard the dis-armed Vessels) so that they might, vvithout being perceiued, at least ouer-taken, escape from any that should follow them.

The expected day being come, the faire Christian giuen to vnderstand of the prefixed agreement, and *Ferru* absent at his Countrey Farme, about eleuen of the clock at night,

a thee-Christiian Captiue, on vvhom they also relyde, carried the keyes vvith all secrecie to *Gerardo*, and presently after, by degrees, some forty Semitars, halfe-Pikes and the like weapons: and (this done, conducting him to a roome where one of the Renegates lay) shee (knocking at the doore, and the *Eunuch* frightfully answering) secured his feare, saying, 'twas she, such a one: and that her Mistris vvould haue him presently goe to her about a businesse of great consequence; so that hee, thinking no lesse, beganne hastily to dresse himselfe, and no sooner opened his doore, but *Gerardo* vvvas straight vpon him, and in a trice claue his head with two sudden blowes of his Semitar; and so luckily, as he sent not out the least groane.

This good beginning adding double vigour to his courage, did the better assure the successe of the maine businesse: and therefore (losing no time) downe he went vvith his trusty guide, who brought him euen almost to the street doore, neere vvhich the other Renegate lay, that kept the keyes of the dungeons and close prisons vvhere the poore Christians remained; vvhere, the wench vsing the same slight that before, he comming out, but lesse carelesse, then his dead companion, vvvas set vpon by *Gerardo*, so greedy of discharging his blow, that his speedy haste had like to haue marred all: for the Renegate slipping aside, seeing himselfe in that distresse, beganne to cry out, and vvithall to cloze with *Gerardo*: but he that beganne now to carry more heed about him, redoubling his force, with a wheeling cutte of his Semitar, diuided the Eunuchs winde-pipe; vvhich was done with so good a will, that the other had not a note left, nor voice to expresse his disaster: so, getting into his chamber, he brought out the bunch of keyes, vvhich were laid vnder his beds-head, and opening the feuerall doores, hee vn-shackled as many of the Christians as were able to fol-



low them (to the number of some threescore.) And this done, vvith extraordinarie diligence and silence, distributing the weapons amongst them, he went next (by helpe of his guide) to the Ware-house, where some beganne to fill sacks and bags, with Bisket, Butter and Fruits; and others, barrells of Water for their vse: a third sort, took the cordage and Candles which the Patron had there laid in store for the prouision of his Frigots.

In the meane time the beautifull Christian, who onely expected, when her maid, below with *Gerardo*, should giue the word, extremely ioyfull to see how well their businesse began to fadge, hauing not in all the while heard any of the rest of her women the Captiues, so much as once stirre, taking first the richest and most precious things that *Ferry* had, to bestow vpon the Christian Captiues to encourage them, being called, shee went downe into the Court, clad in the Barbarian fashion, but so admirably becomming her, that (though I may a little digresse) I cannot but let you know in what manner shee appeared, by the flaming lights to *Gerardo*, and the rest of the Captiues that expected her.

Shee had on a transparent Smocke of pure Lawne, (whose seames, wrists, and Collar, were curiously wrought in different Silkes and Gold) a close Horse-mans arming Coat, which reached to her mid-legge, of Carnation Veluet, fastened at the brest with goodly great Buttons of Gold massie and enamelled; ouer which, shee woare a skarfe in the Romane manner, with the knot gathered and tyed vpon the tip of her shoulder, which falling partly downe to her waste, and drawing vpward againe ouer her head, an end of it came to bee doubled vnder her right arme, which kind of dressing most beautifully shaped and set her out. From her necke, eares and haire, hung Pearles, round,



round, orientall, so naturally as if they grew there : her hand-bracelets were Gold set with rich Stones and Diamonds, as her small fingers with severall fashioned Rings, and that every part of her might suite, it seemed her Moorish Owner would haue her still remember shee was his Prisoner, by making her weare shackles of gold about her armes and legs, which he called, The brauery of *Argiers*. She had last of all a delicate Vaile of Tiffany, whose ends caught by certaine Buttons set with Saphires & Emeralds, were fast, and vpon her head so artificially, that no part of her face else, but the best of it, a paire of pleasing eyes, were shewne ; with whose admiring cheerfulness the thankfull Christians extraordinarily taken, as well as the shortness of the time would giue leaue, professed they were now entering into a new Slavery, Hers : and next, without more delays, by two and two to auoid noise, they went into the street, and after, to the wall that was neere at hand.

You must note, that the principall diligence consisted in getting Oares & a Rudder that the Frigor wanted, which was (as you shall heare) by *Gerardo's* friend (who disposed the whole businesse) happily effected : for first, *Fulgencio* got from the top of the wall, and whilst the rest were descending, he (all alone) went toward the water side ; and so (without being perceiued) to the Bulwarke neere the Harbours Gate, where the Oares, which he was to procure, were vsually kept, and thus he made a shift to scramble vpon the wall (which without helpe seemed a thing impossible) and vn-heard by the Warders now in a dead sleepe, knowing where the Oares lay, downe hee went ; but suddenly two Dogges, vvhovinding him, began to barke, had like to haue marred all ; which made *Fulgencio* vvarily turne backe againe to his friends, the greatest part  
of

of whom were by this time gotten down, but much troubled to know his successe; who, as wishfully now came in vnto them, saying; Loued Companions, be of good courage, and giue God hearty thanks; for let mee tell you, our intent goes happily on: and so making known what he had done, he told them the Oares might easily be had. So, leauing them with greater hopes of their liberty, he returned with three or foure of the Christians, taking also two loaues of bread, to stay the Dogs from baying.

Towards the Bulwarke they went, where *Fulgencio* with lesse adoe by the help of his companions might get vp: & casting first some pieces of bread to the Dogs, he quickly stayed their barking, and whilst they fed, let downe some thirty of the best Oares, which his friends below receiued. This done, hee boldly crossed ouer the Bulwarke, and without being espied, went downe to the farther side of the Citie, and there, in a Plaine betwixt two of the wall-gates, he tooke a Frigots Rudder, drawing it from vnder certaine Raisin Frailes, whereon three Moores at the instant lay asleepe; which thing to seem credible, must needs haue been miraculous. And with the same speed & boldnesse he went againe to the Bulwarke, and from thence let himselfe downe to the shore: and leauing the Rudder vvith the rest of the Oares, he gaue *Gerardo* and his company diligent notice that the maine difficulty was ouerblowne; so that they who were gotten downe, began to striue who should fastest carry Barrels, Sacks, Bags, Candles, Ropes, Cordage and binders for the Oares.

And being thus in the midst of their preparation (some nine or ten Christians being yet to let down) there chanced to passe by vnluckily (on the Citie side of the wall) a Turke, that liued in the same street, who going carelesly homeward, they that were vpon the wall, hearing his  
steps,

steps, began to feare and thinke he must needs espy them; for, besides his approaching neerer to them, hee carried a Lanterne to light him in respect of the nights darknesse: vnable therefore (as they thought) to preuent the mischiefe otherwise) they resolued to cloze with him and to kill him (if it were possible:) which one of them willing to effect, ranne him thorow the body with a halfe Pike, but (not deadly wounded,) he cryed fearefully out, inso much that some Moores comming to the noise, seeing what had hapned, began to proclaime from the wals, that the Christians were vp in Armes: which exclamation seconded by the Warders of the Bulwarke, and Shore, the vnfortunate Captiues about the Wall, disperfing themfelues disorderly vp and downe the Citie, gaue ouer their hopes of libertie: for hearing all that hurry, they much doubted the good successe of their friends: who, on the other side, taking vp their Oares and Rudder, and in midst of their determinate Squadron, the faire Captiue and her Maid, went towards the Sea-side where the Frigor was, which *Fulgencio* kept still in his aime, where setting the women a-board and the most of the luggage; some of them resisting the on-set of the Warders, others fitting to the Oares, and a third sort weighing Anchor, in spight of those that went about to hinder them, *Gerardo's* exhortations and entreaties giuing new life and courage, with maruellous valour and celeritie they put to Sea; where (trusting to their good fortune) they began to row so stoutly, that in a very little time they were gotten two Leagues a-head the land; and setting vp Masts and Sayles with a prosperous gale of winde they sailed on till morning, by when they might see themfelues (to their no small ioy) gotten neere fiftene Leagues to the East of *Argiers*. Our *Gerardo* grew to be extremely desirous of knowing who the faire Christian might

might be: but the winde (as God would haue it) beginning to change into North-West, the fury of it increasing, and the Seas beginning to goe very lofty, eased him quickly of that care, and made him more carefull with the rest of his Companions, to looke to the safety of the Vessell, they (poore soules, most sorrowfull to see their contrary fortune, sowing with all might and maine) laboured to resist the force of the vn-mercifull windes; but being altogether vn-able to preuaile, were forced backe to the shore-ward: and so endeavouring to shelter themselves in a Creeke, some twenty miles Eastward from *Argiers*, they set their Prowes thither-ward, at the iust time, that two other sayles in the same danger designed themselves to their course: but our Frigot in some doubt (for feare of a worse matter) what to doe, at last (euen desperate) suffered her selfe to bee forced on by the winde, in great danger of being swallowed vp by the waues, till seeing the two Vessels steere towards them, they were forced to provide for their defence; suspecting, as by and by they might plainly see, they were enemies.

The two were Frigots, who the day before laden vvith fuell for the Viceroy of *Argiers* his prouision, had set saile from *Sargel*: and though they thought at first to coast along by the shore; yet fore-thinking they might haue some soule weather, they ghesled it more safe to keep the maine; and so driven on by a strong *Leuant* that turned after to Nor-west, they were glad with the Christians to direct their course to the same shelter; whom ouer-taking and seeing what they were, vvith terrible noise and barbarous outcries they set vpon them; and beeing two, well manned against one poore vnprovided Vessell, getting her in the midst of them, they furiously sought to lay her a-board: but the Christians fighting with equall courage, and (more desperate) were not so speedily boarded, but making brave resistance;

sistance, wounding and killing the Barbarians, they yet made a party good with them; but at the instant that the Christians beat off the Turks, and kept them from entring, it happened that an unlucky Arrow shot *Fulgencio*, and striking him to the heart, layd him a-thwart one of the Frigots Benches; vvith vvhich disaster *Gerardo* beeing much in his mind grieffe-strucken, and his courage failing him to cheere vp his companions, that fainted with the misfortune, the enemy perceiuing their deiectionnesse, re-beset, and furiously at last began to boord them: yet here the battell at the last push, seemed to bee againe renewed, and with streames of blood that increased, the Christians shewed most remarkable valour, chiefly the vndaunted *Gerardo*, vvho vvith his sure Semitar (once his Patrons) scowring the Decke fore and off, more fierce and furious then a Quartanary Lyon, dealt fearefull blowes on all sides: the bloody skirmish held on a pretty vvhile, till such time as fresh Turkes comming on by heapes, and discharging their shot and Arrowes like Haile, seuentene of the Christians fell, and the rest remained in wofull plight.

But in this miserable state, Heauens Creatour, (whome the distressed soules ceased not to inuoke) taking compassion on their extremitie, when it seemed most impossible for any to escape from death, with his powerfull force, against which the fury of the Elements is nothing, most miraculously succoured them, by affoording as a minister of his pleasure, the vnexpected helpe of a tall Ship, which at this time weather-beaten, came where the fight was, and no sooner discovered the *Barbarian* Sailes, and the lone Frigots danger, when presuming vpon the truth, shee began to let flie a Chace-piece, and after, played vpon the Turkes so furiously with the rest of her Artillerie, that seeing themselves in danger of sinking, they were glad to quit the yeelded

Chri-



Christian Vessel, to looke to the safety of their owne: and so, quickly turning their Prowes to *Barbary* with losse of some thirty persons, they betooke themselues to flight. The lustie Ship was not forward to follow them, as feareing the danger and neere nesse of the Coast, but they within her were glad so to haue freed the hard-beset Frigot, whose Passengers hauing sung thanks to Heauen for their blessed deliuerance, *Gerardo* amongst other things was first of all most charitably carefull, to see, whether in all this bickering either of the Christian women had receiued any hurt: and no sooner turned he himselfe about to the effect, when (for her masking Vaile in midst of the fright was false off) hee might discouer in the gallant Captiue no lesse then the dainty, cruell *Iacinta's* face. The vnexpected sight caused such an amazednesse in his afflicted spirits, that hee verily thought hee had seene some infernall ghostly apparitions: wherefore he ranne amongst his companions, and as farre backe as he could, out of her sight, whom he long since had giuen ouer for dead, and drowned in the raging waues (as the first Part of the Storie mentions) therefore he thought this to be some diabolicall Vision.

The Spectators were more then he astonisht, with this sudden accident, and much more, when they might see the faire Dame, with eyes gushing forth teares, runne to *Gerardo*, and casting her selfe at his feet, heare her breathe out these lamentable words:

Whither, Oh whither, valorous *Gerardo*, fliest thou, from this wretched, aboue all that euer liued, most vnfortunate woman? No more, deare Signior, refraine your iust displeasure; permit not (though I deserue farre heavier punishment) that, abhorred as I am by all the world, abandoned by thee, my life come to some desperate end; by throwing my selfe into the deepe Sea, that heretofore with  
more



more pittie, then thy present lookes promise, preserved me. Suffice, what is past; and may thy killing indignation at length cease, striking the Sailes of thy revenges desires, which Heauen hath thorowly inflicted on mee in thy behalfe, reducing me to all the extremities that barbarous Infidelity could inuent; from which thy hands haue beene instruments to free mee: and not without particular providence; that for the small seruice I haue also done thee in recompence of thy wrongs, I might be restored to my country and quiet, by him for whose loue and affection I first forgot and left it. 'Tis nothing else, Oh noble *Gerardo*, I desire of thee, to no other happinesse doe I aspire; this onely good I expect, that grace I beseech thee grant; and that, by the true affection I once bore thee, by all that is amiable and desired by thee, and lastly, for his sake, God his sake, who hath so miraculously freed our liues. Here, vndone, melted in teares, confounding her intreaties with sad grones, the poore disconsolate *Jacinta* ceased; leauing the sence-bereaued Gentleman, so indeterminably metamorphosed, that nailed to the place where he stood, a great while, he had neither tongue to speake, nor hand to rayse the griued creature from the ground. Neither ended the strangenesse of this dayes successes thus; for iust as these things passed in the Frigot, they in the ship, desirous to see who they were they had so luckily saued, commanded to grapple with her; whereby it was not difficult for them, to heare the faire Dame make her moane, at whose tender and dolorous lamentation, some of the Passengers getting a-sterne into the Gallerie; and amongst them two women, they might heare *Gerardo's* name seuerall times repeated, which made the one of them, with extraordinarie shewes of gladnesse, desire the Pilot and Mariners to hang out a Ladder, that they might the better passe into the Frigot;  
which,

which, by helpe of the Saylers they did; where comming towards our Gentleman in the midst of his confused dumpes; she of the two, whose exceeding fairenesse the Christian Captiues most admired, spreading her armes, wound them about *Gerardo's* necke, who, as if he had really awaked out of a drowzie Lethargie, finding himselfe girt with no lesse then those ancient amorous knots, with which the diuine *Nise* once held him her captiue, acknowledging her presence, and ruminating on such strange vnheard-of accidents, wholly stupified, hee stood stocke-still like an vn-mouing Image. Indeed such successes beyond either hope or beliefe, might very well bring him into this deepe enchantment. And because it is fit, that the Reader, by my Pens laziness, run not into the selfe same credulitie, let me, before *Gerardo* be deliuered from his, reconcile the strangeness of these marueilous euent.

Touching *Iacinta*, a very short recourse to our Stories first Part, may cleare the doubt: for (you cannot forget) how we left her at the last cast in the Storme, vvhhen her Frigot willing to take shelter at Cape *Gata*, was sunke by the Spanish Admirall; in vvhich misfortune, (*Gerardo* supposing she had vvith the rest perished) heauen disposed otherwise, and gaue her helpe in the Shalloppe, vvhich some of the Turkes and Christian captiues hoisted into the Sea (as vvas there set downe) in vvhich the poore men vnable to resist, in respect that the Turks vv ere well armed, and more in number then they, vv ere forced to row on for *Barbarie*, regaining the first Creeke they could discouer vpon the Coast for shelter: vvhere, the Christians, seeing that the Turkes and Moores, wearied with the late Storme, and their continuall labour, fell to sleepe; thinking they had now a happy opportunity to make their escape, they began to set vpon some of them that seemed to sleepe soundliest,

and wresting their weapons from them, the rest awaked, and amongst all, there passed a well-fought Skirmish : but the Christians by the slaughter of many Turkes, having gotten the better of the Battell, vvere vnluckily surprized by a Frigot, the same in which *Mahomet Zanaga* went, the rest happening, as was formerly recounted by *Fulgencio* to *Gerardo*. The faire *Nise* having had notice of his captiuitie, and (as you heard) sent a seruant to *Madrid*, to be informed of the whole businesse : and assoone as the partie returned with the certaintie, the place of his abode, the price of his ransom; and withall, signifying what diligence his Mother and Brother vsed for the effecting his liberty, shee, without more adoo, mooued by compassion and pittie, but chiefly incited by the firme and loyall affection shee alwaies truly bore him, began with all speed to make ready monies : and so, greedy to giue the world, but more particularly to her *Gerardo*, a Testimonie, by this noble act, of her firme constancie, as also an humble discharge, for following (like an obedient child) the will and pleasure of her deceased Father : leauing the Nunnery, where till then shee had still remained, her friends, kindred, seruants, and aboue all, a world of hazardous inconueniences, nothing able to perswade with her, she held on her fixed determination, and taking onely a waiting-woman and three men with her, she tooke a journey to the Port of *Cartagena*, vvhre being arriued, and resolved to be the principall Astoresse in *Gerardo's* redemption, fearing lest his mother or brother might preuent her, she imbarckt her selfe soorthwith in a ship, laden with powder and vvarlike Munition, for the Garrison of *Oran* in *Barbarie* : her purpose vvas there to demand safe conduct of Count *Aquilar*, Viceroy and Captaine General in those Parts, for her going by land to *Argiers*, that so, she might procure her Louers libertie : to which the stor-

mie vvind and weather vnexpectedly now brought the ship and her, as also to giue life and succour to so many valiant distressed Christians.

Such and so admirable, oft times, are the happy successes, to vvhich in part the affaires of our more wretched life are now and then subordinate; or to say truer, so incomprehensible and miraculous is the diuine Prouidence, which disposeth things (when vve least imagine) for the best. This waighy consideration tooke vp *Gerardo's* vvhole vnderstanding, and his senses left him doubtfull in the certaintie and clariue of what he saw before him. *Iacinta*, she tenderly lay weeping at his feet, ouer-joyed with the sight of him that was once her Louer: *Nise* (clung to his necke and brest) hugged him so close, that hee could scarcely see her face, much lesse heare the words that she thus smotheringly close deliuered:

I wonder not, my best loued Signior, that (so doubtfull) you make difficultie of giuing credit to your knowledge, since the small loue you bore mee, may haue easily blotted *Nise* out of your mind and memorie: but, not the experience of this truth that costs mee so dearly; not, the most cruell rigour, wherewith I haue beene wofully treated by you; not, the long forgetfulnesse, disdaines, absence, (affections bitterest tormenter) none of these, not all together, haue beene able to alter my loyaltie, or alienate my affection, or lastly, to lessen the least part of my happiest wishes. These, my *Gerardo*, haue made me seeke thee out, thus, nigh lost, hazarded amongst bloody Turkes and barbarous Pyrats, who vniustly detained thee: this care alone, hath made me forget so many iniuries, brought me thorow dangers, to leaue my Monasterie, provide thy ransome, to trauell day and night, tread downe all difficulties, to no other end but to obtaine (finding thee) thy lost, by me most

of all earthly goods desired, liberty. May then, my best Signior, this amorous demonstration deserue your admittance, by recompensing the firme loue of her that hath vndertaken it: and if it find not in your bosome equall reception, at least, permit, that my wearied tounge may with your good liking publish, that *Nise* hath only beene (howeuer wronged) for euer true, and her vttermost affections wholly, solely her *Gerardo's*.

Amazement here left him, and it seemed, passed into the hearts of the Spectators: for *Gerardo*, like one sprightly returning out of a heauie trance, most compassionately tender, and with a more liuely admiration at *Nise's* strong affection, and equally pittying the poore *Iacinta's* crosse fortunes, now comforting with noble intrailles, the afflictions of this; then drawing neere with affectionate gratitude to that partie; sometimes mollifying his rigorous remembrance towards the one, and then forgetting his iust indignation for wrongs from the other, vnable without teares to dissemble his passion, hee raised *Iacinta* from the ground, and clasped the diuine *Nise* about the necke: and bashfully ashamed, craues her pardon, freely confesseth his hearts hardnesse, and blameth his vngratefull proceeding: then turning to the vretched *Iacinta*, vvith like ioy comforts, and promiseth her, not to forsake her, till with desired rest, she may arriue to the shelter of her friends, or a more peaceable harbour. And vvith this determination, whilst the two Dames, more cheerefully, with equal emulation admired at each others Beauty, he beganne to giue order for their returne for *Spaine*. *Nise* vvvas dumbe and ielous, though confident, as beeing so neere her Louer. *Iacinta* dissembling her trouble, as one that knew her selfe too vnworthy to enioy him, to bring her out of her dumps, broke the yce and silence by speaking first, and they vvwere then



then mutually courteous, both willing to bee acquainted with the causes of each others peregrination.

*Gerardo* fearefull of another Storme, had desired that the Frigot might saile vnder the Ships protection, till such time as they should land at *Oran*, and from thence meet vwith more consorts for *Spaine*: so they agreed, that for their more conueniencie, the two Dames also should goe together in the Ship, till they came thither; to vvhich purpose, they both vvere helped vp by *Nise's* seruants and *Gerardo*: vvhho thought fit not as yet to leaue the company of his good friends, and therefore taking leaue of *Nise* and *Iacinta*, (vvhho seeing the reason hee had, vwould not contradict it) he vvent backe into the Frigot. But that we may more evidently perceiue the frailty of momentarie delights, and vvhhat little assurance is to be expected from their vncertain beeing, let vs, in these ensuing Lines, note the last successe, that befell *Gerardo* and the faire Dames in this fortunate, vnfortunate day.

All the vvhile that the former matters passed, the Ship and Frigot vvere strongly fastened together, aswell for their more conueniencie of conuersation and keeping company, as the raking of the vvaues, which as yet went somewhat high; and (increasing more) the Master and Mariners fearing lest beeing so neere, the Frigot, as the weaker Vessel, vvhith the Seas fury might split; and thinking *Gerardo* had beene in the Ship, the Frigot fell off; but it was iust at the instant, that he beeing in the Ship-boate, thought to haue gotten out of it into the Frigot; vvhich being now vnder Saile, and the Boat not able to ouertake it, hauing broken the Rope, by which she was tyed to the Ships Sterne, to the terrible grieve of the beholders, caught by the swelling waues, and violently carried on, was like to bee overwhelmed; where a long time *Gerardo* was scene to be in ma-



nifest danger, though for all he was so farre off, hee might heare *Nise* and *Iacinta's* cries, vvwhose eyes prooued vnwilling witnessses of the sad disaster.

*Gerardo's* valiant companions were not awhit dismayd in the Frigot, to see him in this conflict; but tugging at their Oares till they were ready to burst, at length they fetched vp the Boat, and casting out a Ropes end, on which he laid hold, by little and little (quirting the Boat) hee swamme to the Frigots Oares, and taking a little breath, holding by their broad feet, at last he was lifted into the Frigot; where, after he had shifted and refreshed himselfe, his Company began to steere the Ships course, till such time as the billowes rising more and more, they had quite lost sight of her. It was then about one of Clocke in the afternoone, at what time the wind enlarging, they set Saile, and might haue saued their Oares, in respect of the faire wind; but they vsed both, and so made on to the West-ward of *Oran*, whither the Shippe was bound; and not ceasing to row, (fresh men still helping) before darke night they were gotten aboue threescore miles from the place where the fight was: but since none of them knew to take the Altitude, and night came darke on them, vncertaine of their course, they yet held on West-ward, that being the safest; and so after the nights second watch, they found that they were neere a Coast, and the wind sitting a sterne, they were ere long driuen into a faire and well-sheltring Harbour, on whose land stood a strong Castle, that was founded on a sure high Rocke, vnresistable limit to the Seas salt waues.

*The end of the second Discourse of the second Part.*

**T H E**



THE SECOND PART  
OF  
GERARDO.  
THE  
VNFORTVNATE  
SPANIARD.

*The third and last Discourse.*



GERARDO, with the capacite of his fraile vnderstanding, measured (though temperately) the powerfull greatnesse of heauens providence: which made him a little stumble at the truth so full of strange diuersities: till comming neerer to himselfe out of this mist of ignorance, his minde subiected his doubtfull credit, and his courageous heart, transcending all earthly hopes,

promised a happy end to those aduerse meanes which brought him into so many narrow Straites. The present confused accident doth well and evidently paint out this truth.

The poore Christians, how-euer free from all-Sea danger, yet were now in worse taking then euer, ghesing, that by the land they plainly saw, they were in some Port of *Barbary*, which made their danger irremediably certaine: our Gentleman for his part, was more troubled now, then he had beene formerly for the losse of his liberty, to see that by the former mischance hee was separated from the faire *Iacinta*, but chiefly, firme and loyall *Nise*, whose notable resolution (duely considered by him, all ancient passion set aside) he could not but affoord it a worthy estimation in his affectionate thoughts (some dead Embers of those fires which once inwardly scorched him, lighting and nourishing his gratefull heart :) and, as his reuengefull desire could worke no greater effect in his noble breast then pitie, that taught him to bewaile the losse of *Iacinta*, fearing from her naturall weakenesse some other relapse, that would quite frustrate her, by him promised, remedy.

These iust and more then amorous cares, as much afflicted his wearied mind, as any feare of imminent danger; though desiring too to auoid it, seeing that hitherto they had not bin at all from any on shore discovered. Taking aduice with his companions, it was concluded, and amongst them agreed, that some two of them landing, should with all possible vvariness informe themselves of the place, and accordingly, they might set downe some conuenient course.

Here, each Christian began to haue within himselfe a seuerall faction, dissuading also his best friend from the enterprize; but *Gerardo*, who vvas, as it vvere the President of  
this

this counsell, to whom they remitted the election that hee pleased, not willing to cause any difference, and trusting to his owne good courage, named himselfe for one, and one of the weakest persons in the Frigot besides for a Companion; and therefore being all fully satisfied, they set the two on shore as farre off as they could from sight of the Castle, for feare of danger. They now on Land clambered vp certaine Rocks, and being got neere the top of them, might heare a noise of Horsemen, which made them stop. The least they could in this occasion leate, was to light vpon some *Alarbian* Cottage; and therefore hearkening somewhat more wistly, they might heare voices and talking: but perceiuing those ceased ( for they had a pretty while listened from behinde the Rocke ) and thinking that the parties had made a stand thereabouts, without more adoe, they stole creepingly on, till they came to a spacious Plaine ( as it were ) which were the Mountaines Toppe, from whose craggie precipices, they might plainly discover two men on horsebacke armed, with their Launces in their hands, and Shields at the Saddles Pumels: who, discoursing (as it seemed) somewhat earnestly, caused the noise, which so carefully did leade these two on. *Gerardo* verily beleeeued they were Moogres, which his fearefull Companion was easily also induced to, though gathering somewhat neerer close by the ground, to auoid being perceiued, they might heare the one of them vse these angry words to the other.

Goe to then, *Daw Martin*, no more words, 'tis now no time to delay my reuenge; now you must satisfie the wrong'd *Ismenia*, with the price of your blood, in dying by my hand; for to this purpose alone was the drawing you from *Oran* contriued: and so ceasing, they might likewise heare his Aduersarie reply in this manner: Rather, base Cavalier, these Rockes of *Massalquibir* shall prooue the eternall

nall sepulchre of thy vaine arrogance, which, how little I esteeme, thou shalt quickly perceiue, and how much fitter it had been for thee, not to haue owned anothers iniuries: and with this, both of them falling backe to come on vvith more force, wheeling about to take field-roome enough, began to set spurres to their horses.

It is not possible to expresse our *Gerardo's* gladnesse, as soone as by the two Gentlemens discourse, he knew the secure Country where he was; & willing to free both of them from each others danger, but not daring alone to venter vpon two horsemen, hee instantly dispatcht his Companion to the Frigor with the happy newes, willing him to make all haste, and bring foure or fise of the company with him, that, by their helpe, the furious couple might bee parted: who at this time (the Moone shining bright) making the staring Rockes dumbe witnessles to their valour, and the desert solitude their quiet Sticklers, with vndaunted spirits most desperately with their Launces rushed together. *Gerardo* could not so perfectly note (by reason of the distance) each particularitie of that bloudy combate, whose disastrous end he feareing, and that his friends would stay too long (setting his owne danger aside) he ranne in to part them: iust at the very instant, when both, with the violent shocke of their Horses, came together to the ground: when suddenly (one of them couragiously leaping vpon his feete, and about to haue set vpon his opposite with drawn sword) *Gerardo* stept betweene, and rebating the furious offers of his Semitar, desired him likewise to forbear: but the enraged Gentleman was so blinded with reuengefull madnes, that, without either hearkening to the request, or least mitigating his fury, seeing his Contrary still laid along, cryed out to *Gerardo*, to suffer him to make an end of the Traitor. By this time (for doubtlesse otherwise these two might haue



haue fallen foule vpon each other ) came in *Gerardo's* companions, but so speedily and fiercely, seeing him in that manner, that, had not he, very warily prevented their fury, the impatient Combatant might haue been in a great deale of danger; who, amazed with the vnexpected sight of so many, would faine (to haue auoided the hazzard) haue seized on his Horse: but *Gerardo*, presuming, his feare was the same, that his owne not long since satisfied it, by crying out to him, that they were not Moores, but Christians: with which, lesse troubled, they began now to approach neerer to one another.

But no sooner began they to treat in colder blood, when our *Castilian* by his voice remembered the present party, to be *Don Iayme* the *Arragonian*, his singularly intimate friend, whose company *Gerardo* lost (as you finde in the first parts second Discourse) when by his help they forced *Jacinta* out of the Nunnery. Hee was a little troubled with the vnexpected accident, as thinking it a dreame: but (his second cogitations working better in his noble brest) casting by his damasked Semitar, hee threw his armes about the others necke. His old friend was no lesse moued; for *Gerardo's* habit, and the improper Moone-light, did much make difficult the knowing him, so (the truth vncertaine) his confusion was at a stand, & the rather when he might heare these ensuing words:

Why, how now, *Don Iayme*, Valorous Sir, lift you your angry Steele against your greatest friends? Hold, stay that arme; for, if *Gerardo*, in appeasing your wrath haue offended you, as repentant as humble, he layes his head at your feete. This melting language called backe *Don Iayme's* remembrance, and represented to him the voice and presence of his old acquaintance *Gerardo*: whereupon straight ensued his thankfull acknowledgement, making him ioyfully



fully admire at the strangenes of the accident. By this time some of the company, got in to the Gentleman that lay on the ground, whom they found (weltring in his blood, thorow-dead) run thorow the body with a Launce: which they made knowne (for feare of what might ensue) to the new friends: the newes was very vn-pleasing to *Gerardo*, in respect of his friends danger; who, now nobly compassionate of his enemies mortall hap, made one to helpe to hide him in the secretest part of the Rocks: and (determined wisely to stay no longer there, informed of their Frigot in the Hauen) he resolved with them to imbarke himselve in her. This indeed was the safest course; and so both these Gentlemen longing to know the occasion of each others encounter in those parts, went backe with the company to their Vessell; where entring, by that time it grew to bee day, diuers persons, that desired passage for *Spaine*, repaired thither.

*Gerardo* had formerly desired to expect some newes of the two Dames and their Ship; but seeing as yet they were not arriued, fearing least some sinister chance might hinder *Don Iayme* his Voyage; and preferring his friends safety, before his owne satisfaction, hee was rather content that they should hold their course for *Spaine*; and hauing by the way recounted to the valiant *Aragonian*, his strange fortunes since the time he saw him: one day (his owne discourse ended) desirous to know the cause that brought *Don Iayme* to so remote hazzards, he made bold to motion an account of it, which the other most willingly granted, not so much importuned by his friends request, as by his owne free desire to giue him greater content: and so, sitting them down vpon the Sterne, with sighes that drew on the past-future Story, *Don Iayme* thus began:

Not long before your comming to *Zaragoza*, some  
Gentlemen

Gentlemen and my selfe bestowed the setting forth of certaine shewes and triumphs; in midst of which and the solemnitie, a distaste arose, caused by *Lisauro* (whom you well knew) as a principall Motor, and my Vnkle *Don Iulio de Arragon*, was hee that most opposed him, and consequently my selfe was forced to make a party, maugre *Lisauro* and his friends. It imports not much to know the particulars, I may onely tell you, that the maine matter was, about a businesse deciphered but to no ill intent, by the aforesaid *Don Iulio*, wherein *Lisauro* made construction of a wrong done to him. From this slight beginning, greater combustions arose, nourished by the vnquietest spirits of both factions, and thus they grew to bandy together, and a long time after, with many fraies and brabbles to infect one another.

In the very heate of this feude, my Vnkle being necessarily to take a iourney out of towne, and I, to accompany him, this accident you shall heare hapned vpon our returne. As wee came merrily riding homeward, within some three Leagues of *Zaragoza*, a sudden storme came vpon vs, in such violent manner, with Thunder-claps, Lightning, Winde, and streames of water that gushed out of the Clouds; that (though the tempest caught vs not in the gulph of *Narbona*, but in a Valley of the Riuer *Hebrus*) we alike feared drowning; and therefore spurred on as fast as we could, till spying certaine habitations, and amongst them a good faire house of pleasure, which seemed to belong to some Gentleman, striking out of the high-way, and guiding our Horses thither-ward, we got to the place, iust at the instant that a Coach entred in at another gate, driven (as it might seeme) by the same necessitie that we.

Heere mine Vnkle and my selfe, with the rest of our company, stayed a long houre, expecting when the storme would

would cease, but with different intents, for mine Vnkle onely longed to be at home; but I, (as a thing more proper to my Peeres) desired to see what company went in the Carroach; supposing (for the Bootes were very close shut downe) they must needs bee women within, (as indeed true it was) though the searching out of this truth had like to haue cost my boldnesse deare: for I had scarce offred to lift vp one of the boote lids and looke in, when, out issued two men; who laying hold on their swords, as they ioyntly blamed my vn-mannerly act, obliged mee to the like; and the rather, knowing them to bee no other then *Lisano* and his kinsman *Tirso*, both, our vowed enemies: and though my youthfull rashnesse might something haue beene excused; yet the matter proceeded now so farre (choller and late enmitie depriuing vs all of reason) that our seruants came in too to mend the businesse. I much feared, that (any mischance hapning, wee beeing more in number) it might bee after imputed to vs for cowardize: which made me altering my purpose, seeke to shelter them, by causing our people to retire, and to lay the blame vpon my owne foolish curiositie.

And certainly the two Kinsmen, knowing how little there was to be gained from vs, would gladly haue accepted my Apologie, if at this time foure or five of their seruants had not entred newly in; who (it seemed) loytered behinde their Masters, that with their comming changing their notes, broke off all parley, and so the fray began, our side as willingly answering, that in a trice here was the battell of *Agrimant*, nothing was heard but clashing of swords, noise, cries, and groanes of such as vvere wounded on euery side.

No lesse were the out-cries within the Carroach, neere which the hottest of the skirmish was. My enraged Vnkle  
willing

willing to end all distastes betwixt *Lisauro* and him, most eagerly followed him, till such time, as he, stumbling at one of the Carraoch Cushions, fell ouer and ouer: and *Don Iulio* with haste had like to haue saue vpon him: which it seemed *Tirso* had markt, and the aduantage made him approach: but I fearing mine Vnkles misfortune, beat by two fierce thrusts that *Tirso* tilted at him, and with my Sword and Dagger crosse-warded, bore off a willing blow he made at me, for my charitie to saue another: by this time *Lisauro* was gotten vp; so that learning *Don Iulio* and *Tirso*, to begin againe vpon euen termes, my fury, or rather good fortune guided me to a new encounter with *Lisauro*: for with the first back-blow dealt, I left him without defence, since, the blade flying out of his hand, he remained onely with his swords hilt. I then tooke notice of the good successe; and sure our old enmitie had here ended, had it not beene for the intercession of two Dames; one of which laying hold on my Contrary, all blubberd and afflicted, and the other comming towards me, sought to assuage my anger, and to mediate for the dis-armed Gentleman: she that spoke to me, had her face all couered with Tiffany, which seruing as a Maske, onely discovered two faire eyes, but at this time clouded with some pittifull teares, which accompanied with sighes and discreet phrase, not onely reined in my vnbridled fury; but also (seeing *Tirso* on one side wounded by mine Vnkle, fly backe, and on the other their seruants driuen vp to a corner, labour in their defence) made me to second *Tirso*, and re-bating *Don Iulio's* blowes and his, cryed out to them to hold: and by this time some other indifferent parties came happily in and parted vs all. I signified to the vnknowne Dame, that her discreet and noble carriage gained me to be her seruant, as farre as the sauing her kinsman or friends life, and should command mine owne. So  
that

that at last my Vnkle constrain'd by my entreaties, got to horse, and the like did I; and with our haste, I forgot to take so much as a bare leaue of the Gentlewomen, onely commanded our seruants to follow; with whom, (as vvell to take order for what had passed, as to cure some that vvere wounded) we returned to *Zaragoza* with such speed, that before night we were gotten to our lodgings, though I staid not long in mine, rather following my Vnkles aduice, absented my selfe for at least twenty dayes in a Village some dayes iourney off, which was the cause I could not (to my desire) informe my selfe of the Dame that spoke to me, whom I much longed to know.

The Officers of Iustice hauing vnderstood from *Don In-lio* the late accident, with all the circumstances, fearing the resulting of some greater inconueniences from it, sought to pacifie all parties, which they so diligently laboured, that with much adoe a generall concord was effected, and all were publicly made friends.

Then I returned againe to my home and former care, but so vnluckily, that doing what possibly I could, I was not able to learn who the two former Dames were, or whether they went; which difficulty was the more encreased by the feare I had, least my iealous enemies might fall into some new suspitions; if, haply they should come but to the least notice of my curious intent: wherefore desisting, I tooke truce with my desires.

Thus past I on some two moneths and better, in vvhich time new inuitements, different occasions, and seuerall varieties, made mee forget the former businesse quite, till one morning amongst others, being to meet some friends, who had appointed the venturing of a Rest at *Primera*, as I was going out of my lodging, a Woman masked, came, and suddenly conueyed a Letter into my hand, saying, To mor-

row



row morning, *Don Iayme*, you shall haue mee here for the answer, and without another word, left me, as full of trouble, as longing for the contents; and so opening it, I read, if not the same words, at least the matter you shall heare.

*My fathers lingring sicknesse, and former troubles, haue made me deferre, though not forget, the acknowledgement of a particular obligation, in which (Don Iayme) for your noblenesse not long since to Lisauero, I am ingaged to your valour. Let this iust motiue, worthiest Signior, be a sufficient warrant to excuse my loosenesse; rather, in your honour'd thoughts, afford it a better title, since, though I presume as a stranger now, I doubt not but time and our correspondence, may make me worthy of a reasonable estimation in your affection; of which when I may haue some sufficient prooffe, you shall know who I am: in the meane time I humbly beseech you suffer like your noble selfe, in which confidence Heauen protect you.*

Here ended the pithie Letter, whose contents equally amazed, and gladded me, to haue gotten at length some (though confused) notice of the countrey Dame, whose Letter (infinitely contented) I answered, and fully satisfied for my neglect of not taking leaue of her, when our bickering was, by letting her know the exquisit search I had made to excuse my selfe, and expresse how much I was her seruuant; vrging withall, my desire with all earnestnesse to see her, though in conclusion I closed vp all, with submitting my selfe to her will, without seeking to know or enquire any thing that might contradiet her pleasure; and what I wrote, I made good, giuing my Letter to the disguised partie, that the next morning came punctually for it, without daring to demand so much as her Mistresses name, or the least circumstance.



In this manner, I continued a good while; but to deale plainly, though her discreet Letters promised a subiect of much worth and goodnesse, yet the want of knowing her did more disperse my affections.

'Twas now about the gladfom time of Shrone-tide, more solemnely kept in *Zaragoza*, then any other citie of *Spaine*, at which time, with some friends and kinsmen of mine owne age and condition, clad in colours, and Vizards, wee marched vp and downe the streetes, enioying many a mirthfull opportunitie: for at this time of yeere, our women haue full libertie, and dispence with their ordinary reservednesse. In the heate of our pastime, on the Sunday night, hauing notice of certaine Reuels that were kept in priuate houses, vvilling to affoord our eyes the content of seeing, vvee visited all: till such time, as at last, comming to the house of one Signior *Bellides*; vvhere, all the youth, brauerie, and beauty of the Citty vvas, we purposed to enter, but most vvarily, in respect that the aforesaid Gentleman was of a contrary faction to vs; for (though vvee had beene before made friends) yet we still kept aloofe.

Neuer, since I vvas man, saw mine eyes a rarer Beauty, nor a more troublesome obiect to my soule, then one, amongst the Dames there; and although there were few present, that deserued not a particular commendation, yet she, who fell to my lot, (I meane) shee vvhom I set by, was so admirably beauteous, that the rest, in comparison, were but swartie Egyptians.

The spacious Hall was set round with Torchies, and Lights of seuerall inuentions; and many of the Gallants and gallant Dames of the Reuels beganne to foot it, to the sound of harmonious muscicall Instruments; so that all the Spectators eyes beeing fastened vpon them, I might the more freely employ mine, nail'd (as it were) to that beautifull

titull obieſt. And ( but falteringly ) ſomething I would haue ſpoken, when mine eyes with their earneſtneſſe better ſupplied my tongues defect, by ſhewing my hearts cares.

I know not whether the knowledge of my voyce, or the liſting vp my Vizard to wipe my face, made her the more attentiu to my words; but drawing cloſer to mee, with a ſoft and low voyce ſhe beſtowed on mee this answer: I am much indebted to Heauen, *Don Iayme*, for my good fortune in ſeeing you, wherein my deſires are accompliſht, which ſhall euer be ready, ſeruiſceable to your happineſſe, though you may happely want good will to repay their affection: at which you may not wonder, when hereafter you ſhall vnderſtand how much they eſteeme you. And willing to haue gone on in this diſcourſe, (which ſtrangely amazed me, not knowing what ſhe meant, and therefore troubled to answer) one of the Gallants of the Reuels interrupted vs, who inuiting her out to a Galliard, left me without her, and another Dame to take her place; whither, after ſhe had moſt gracefully danced, about to haue returned, ſeeing the Roome filled, ſhee was conſtrained to make choice of another; ſo that, to my ſoules grieve, not knowing how to get out of that aduenture, into which I was thus embarked, hardly could I diſſemble my diſtaſte, at leaſt I made it knowne to one of my greateſt friends there with me, propoſing to him, if he knew the occaſion of it: he told mee ſhee was daughter to the Gentleman of the houſe, which made me much more wonder at the ſucceſſe, and ſorrowfully deſpairefull, leſt the differences betwixt her friends and mine, would quite daſh the proſecution of that amorous fire, which by little and little had wholly ſeiz'd my heart.

In theſe carefull imaginations my affections wavered in their beginning, when (the Reuels growing to an end) be-

ing late, euery man went home, and my selfe, and company vnknowne, (as we came) and hauing rested that night, we returned to our disguizes, and the pastimes: and though the sight of this faire Dame beset mee in diuers places, where the Shrouetide sports were, yet I could neuer after get a fit opportunitie to speake to her: so these merry daies passed away, and many others, in which, frequenting both day and night her street and house, and otherwhiles coming punctually to the Church where shee vsed to heare Masse, I tempered with the fauours she sent from her eyes, the amorous ardour of my desires, mitigating with such poore comforts, the restless torment that afflicted me.

Howsoever this new affection might haue beene sufficient to diuert me from all other, yet it blotted not out of my remembrance, how much the Country-Dame had shewed in her Letters, who vnderstanding (I know not by what meanes) of my new vvatchfulnessse and cares, vvhen I least expected, by the vsuall seruant sent mee a Ticker, in which she not onely signified her ielous complaints, but particularized also the most singular acts and signes, euen to the very Phrase I vsed to the Dame of the Reuels, so right, that I was exceedingly astonisht, not guessing how it vvvas possible for her to come by that punctuall knowledge of hers; and therefore vvilling to diuert her, I resolved to deny all, requesting likewise most earnestly to see her; that by laying such a necessarie obligation vpon me, she might make sure my correspondence, and secure her owne ielous suspicions: and in conclusion, though in many other Papers of hers, she seemed to be lesse satisfied with my excuses, yet since hers, for the accomplishing my desire of seeing her, vvvere farre more, wanting a sight of her, mine eyes were not to be blamed, if they were bent vpon a subiect lesse disdainful and coy: so that slackening my returne of answers to her

Tickets,

Tickets, I began to re-prosecute my amorous intents with the sprightly Dame of the Reuels: And desiring nothing more, then that she might truly know my affection, and how much the difficulty of conuersing with her, troubled mee, I vvas bold to request that my mind might be signified vnto her in a Song; and giving her notice of the time, with her consent, accompanied with that friend, to whom (the night of the Reuels) I made knowne my thoughts, about Midnight, at the appointed time, vve went into her Street; where hauing taken Stand right opposite to my Mistrisses Window, the Musicians began to touch their Strings, and one of them to warble out a Dittie in the following Verses, hauing for subiect my impossible Loue.

*Thou rotten Vessell, that each furious waue  
Measur' st, with little force, as dammage great,  
where thy weake ribs weather and water beate,  
Stopping those open mouths that fauour craue:*

*Thou, that enforc't, the Current do'st diuide,  
Fly now to Hea'n, then to Abyssus fall:  
Strike, now on Flats, then on high Rockes withall;  
Casting out bodies from each splitted side.*

*Yet happy, thou, whose Passenger still lines  
In hope of calmer Seas, and slacker wind:  
But, ay me! haplesse, that a Loue-sicke mind,  
Impossible to cure, no calme relieves.*

All the while the Musicke plaid and the Song lasted, not onely the Windowes of Signior *Bellides*, but the rest of the whole neighbourhood were stucke with auditors, to heare the Song, and many other toyes and fancies, till such time

as day-breake being neere, we returned homeward, where I remained, taking rest vntill day was well come on, and going after dinner to haue a reuenge for my losses at *Primero*, to the accustomed meeting, the seruant that vsed to bring me the Tickets from the Countrey-Dame, met mee vpon the way, and deliuering a Paper from her Mistresse, left me to read the ensuing Contents:

*I knew not, Don Iayme, how you can excuse your proceeding, for though my slacknesse to see you may seeme to discharge you, yet that is but a poore euasion, to matters of greater consequence, such as the promised vovves of all your Papers sent me: wherefore finding at present (witnesse your last nights Musicke to Signior Bel- lides his daughter) your false dealing with me, no marvell though my complaints (how inist soeuer) be shunned by your cares. But that you may know, what you contemne in me, is not inferiour to ought of that Dames, as well to do my selfe right, as to make you see your owne losse, (though you vniustly deserue the fauour) I shall this night giue you leaue to see me. The Bearer, if you list to expect her late at night at your owne house doore, shall conduct you where we may speake together. Heauen keepe you, and make you acknowledge how much you owe to my affection.*

No sooner, my *Gerardo*, had I read these last Lines, when I was much more confounded, then pleased, with the receiued promise: so exceeding was my trouble, to see how small credit was giuen to my truth, howsoeuer I determined to obey; expecting the night, by which time my Guide was come, who taking me by the hand, willing me alone to follow her, (the Clocke then striking newly ten) wee went crossing the greatest part of the Citty, till comming to a narrow Lane, without any fallie at the other end, drawing neere to certaine ruinous white Walles; when we were iust  
vnder



vnder them, she left me to expect, till such time, as shee by another vvay returned to giue notice to her Mistris; and so trudging apace from me, I waited the euent, vvondring as much at the manner and contriuing of it, as vvary and armed to preuent all hazard or inconuenience. In this confused sort, I attended a long houre at least, by when I might heare a Window not farre from the Wall open, at which a Woman appearing; for though the darknesse hindred my sight, yet her voice made me easily perceiue it vvvas the party vvvhich brought me thither, and so drawing neerer, shee bade me get to the top of the broken Wall, from vvhence they might conueniently speake to me. That vvithout difficulty I performed, and being nimble mounted, shee bade me there stay awhile, and shutting the Window I went in, (my mind beeing now in such trouble, as if vvillingly it would haue forsaken my body) and my desires hung on euery the least noyse, iudging each breath of ayre to bee my Mistresses vvary steppe, vvhom at last I might heare gently open the Window and present her selfe. The Wall where I stood vvvas so high, that it well-nigh raught to the Yron Frame of her Bay-window; and so, together vvith the glimpse of a Light in the chamber, I could quickly take notice, that the faire creature present, vvvas no other then the gallant daughter of Signior *Bellides*; vvvhich so vvonderstrucke me, that though I had bethought me sufficiently of vvhat I meant to say, yet, in respect the reasons I had forged in my brest, were more for satisfying the ielous complaints of the Countrey-Dame, then for courting the present subiect; my tongue waxing dumb, I grew to that passe, that had not the faire Dame (perceiuing my alteration) laid hold on me, the Wall and my countenance had been much of a complexion, but feeling my selfe reuiued by her soft touch, recouering my lost spirits, I might heare her proceed.

ceed. Why, how now, Gallant, vvhhat fright is this ? afraid of a Woman ? or doth my presence make you feare the iust punishment due to your inconstancie? I am she whom you so vnkindly vsed for Signior *Bellides* his daughter, and yet (obliged for the seruices you did her) must pardon greater iniuries: I, *Don Iayme*, am she, that in the Country and company of *Lisauro*, your noble courteous behauiour won vnto you: the same she that enioyed your gladding conuerfation at the Reuels; lastly, the same *Ismenia*, Signior *Bellides* his daughter, and whilst life shall last, maugre the Worlds contradiction, Yours. Knowing, my best loued Signior, that the inueterate enmitie of our houses, might crosse my designs, I deferred our meeting, expecting, till some of times vnexpected seasons, might (as at the present) facilitate our desires; which I trust are now accomplisht, since you are disposed to loue *Ismenia*, one of your Houses greatest enemies. That this is true, your last nights Musicke perswaded mee; vvhich fauour, for the paines it cost you, I esteeme with equall recompence, as my determinate resolution hath well expressed by this nights meeting; the disposing of vvhich, hath not beene vvithout some difficulties, and no lesse hazard. Heauen grant, my good *Don Iayme*, that you acknowledge better then to the Country-Dame, how much *Ismenia's* loue and loyall affection merits; and in so doing, I shall liue most happy, neither shall your selfe complaine at all of our not mutuall correspondence.

And ending her discourse, she gaue vway to my vnloosened tongue, to satisfie her amorous obligation: with the best discourse therefore my Soule could on the sudden frame, she made knowne her gratefull and greatest secrets: last of all I excused the errour of my inconstancie against the Country-Dame, attributing it to the rare beauty, attractive power of *Ismenia*; so that, the distaste I before was guiltie of,

of, turned straight into mirthfull pastime, in vvhich wee spent most part of that pleasing night; at vvhich time I vnderstood from my Mistris, that the reason of her comming with *Lisauo* and *Tirso* to the Country-house, was, to auoid the Storme which that afternoone tooke them, as they were going from *Zaragoza* to a Village, vvhere at the same time her father lay very sicke; for whom, together with her mother, (the fore-mentioned woman in the Fray) they went to bring him more commodiously home: and that afterward returning to the Citie, inforced, as she said (but more by her owne generous condition) by my courtesie, she endeoured by her trustie maid, to giue me notice of her affection.

So that after all this (both of vs extremely ioyfull) day comming on, she quitted the Window, and I leaped from the Wall, agreeing onely still to continue our amorous night-meetings at the same place. The next day passed on, and night vvith my ioyfulness being come, at our prefixed houre, I vvent towards my *Ismenia's* Street, and from thence to the vsuall Stand; which, as I might now (lesse troubled) plainly perceiue, was the backe-side of Signior *Bellides* his house, though the former night little dreaming of any such thing, I took no notice of it. Here stood I close expecting when the Window would open; when, about to climbe my Wall, I might vpon a sudden perceiue three or foure enter the Lane, and making a stand in the midst of it, heard them closely whispering: so that the desired instant too for my approach, being come, I was in a double feare, either of hauing the act (if I mounted) discovered, or if not, my selfe: both which, and either of them might make mee equally thereabouts suspected.

In midst of this confusion, the worst that could bee, fell out: for *Ismenia* at her Window taking no notice of those men,

men, out of her greedinesse to spie, and onely guessing it was I, called out, saying, Hift, why come you not, *Don Jayme*; at which call, the parties in the Lane began to draw neerer, but I (fearing lest by comming too neere they might know me) without a word speaking, let flie at them so outragiously, that at the very first encounter one of them fell downe sure enough; and his companions frighted with the mischance, instantly turned their backs, crying out for helpe so lowd, that I durst no longer expect the issue; which was, that I had no sooner slipped out of the Lane, when another troope of men entred into it, whom afterward I vnderstood to haue beene all of one partie, Officers appointed purposely to apprehend some suspicious persons thereabouts. Considering then my danger, before any one might follow, I hastily tooke flight to my Lodging, remaining all that night as sad and pensatiue, as the night before merrie and ioyfull. As soone as it was morning, I receiued a Ticket from my Mistris, in which, excusing with her shallow experience, the inconsiderate neglect, cause of our disquiet, she concluded, aduertizing me, how fitting it was for the securitie of our loues, to deferre priuate meetings, in respect of the carefull watch which was kept, as well, as without doores, in her house, being it was publicly reported, that an Officer of Iustice was slaine in the night-time, for no more then hauing taken some notice of a Gentleman, that spoke to some-body at her Window.

I well perceiued the inconuenience with *Ismenia's* reason, and how important therefore it was for me to follow her aduice, since the danger, ( my pretension to her kindred knowne ) was no lesse hazzardous then irremediable: and though the losse of her sight tormented me to the very soule; yet, the feare of her ruine, more then mine own, kept my affection at distance, and the better to dissemble the

the matter, I absented my selfe from *Zaragoza*. *Ismenia* satisfied with my intent, by her leaue, I tooke a journey to a towne of mine, your selfe at that time and *Jacinta* going along with mee; the accident in our iourney falling out, which enforced you to take her out of the Nunnery, where by my order she was left, and likewise of losing our selues in the darke night, I arriued by morning at my own home; and hauing caused all possible search to be vsed after you, hearing no newes, I endeououred to pacifie matters in the Nunnery, which I might easily doe, considering the neereneesse of alliance betweene the Abbess and my selfe; who, vnwilling to bring me into danger, was contented to dissemble the outrage.

At this time (though farre off from my Mistris) yet still wee held correspondence by meanes of my trusty friend, whom (as you heard) I made privy to my secret: and so, *Ismenia's* Maid deliivering her Mistresses Letters into his hands, they came safely to mine. But at last my heart vnable to support longer absence, at two moneths end, I returned to *Zaragoza*, and there to my former cares. *Ismenia* soone knew of my arriuall; for (to deale truly) no lesse was I solicited by her Letters and perswasions, then mine owne ardent desires; and so the ensuing night, in company of *Don Martin de Vrra* (this being my friends name) I went to the vsuall place; where I remained in louing conuersation with my Mistris, till towards morning, and thus many a night after continued our affections: vvhich at last grew to that height of increase, that neither of vs, powerfull to resist their inflaming effects, vve at length determined to giue a ioyfull consummation to our passions. And *Ismenia* vanquished by my entreaties for the appointed night, taking first Heaven and her true seruant to vvitnessse, of my hand and faithfull vow to be her Spouse; she consented I should  
by



by the window enter her Chamber, though for some necessary respects, the reward of my labours vvas deferred till the next night: from vvhich time I vvas able to take no rest at all, but toiling vp and downe from one place to another, thought euery minute a long Age, till the vvished moment approached; so that, vyhat should haue beene my greatest ioy, bred me greater disquiet, in vvhich I passed the greatest part of the day, till vvisted by my friend *Don Martin*, to the intent that he might not discouer my vveaknesse, I forced my selfe to as much cheerefulnesse as I could (which being forced, and I but counterfetly dissembling my inward trouble) he might vvell perceiue my alteration. This he made knowne vnto me, and vvithall requested to know the cause of my discontent: vvhereupon, I, that had formerly trusted him vvith my bosomes greatest secrets, thought it no raritie now to discouer the present; and therefore made knowne vnto him (vvould God I had dyed first) our agreement: and indeed, *Gerardo*; though (as then) I tooke not the notice I ought to haue done of his lookes, by vvhat afterward hapned (too late to bee helped) I called to minde, how *Don Martin* became suddenly sad, as soone as euer I had made knowne vnto him the cause of my vnquietnesse, but mine eyes were so blinded from his passion, that they neuer so much as marked the least part of it, nor (though they had) might I haue iudged it to redound to my prejudice.

Lastly, I requested to haue his company (as I was wont) which he easily agreed to; and so (faining a leaue to prepare himself) home he vvent; and within a few houres after, when it was time, came backe againe to mee: and before we went out, he was desirous we should change Cloakes, by which meanes (saide hee) vvee shall the better disguise our selues: in this manner then comming to the lane and place  
(being

(being somewhat late) I might perceiue that *Ismenia* expected; so that with my friends helpe I got speedily vpon the wall, from whence, about to haue climbed to the window, I no sooner went about it, when, two fellows newly rushed into the Lane, beganne hastily to set vpon *Don Martin*, vvith vvhom (though to my seeming by him valiantly resisted) they began such a bickering, as (the night you vvot of) hapned vnto me; but, suspecting as then no other, then that we were laid wait for, I leapt to the ground, and seconding *Don Martin*, we easily droue them out of the Lane, and I, desiring no more then to set my Contrary from thence, seeing him begin to turne tayle, following somewhat hard to remoue him a good way from my Mistresses danger, after I had effected my desire, somewhat weary and breathlesse, I returned againe to my stand, where finding no *Don Martin*, nor any sign of the past skirmish, thinking the same chance had happened to him, that to me; meaning not to expect him longer, I ventured once againe to the top of the wall, to effect my desires: but hauing found the window close shut, thinking verily the fray and clashing of our swords, for more security had caused it, I turned backe againe, though, so perplexed with the vnlookt for accident, that, I could willingly haue sacrificed my selfe.

In all that ensuing night, I could not afford my distracted minde one minutes rest, whose morning comfort it fits, you next heare. About ten of the clocke the next morning, my *Ismenia's* Wench, as frolicke as 'twas possible, comes into my Chamber, and giuing me a Paper from her Mistresse, asked me, if I were more liuely and lesse maidenly then ouer-night? I vnderstood not her meaning, and therefore making no direct reply, onely demanded, whether we had been perceiued? who answered, No. At last, somewhat more contented, I dispatcht her; but no longer lasted

this

this contentedn esse with me, then mine eyes were running ouer these Lines.

*As in all my life I neuer had happier night, so, my delight neuer paid greater abatement; for, as wel your strange silence made my soule sorrowfull, as the danger also in which I first saw you: I am yet fearefull, not knowing whether you arrived safely at your lodging, which doth mortally afflict me; and therefore, loued Spouse, I beseech you, faile not to see me this night, since you are now obliged to know, how ill I shall passe the tedious minutes, without re-enioying your desired presence.*

Euen yet, *Gerardo*, the affrightment of these Lines still haunts me; which, hauing as then sundry times read ouer, and comparing the Wenchs former questions with them, I could not tell what to imagine: but knowing that, till I spoke with *Ismenia*, my labour was vain, I was forced to patience, and expectation of nights approach, by when and before my accustomed houre, I went to *Don Martin* his lodging, aswell with purpose to haue him along with mee, as to know also how he had sped the last night: but, though I bounced and often called at his doore, no answer was made me, which caused me to goe alone; and comming to the place, vp I got, where *Ismenia* expected me.

Me thought as then, deare friend, my disioynted lims were shattered from my bodie; and, that my afflicted heart oppress with some future mischiefe, leaping within me, began to rent and teare: in fine, neuer such a stupid sadnesse possest mans faculties, though at the present I enioyed all the happinesse I could in this world desire.

*Ismenia* soone tooke notice of my trouble, though no other light was by, then what might haue been sent from her sparkling eyes; and so, with equall astonishment, and  
some

some few sighes, she said: Is it possible, *Don Iayme*, that your extraordinary sadnesse thus should lessen our ioyes? last night you would not haue me so much as see you, neither could I obtaine an amorous word from you, in stead of many, that one who so freely deliuered vp the possession of her selfe, might haue expected: and now you proceed againe with the same strangenesse: for Heauens loue, loued Sir, leaue this irkesomnesse, the occasion of which I am wholly ignorant of, at least hide it not from me, since fit it is, that your *Ismenia* should now bee partaker both of your good and bad.

What griefe (thinke you) could here bee equall to that my soule indur'd, hearing such bitter, vn-imagined misfortune? What tongue or words might expresse the raging torment of my griefe-strucke heart; seeing *Ismenia* with such simplicitie to treat of my weightiest lifes affaires? But, for all this, not bending a iot vnder my passion, I resolved to try whether she iested; and after, perceiuing her to be terribly altrcd, when I denied my hauing been at all with her the night before, knowing then plainly that there had been some mistake, and that some other had been my substitute, so powerfull was the anguish of my heart, that, my spirits failing, I swooned in *Ismenia's* armes: who, presently causing her Maid to bring a light, and perceiuing in my lost colour the truth of her ill fortune, not any way suspecting my affection, which she euer held to be vnfaigned, she began by degrees to feare she had been beguiled, and with one experiment was quickly satisfied that she was: for remembring her selfe at that instant, of a little Relicke and Purse, which was found vnder her Pillow, she knew it was left by him that possessed the place and her honour; within the Purse also there was a little Booke with Pictures, in whose first leafe the Owners name,

name, the false *Don Martin* was written: which her Maid no sooner heard, when roaring out, and turning to the afflicted *Ismenia*, and me that had now my senses better about mee, she said:

You need not, Master and Mistresse, trouble your imaginations longer, or search for farther evidence of the truth: for vndoubtedly the treacherous Author of this villanie, is *Don Martin*; which, heauen knowes, I might (beast that I vvas) haue helped, if the feare of some greater misfortune had not forced me to silence; howsoeuer, I could neuer be perswaded, that his base thoughts would euer haue aimed at such an end: Know therefore, vvorthy Sir, that, as soone as you had absented your selfe from this Citie, leauing (for better conuenience) your conueyance of Letters to the said party, as soone as I had carried my Mistresses first vnto him, after some speech, he broke at last with mee, saying, My Mistris was much deceived in affecting you, to thinke to receiue the like recompence, for that your returne of loue was not onely contrarie, but that, by your dissembing, you sought too to reuenge the enmitie of your houses vpon her honour: and that (to confirme this to bee so) vnmindfull of her, hauing violently stolne a certaine Dame from a Nunnery, you liued lasciuiously with her at your owne home. This he told me, but so weakely hiding his owne passion, that I well enough ghesse'd at the falshood, by perceiuing the Owners infirmitie: his cares ended not so, but with all opportunities hee returned to the former theame, declaring himselfe at last so far as to offer me some gifts of value, if I would make knowne his affection to my Mistris, insisting also to haue me perswade her (how treacherously you dealt with her) and the aime and intent of your fained affection: but, the loue I euer bore to your noble proceeding, & the loyall seruice I owe to my Mistris, made



made me not onely shut mine eares to such base offers, but desire her to sollicite your speedy returne: which *Don Martin* no sooner heard, and that you would bee backe, when, with a false smiling countenance he made me belecue, that all his former endeouours were onely to try my fidelitie, as well as my Mistresses constancie; and though I perceiued, this was, but (like the Lapwing) crying out in the false place, yet I durst not make it knowne to my Mistris, as thinking, that if she should discouer it to you, there must needs be some breach berwixt your selfe and *Don Martin*, which might in the end light heauily vpon me, to my Mistris and her friends dishonours.

This (though well pondered) silence, is that, which hath wrong'd you both; and if the honest end for which it was meant, cannot free the Owner from punishment; Loe, here's the party before you, inflict what reuenge on her you please.

Thus ending, and all of vs falling into an exact consideration of each circumstance in this wofull misfortune; as first, how vnseasonably *Don Martin* vrged our exchanging Clokes, next the beeing set vpon by those fellows iust at the instant when I was to get to the window, and my Contraries easie retiring, comparing also the time that my false friend had to get into *Ismenia's* Chamber, his silence all the while hee was with her, with his commanding the lights to be first remooued, and lastly his feare and fright; by all these wee not onely knew *Don Martin* to bee the Actor of the Villany, but the Author of the fray also, plotting it with some friends or seruants of his, in the manner related, that whilst I should hazzard my selfe in his defence, he might effect his treacherous purpose: all these strong presumptions confirming poore *Ismenia*, no humane thoughts can conceiue her infinite teares, equall sighes,

E c

hearts

hearts oppression, sad groanes, and frequent dismaying. Many a dead traunce shee had in my armes, and as often certainly had I seconded her, if the raging desire of reuenge had not courageously strengthened me. In fine, considering that for my sake shee had suffered so great an iniurie, and how much also I was in point of honour obliged to mine owne satisfaction, giuing her the best comfort that griefe would permit, with a louing embrace I tooke leaue, promising her faithfully not to bee at quiet, till her honour were fully satisfied, if not restored.

The next morning in the Torment you may well suppose, I priuily lay in wait for my treacherous friend: but after I had long and to small purpose watched, I vnderstood, that the day before, he was ridden out of towne; so that now it appeared plainely, that hauing missed his Purse, and knowing by it his villany must needs bee discouered, his guilt made him fly, as hauing neither heart nor face to shew himselfe to a friend whom hee had so basely wronged.

This absence of his somewhat troubled me, as well, in retarding my reuenge, as being ignorant of his abode: but iust Heauen prouoked by his wickednesse, was pleased, by the meanes (that hee thought was his securest) to make knowne vnto me where he resided; putting into my minde to goe to the Post-house, where hauing sundry times looked over the Letters from all parts, at last I lighted vpon a superscription to a kinsman of his, which I broke open, and reading it, perceiued it came from mine enemy who wrote from *Oran* in *Barbary*, requesting his kinsman to take order for the sending certaine moneyes and trunks of apparell. This ioyfull newes I made knowne to *Ismenia*, and taking a speedy leaue, addressed my selfe for *Oran*, determined, if I could, to kill mine enemy; and about some fixe dayes agoe

Larriued

I arriued in a small Barke at the Port of *Maffalquitir*, where, fearing to be discouered, I came not till yesterday abroad, informing my selfe as diligently as I could from one of the Souldiours of the Fort, whether one *Don Martin de Yrrea* were not in the Citie.

As soone as the fellow had resolued me he was, giuing him some pieces of Siluer to drinke, that hee might the more willingly take some paines for me, I desired him to let *Don Martin* know, that in the Barke (which I fained to be mine) there came certain Trunkes directed to him from *Zaragoza*, for which he must of necessitie come a-boord to fetch them that night, because with the first faire vvinde the Barke was to set sayle for *Spain*. All which the glad Souldier willingly beleueed; and so promising to himselfe a new reward for his good tidings, he effected my will (as by the successe here you haue seene:) for before Sunne-set my Messenger returned with *Don Martins* answere, that he was preparing to come, only stayd to provide himselfe of a Horse, and desired mee therefore to expect him: for, though it were late first, hee would not faile to fetch his Trunkes that night away.

So leauing my Souldier, and providing my selfe of a reasonable good Horse I bought of a Moore (of those that peaceably traffike amongst vs) and well instructed in the vway to the Citie, I betooke me to my fortune: and hauing (as I supposed) rode on the better halfe of the way, and expected vnder these Rockes before vs some two or three houres, hearing none passe by, I began to grow doubtfull of the Souldiers diligence, and hopelesse of any good successe, was ready to haue gone backe againe: but in the midst of these imaginations, I might heare a horses trampling not farre from me, and by and by perceiued a horseman comming somewhat towards me, and (as that Coun-

try manner is) armed as I was, who comming close vp to me, saluting mee, asked whether I trauelled towards the Citie or the Port. My heart betwixt trouble and ioy was ready to haue burst within me; and 'twas maruell, hauing knowne the Traitor by his voice, I afforded him any other answere then with my Launce: but though his treacherie deserued no courtesie, I, not knowing how to bee base, yeelded him this reply; Thy selfe, false *Don Martin*, art the Port and Hauen to which I goe, at which the satisfaction of my reuenge must safely land; and to no other am I bound; and therefore speedily defend thy selfe; for, know, I haue not crossed the stormie Seas, to returne to the vvronged *Ismenia*, with lesse then thy lifes reuenge. I suppose, my Contrary vvas not altogether pleased with this note: from whom, though I receiued diuers replies, yet assured of his wickednesse, my angry spirit could not deferre a vvrathfull execution, remitting to my hand the iust Reuenge, which Heauen hath pleased I should take, before such witness as your selfe, and your valorous companions. Of *Ismenia's* goodnesse as confident am I, as satisfied with the deseru'd chastisement of her wrong, which I purpose to solder (since with honour I now may) by accomplishing my wedlocke vow. This, *Gerardo*, is my intent, this resolution carries me for *Spaine*, more ioyfull then vven I left my Country, for I shall not onely comply vvith my loues obligation, but with a greater, my soules.

Thus farre held on the generous *Aragonian* his Relation, and (that ceasing) *Gerardo* began with his thankes, no lesse ioyfull for the successe, then approving *Don Iayme's* necessarie reuenge: hee applauded his laudible and noble purpose also: and so, within a few houres after, they put safely into the ancient and famous Port of *Cartagena*, vvhere, to  
the

the addition of *Gerardo's* ioy, they found the Ship, vvith *Nise* and *Iacinta* he thought was lost: wherefore, desirous to heare further newes, the first thing he did (gotten on shore) vvvas to seeke the Master of her; whom hee soone found out, vvho vvondring extremely to behold *Gerardo*, hauing giuen him for a dead man, informed him of all that had passed euen to that very instant; how that after they vvvere parted, the Ship vnable to hold her course for *Oran*, vvvas forced backe to *Cartagena*; from vvhence, the faire *Nise* verily perswaded, that *Gerardo* vvvas cast away, bitterly bewailing her misfortune, accompanied by her seruants, meant to returne to *Cesarina*; and that *Iacinta* with her Christian woman too, returned towards *Castile*, but he knew not to what place there they vvould go.

This information (sauing the sorrow of those Dames for him) in another respect much ioyed him, as knowing for certaine they had safely escaped the dangerous storme in which he left them; and imagining that *Iacinta* (according to her purpose) was gone towards *Castile*, desirous to make good his promise to her, he determined to seeke her out; and though he should misse of her, at least he might be in his way to his Mother and Brother *Leoncio*, to vvhom he resolved to make knowne his last mind, vvwhich vvvas: To repay vvith vvorthie recompence the daintie *Nise's* firme and loyall affection: and making *Don Iayme* acquainted vvith this resolution, they both a-fresh exchanging promises and vowes of loue and affection, with an imbrace tooke leaue of each other, as also of the rest of the captiue Christians: the *Aragonian* going towards *Zaragoza*, and our determinate Gentleman making what haste hee could, for *Castile*. The third day of his travell hee was forced to lie some fixe Leagues short of the Imperiall Cittie of *Toledo*, at a *Venta*, that is, a lone Inne vpon the way; where hauing alighted, (in



stead of a better Lodging) he was carried into an vgly close dog-hole, where he was forced to bee contented, and so resolved to lie in his Clothes, that hee might the sooner bee vpon his way, and the earlier in the morning enter the City of *Toledo*. His hard riding exceedingly wearied him, so that going supperlesse to bed, before it grew thorow darke, he was well entred into his first sleepe; from which, within a few houres after, the sollicitous care of his iourney awoke him, together with the Cockes crowing, which vn-tuneable Musicke was his Alarum, and made him iudge the time to be about midnight; wherefore thinking it was too soone to stirre out of the house, hee settled himselfe once againe to rest: but his confused thoughts would scarce allow him a winke, keeping him in this manner so long waking, till neere his beds head he might heare some talking; so that with the suddennesse, and thinking it to haue beene in his Chamber, hee instantly rose vp, and groping about the doore, feeling that to be shut, he returned with more quiet to his bed; where hearing the noyse againe, hearkening more calmelly to it, he might easily distinguish it to bee in the next roome, diuided onely by some few boords, and an old painted-cloth from his; thorow which, by the glimpse of a candle he might perceiue two men, who appeared to him earnestly contending: for thus he might heare the one say to the other, In all the time of our acquaintance I neuer knew thee so faint-hearted as now, which I am ashamed of, and sorry these ghests came to thy house; for any where else I had sped better, and not lost so good a bootie.

To this, *Gerardo* might heare the other, whom hee saw to be the Inne-keeper himselfe, thus reply: Looke you, Signior *Isaguirre*, 'tis not faint-heartednesse which you see in me at present; for had I euer beene so, I could neuer haue thrived so well, as to be reputed reasonable wealthie, and

*Still*

still to maintaine my house and family by the meanes chiefly you know; and therefore you may thinke there is more in it then so: these Ghests (I much doubt) whether they be vworth our venturing on, for I suppose they haue but little money, since they lipped so poorely, and besides, offered to abate of their reckening: why then belike (quoth *I-saguirre*) you haue forgot what I told you, or you belcene it not. I say againe vnto you, that vvith these eyes (though warily) I beheld very good Iewels of theirs, which they brought on shore vvith them at *Cartagena*, and euer since I haue followed them to an inch I am sure; and therefore since time hath offered vs a fit occasion, vvee may this one time grow both of vs rich: and besides, to saue vs harmelesse, look you, there is another Ghest in the next roome; there's no more to be done, but conuey something of theirs thorow the cloth and boords into his Chamber, and vve shall easily make him thought to haue beene the authour of our handi-worke; your selfe and I, with our people, vvitnessing what vve please.

With this diuellish resolution finishing his discourse, mine Oast vvas vanquished; and so, not deferring the least minute their mischieuous purpose, one of them taking in his hand the Light, both vanished out of *Gerardo's* sight, leauing him in the strangest confusion that might be, considering the danger vvich on euery side encompassed him: but resoluing vvith himselfe, that the lesser (though more hazardous) of the two, vvas to hinder their villanous enterprize, he straight most couragiously disposed himselfe to set vpon them: and so taking his Pistoll charged, and his sword in his right hand, hee stept out of his Chamber, iust as these Rogues vvere lifting a doore at the further end of the entry off the hindges, where from within he might also heare a terrible scricking and noife (as hee guessed) of wo-

men: wherupon the good Gentleman, without delay, clapt in to the couple, who void of cowardize, (which such people are commonly accustomed to) like rauenuous beasts, seeing their trecherie discovered, sought to haue clozed with him, but *Gerardo* had too much aduantage over them, aswel in respect of his owne personall valour, as hauing also the better Armes: and so, discharging his Pistoll at one of them, the bullet of it quickly discovered the certainty of the hurt; for hauing strucke the partie in the right arme, his sword fell from him, and himselfe likewise with the grieve, tumbled to the ground, yet at that time his companion vnluckily raught *Gerardo* a wound, and cut him ouer the forehead; which he feeling, his fury had soone guided him to a reuenge vpon his Contrarie; had the Light beene more propitious to his indignation; which (he that stood against *Gerardo*, hauing on purpose or accidentally troden vnder foot) was extinguished, and so the darke preuented his punishment, at the instant, that with much knocking and noise some company at the doore called to bee let in. The clamors within doores, what with the wounded parties howling, the Inne-keepers roaring, the womens wailing, and the whole houses affrightment, were so terribly outrageous, that neither the one nor other could distinctly be heard: till such time as he that had beene Pistol-shot taking some courage, (which he might the better do, in respect *Gerardo* in the darke retired further from him) groping about the doore, and putting backe the Bolt, he straight-way opened it; and seeing fise or sixe persons (those that called) without, he cried out to them not to enter, for feare of a desperate theefe within: whom he and the Inne-keeper (he sayd) hauing resisted to keepe him from robbing two women that lay there, he set vpon them, and discharging a Pistoll, wounded him pittifully in the arme: so that some of the

companie compassionate towards the party, sought to help him; and the rest thought fit to beset the house, and not to enter, that so the theefe within might not escape.

All this while, they within kept vvary silence, for *Gerardo* feeling himselfe wounded, and knowing not how to be reuenged, was onely carefull in the darke to stop his wound close, to keepe it from too much bleeding. And honest, mine Oast, for feare of another bickering, squatted downe as close as he could, and as round together as a thrid-bottom, stirring neither legge nor arme, vvas settled vnder the Table; and the poore vvomen that first cried out, knowing their good or bad fortune depended vpon the dayes approach, vvith vvishes and prayers expecting it, had hidde themselves in seuerall places. They without, thought it no whit secure for them to runne into darknesse, nor in the behalfe of strangers, to vndergo a certaine danger; and therefore both the one and the other waited for day, and Sunrise; whose rayes not long after crowning the Mountaine toppes, (all being now visible) the false Inne-keeper came leaping to the doore, crying, Theeues, theeues! whereupon the Trauellers hauing got sight of *Gerardo*, called out to him to yeeld; and by this too, the fearefull women also were gotten out with their noise, the whole house appearing to be rather an enchanted Mansion, then receptacle for Ghefts.

The good *Gerardo*, with this roguerie of the Inne-keeper and his companions, was as much afflicted, as doubtful how to behaue himselfe, his noble mind hauing neuer before beene plunged into so disgracefull an accident, but referring the successe of all to his innocencie; and relying altogether vpon heauens prouidence, he determined to stand forth; and being come to the dores threshold, was scarce ready to haue begun his satisfaction to those that incom-  
passed

passed him, when in the midst of them hee might perceiue his brother *Leoncio*, whose vnexpected sight so amazed him, that (not knowing what he did) his sword and Pistoll dropt from him, which no sooner happened, but the Inne-keeper and the rest thinking that to be a signe of yeelding, clozed with him; some laying sure hold, and others seeking for Cords to binde him withall; and this, with such outcries and balling, that though *Gerardo* cryed out vnto them, he was *Leoncio's* brother, he could not be heard, lesse knowne, by reason his face was all stained with the blood that ranne from his wound; till *Leoncio* himselfe taking more carefull notice of those loued Eccho's of his brothers voice, which pierc't his very heart; causing also some that laid hands on him to stand off, (though all bloody and disfigured) hee forthwith knew him, and with incredible astonishment, and ioyfull teares embracing him, thought hee should neuer enough claspe him in his armes, breeding much amazement in all the beholders.

*Leoncio's* seruants were euen madde with ioy, when they saw the so-much-bewailed Captiue now returned: and the wretched Women hearing what passed, rendring due thanks to Heauen, for beeing freed from their great danger, drying vp the remainders of their former sorrowes, went out to shew themselves; and (though clad in strange array) no sooner were they secne by the two Brothers, when *Leoncio* first knew *Iacinta's* face, and *Gerardo* both of them; for the other was the Captiue that accompanied her from *Argiers*.

The afflicted Dame was so troubled at *Gerardo's* sight, that had it beene in the dead time of night, it might (possibly) haue stricken her dead: for perswaded (as you heard) that he was cast away, at such a time, her amazed senses must needs haue failed her, since euen *Leoncio* with her  
 sight



fight in broad day-light (for all his courage) was astonied, as if he had beheld some apparition, till *Gerardo* awoke his confusion, vwho amorously embracing her, satisfied his brother.

The next businesse vvas to hearken after mine Oast and his friend, but their care of themselves, saued the others a labour; for no sooner saw they this change, and heard the name of Brother passe to and fro, vwhen they shifted themselves away: and *Gerardo* now vnderstanding from his brother, that the cause of his iourney vvas onely to haue carried Monies to *Valencia* for his ransome, (there beeing no need of his passing further) they returned all together ioyfully toward *Madrid* vvith the faire *Iacinta* vvhom they had along vvith them.

They thought it not fit to surprize their mother with *Gerardo's* vnexpected sight; and so they commanded a seruant to goe before to prepare her first by degrees vnto it: letting her know, they vv ere faire and softly vpon their way towards her, some two dayes iourneys behind: in which time *Gerardo* giuing his brother particular notice of all that befel him in his captiuity; *Leoncio* also quitted his Relation, by giuing him to vnderstand what passed at *Granada* in his absence, and that which was of most importance and greatest griefe to him, his friend *Arsenio's* death, Heauen pleasing to remooue him from earth, before the arriual of his desired, deserued liberty: and also the sentence of *Violante's* Louer the new *Leandro*, whom, after a tedious imprisonment, the incensed Iudges at last sentenced to end his life in our Kings seruice at the Garrison of *Larache*. This newes, especially that of *Arsenio*, to saue his hearts sorrow, hee could willingly haue wished to be spared: but this discomfort of his was quickly sweetned with the sight of his most louing Mother, to whose presence the same day they arrived.

riued. Here the whole company rested some little time, before any mention was had of *Iacinta's* affaires, vvhom (knowing that by her meanes *Gerardo* obtained his freedom) the Mother as louingly entertained as her sonne, and (ignorant of their first more illicite acquaintance) she complied with her iust obligation, till time passing away, the faire Dame carefull of her owne businesse, by good aduice considering that, giuing her Parents or friends notice of her abode, and her husband too liuing, her life and honour might be endangered, desisting from that, shee dedicated the rest of her daies to a religious retirement; to vvhich, without any help, but of the Jewels brought vvith her from *Argiers*, she might easily attaine, hauing not only in them enough to make vp her owne portion for the Nunnerie, but for others also as vvell borne, and of as good quality as her selfe: and so, making *Leoncio* and *Gerardo* priuy to her intent, they vnanimously approued it, onely were a little troubled for the place, vvhich at length they agreed should be at a Monasterie in a Village, not passing fixe Leagues from the Court; vvhich being thus necessarily resolved on, and all things fitting provided, taking *Iacinta*, the Captiue that would neuer forsake her, and another poore maid that *Gerardo's* Mother recommended to her, along vvith them, they accompanied her till such time as shee was admitted and settled in the Nunnerie, where after so many strange and different successes of her life, in singular abstinence, and austerenesse of deuotion she to this day remaines.

This then to *Leoncio's* ioy, and *Gerardo's* comfort happily effected, home they went, and beeing now at full leisure, treated about the particular of most consequence, touching the faire and discreet *Nise*, whose firme and constant thoughts maturely waighed by *Gerardo*, and the new flames of his old Loues remembrance breaking out, sollicitied his  
care

care so much, that at last hee resolved to recompence her affection, by bestowing himselfe vpon her: and so communicating the businesse with the rest of his friends and kinsmen, accompanied (to their good liking) by them and his Brother, he purposed to set forward to *Cesarina*, where he doubted not, but (as the Pilot told him) to finde his *Nise*: so, fitting all things for a iourney, he began the same, onely for Deuotions sake meant to take the famous Monasterie of *Guadalupe* in his way, which was indeede the shorter, saue that it was not so full of good Townes and Innes as the other more vsuall; which defect was well enough supplide by their owne mirth, and varietie of company. *Gerardo* had a purpose, that *Nise's* ioy might bee the more complete, to take her vn-awares, that (supposing him long before dead, seeing him now againe beyond all hope or expectation) her affectionate content must necessarily be augmented; and therefore hee would not that any notice should bee carried to her before they all arrived.

The sharpest of Winter was at this time quite past, though in the beginning of *March*, it seemed to bee retrograde: for the tender sprigs and grasse were couered with hoare frost, as in *January*, and the staring Mountaine Tops with condensed snow; so that by the fourth day of their iourney, all the Gentlemen, wearied and toiled out, with Raine, Snow, and other discommodities in the midst of those wilde Mountaines of *Guadalupe*, desired (the euening drawing on) to rest themselves at the neereſt lodging they could come at; and to this purpose willed their Muletiers to guide them to a knowne Inne in that way, called, *The Mary Magdalen*; but the poore fellowes were so wet and weary, that, though they laboured what they could, to bring their Masters thither, yet night and darknesse ouer-taking them,

them, they lost their way, and the horsemen had much ado to keepe themselves from tumbling headlong: so steepy are the Cliffes and dangerous precipices of those Mountaines. All of them well perceiued the misfortune, and fearing yet some greater, if they should all night long remaine thus to the inclemencie of the weather; considering their danger, they trooped together, till, at length, when they least thought of it, not knowing how or which way, they were gotten to the foote of the Mountaine; and being now in a Valley neere certaine mudde walles, that ioyned (as they might ghesse) to a house: drawing neerer to it, they might perceiue it had some close entries on euery side; so, thinking they had met with no bad shelter, all of them alighted. And *Gerardo* supposing there wanted not some inhabitant there, who, taking pitie vpon their distresse, might yet afford them a better welcome; about to knocke at the gate, going as neere as he could, hee might by the manner of the building (hauing some small glimpse of it) perceiue it to be a Hermitage; whereupon, forsaking his intent of knocking, as (perswaded that in so desert a place there could bee no body to open to them) he turned back to the company. But he was deceiued in his distrust: for no sooner was he beginning to vtter his minde, vwhen, perceiuing the Hermitage doore open, they might also see a venerable ancient man vvith a light in his hand come out, whose long siluer Lockes, gray beard, as well as his Religious habit, moued the by-standers vvith a kinde of deuout respect to draw neere.

The good old Father vvondred at the raritie, though, with gentle phraze he saluted them, and cheerefully demanded the cause of their vnseasonable traouelling thorow those *uncouth* parts: of vvwhich being by *Gerardo* sufficiently satisfied, and of the necessitie they were driuen to, with most  
cha-

charitable entrailes he offred them his Cell for a Harbour : where all of them entring , more speedily then from his vveake Age might haue beene expected, hee made them a reasonable good fire, with whose warmth (which they esteemed as an extraordinary dainty ) they by little and little dried themselues ; and they that had beene before almost frozen vvith cold, and sicke with wet, were now newly reuiued ; and making ready their supper (which was the Relikes of some dinner meates that their seruants carried in their Wallets) together with some little fruit the old man set before them, giuing God thanks that afforded them so good a shelter, they began to fall to. All those Gentlemen were maruellously taken with the reuerend presence of the holy Man, who at *Gerardo's* request sate with them for company , to whose vvords and graue discourse they were more attentiuē , then sollicitous to taste of the Cates set before them. So , Supper ended , *Leoncio* and *Gerardo* would haue begunne to renue their thanks for his curtesie : which hee preuented , vvilling them to attribute all to the higher powers, to whom their thanks were solely due.

And so leading them by the hands ( the rest following ) they came to the foote of an Altar, where, by the light of a small Lampe, they might behold a Crucifix, to which they all kneeled, and after their Deuotion , were about to haue returned to their former seates ; when , *Gerardo*, rising vp, perceiued ; that the ground where hee had kneeled, vv as somewhat loose, and as if it had beene but that day newly broken vp for a graue (as true it was :) at vv hich maruelling, and that any should be buried in so remote a desert, or thinking perhaps they might be neere some towne, desirous to be resoluēd ; he demanded the cause of the Reuerend Hermit: from whom, in stead of an answer, he might see, how vvith those hoarie skeines of his, he wipte his griēued eyes,



to conceale their teares: at vvhich vnlookt for resentment not a little wondring, and much greedier to know this and the former cause, he began with this effectuall entreaty thus to mooue him :

Honest Father, though the demonstration of your eyes might interrupt my purpose, since I presume by my question your teares haue been occasioned : yet the force of my desires vvilleth me in the behalfe of this vvorthy company to importune your satisfying my request, and making knowne the reason of your sudden sorrow, that, if any here may giue you ease or comfort, it shall be no trouble or difficulty for him herein to serue you : and therefore the sooner you declare your grieife, the neerer growes your remedie.

Further had *Gerardo* proceeded, so much vvished he to dispose the Hermit to his vvill, but, perceiuing, that by the others beginning to speake, himselfe vvas cut off, with care and silence he gaue eare: In all the time, my loued Sonne, that in this solitarinesse my wretched life hath been dedicated to Heauen, I may safely promise you, that neither temporall goods haue disturbed my mindes quiet, nor worldly cares my penitence or soules saluation; for which I must incessantly praise my Creator; yet, I cannot but acknowledge and esteeme as an especiall obligation vvhats your noblenesse hath imposed vpon me, which I should most heartily repay in the kinde you demaund, vvhere not the time more necessary for your rest, then my small paines for your satisfactions. Rest your selues all therefore for the present, for your weary travell hath much need of it, and to morrow morning, I shall accompany you (God vvilling) to *Guadalupe*; at which time I not onely promise to fulfill your command, but ioyntly for your better edification to recount vnto you the stupendious life of that *Graues Owner*,

ner. Here, with a relenting groane, hee finished his speech, though, in the hearers their desires began a-new: and therefore falling againe to importune him, they requested him not to deferre his Relation, laying before him the hardnesse of their lodging and tediousnesse of the night, which would be the better beguiled, by their being by him kept waking; so that, at length loth to be held too obstinate, hee was willing to obey: but first he renues their fire with some pieces of dry logs, and then the Brothers and whole company round besetting the good old man, hee thus sets vpon their attentue silence with the following Tragedy.

All wounds (an effect of the soueraigne salue) are lessened by their cure; but if any carelessly touch them, such rubbing encreaseth their dolour, and their recovery is so much the longer deferred; the same now befalls me: this last night I lost my best friend; and though my Soule, Gods creature, be comforted; yet, her affection cannot but resent the blow that was inflicted with your demand; I obey notwithstanding, sacrificing my will to your wish; and though it may bee some ease to my paine, to diuert your wearinesse, yet I must desire more, that is, to haue your attention beare a part in my Discourse, and your selues to giue to the truth of this accident, the credit and applause it iustly deserueth.

To prouide my selfe of some sustenance (the in-excusable Tribute to our wretched bodies) I vse weekly to importune certaine poore Villages within a foure Leagues compasse of this Valley with my necessities, from whence about sixe yeeres since, returning to this Hermitage, forced as well by *Iulies* scorching heate, as my weakenesse of Age by the way, I sate me downe to rest my ouer-wearied limbes, on the shady brinke of a swift running Spring, the brieft Originall of the neere Brooke: here then my

F f

thoughts

thoughts found a waighty subiect, in which they might (considering the beauty, fragrancie of different Plants, shadie Trees, enamelled Flowers, springing Grasse, and cry-stall streames, mounting euen to the very foote of their glorious Artificer) reuerence in them the excellency of his Diuine handy-work.

In this eleuation was I, when turning mine eyes towards certaine Bryers, there appeared from them a kinde of glimmering brightnesse, that almost dazled them, and altogether amazed me. At first I thought it to bee some reflexion of the Sunne-beames, which shined into that thornie shade: but making seuerall trials with my sight, I might perceiue the same light to remaine stil fixed and immouable in one place, which made mee suspect greater matters, promising to my worldly desire some stone of price, or metall of equall value.

With this imagination, vp got I; and comming to the Bushes, with helpe of my Crab-tree-staffe, I began to put them by, and so, quickly discovered the occasion of my searck, which was, a Ginet Saddle of maruellous neat workemanship, embroidered, with all furniture to it, in seuerall colours; at the Bow hung the bit, head-stall & Reines. The Stirrops and Poitrall were fairely gilt and enamelled. The accident made me somewhat wonder, yet the gilded irons vvhich made that shining, satisfied my first doubtfull imagination. The mysterie of the Saddle, being thus left I was vtterly ignorant of; and therefore not once searching into the cause, couering the vvhole furniture, I left it to the Owner in the same manner I found it; and so walked on to my Cell; where (my minde better emploide) my thoughts had no leisure to wander.

A weeke passed on after the accident, in whose last day (I being retired, my doore close shut) the sky couered with clouds,

clouds, not without Lightning and Thunder, there began a terrible storme (which are in this Valley, though not lasting, yet as frequent as frightfull.) The violence of it much afflicted me for the hurt it might doe the Countrey; and so I made the matter of my Oraisons for more moderate weather, praying to God to protect the earths increase: but at the instant, the trampling, neighing and snuffling of a horse, suspended my pious Zeale, and caused me to approach neerer to the Altar, thinking verily some spirit had beene neere.

And wonder not at it: for I tell you true, the noise this night of your Moyles and Horses worked no lesse horrid effect at first: for, now, as then, it seemed impossible to mee to heare any creature come neere this place: which (though not farre from habitations) yet hath cuer beene, by reason of the dangerous narrow wayes so inaccessible, and indeed so vn-promising a sally to Horsemen, that it makes me think your comming hither miraculous; and therefore with these circumstances, you need not thinke my feares then triuiall. So I stayed a pretty while within my doores, not once stirring from the Sacred refuge that protected me: but perceiving, as soone as I began to heare the noise, the weather grew calmer, and the storme ceased, together vvith the Horses neighing, I got me to my doore, from whose open grates I might see a dainty Bay-horse, with blacke feet, and of a very handsome shape, but without any furniture at all vpon him.

At first with much admiration I could not tell what to imagine of the sight; till, calling to mind the Saddle found by me, I began to thinke, it might happely haue belonged to that Horse, and that some misfortune had befallne his Owner, either by falling headlong from the steepy Mountaine, or being slaine by Theeues in the maine high-way,

not passing a League from this place : though the manner of the Saddles beeing as it were carefully laid vp, and the Horse left so free, quickly made frustrate this opinion also.

At last (not to weary you) resolving my selfe, that the Thunder and extremitie of weather had forced the poore beast to seeke some shelter, I purposed to seize on him, thinking it better for mee to keepe him for his Master, then to leaue him as a stray in those desarts : and so, opening my doore, the Horse no sooner heard the creaking of it, when suddenly he startted back. The showres were quite overpast; and therefore though the Beast fled from mee, yet I left not to prosecute my purpose, and so fetched a compasse to run before him, that I might make him turne backe againe : in this manner as well as mine Age and weaknesse would permit me, I was gotten at least halfe a League from the Hermitage after him. But growing weary, at length I was forced to rest, where I remained some little while refreshing my selfe, and keeping the Horse still in sight; and longer had I there staid (so out of breath was I) but that the clouds againe thickning, I was compelled to seeke out some place lesse subiect to the violence of a storme, so that rising vp, not farre off, I made choise of the strong Trunke, and broad boughes of a wilde Walnut-tree, whose height reaching euen to the Mountaines Top, gaue shade & shelter to the ground. Where being arrived, I no sooner purposed to enter the hollow of it (caused either by Art or Antiquitie) when, I perceiued a man who by way of preuention was gotten into it before me. This kept me from my intent; for the noueltie surprized mee, and the more, in respect that hauing heard me, hee did not once offer to stirre, but, onely hiding his face, now & then sent forth a mournfull sigh. His attire and cloathes by their goodnes shewed the Owners quality; and the liuelinesse of his well-fauour'd



countenance, no store of yeeres. All which (besides admiration) caused a curious desire in me to know more ; and accordingly I expected a while, to see if the party would forsake his dumps : but seeing his behaviour was still the same, taking the name of *Iesus* in my mouth, I saluted him aloud ; vvhoh, as if he had beene awaked out of a dreame , looking vp, replied : For euer bee my Sauours glorious name praised ; and turning about, re-saluted mee , asking what I would haue ? To which, not a little astonisht, thus I replide :

I know not, Christian Brother, what austere Cinicall person in the vworld there may bee , that , beholding you in this manner , would not desire to be informed , and to know the cause of this your solitarie being ; and therefore I most earnestly request you , to make knowne vnto me, not onely your grieſe ; but, vvithall, whether you bee the Owner of a goodly Horse, in vvhoſe purſuite, I haue left my harbour : and hearing this, hee answered me in this calme manner :

Though the power of so courteous a Request might enioyne mee to obey ; yet, many times , such are the misfortunes of our life, as, oblige rather with vvarie ſilence to leaue the desire vnſatisfied : So now it fares vvith me, that deſiring to giue your demaund content , the quality of my miſhaps doth contradict my deſire : Pardon, if this diſcharge ſerue not, for impoſſible it is to obtaine other from me : though, not to bee altogether harſh or vnſauourie, touching my beeing in theſe Deſerts, I vvill reſolue your doubt , vvhiſh is , to end my dayes in them. I was not willing to importune him vvith farther queſtions , taking this his laſt anſwere for a ſettled reſolution ; neither would I on the other ſide ſo leaue him ; but ſeeming to bee ioyed vvith his intent, replide :

These forty yeeres haue I liued in these Mountaines, and though I haue met with many, in their rough and rugged pathes, yet neuer before with such determinate resolution in any: for, I suppose, the extremities of this Wildernesse are much more difficult to bee tolerated, then pleasing to bee desired; and therefore wondring at your singular election, I cannot but reioyce, and giue you my best aduice, since this kinde of lifes experience giues me freedome, and may deserue credit for it: yet, if you would so please, I should thinke it farre better, for the vndergoing so much hardnesse, that you would accept of my company. Consider well of it; and if you thinke good, I now presently offer it, together with my shelter, which is a poore Hermitage seated in the secret'st part of these Mountaines, sufficient to containe vs both.

Here (after some little pause) without expecting further entreaties, vp he rose, saying; Come on then, Father mine; Goe on, I follow; for it must needs bee, that God taking compassion of my soule, by this wholesome course disposeth of her remedy: 'twas he, that brought me thorow these vnusuall wayes; he, that hath now twelue dayes miraculously sustained mee with the plenty of these Hearbs, preserving me onely to deliuer me to such a Master.

What stay we for, reuerend Father? let vs goe: for from henceforward, I submit my affections to your graue aduice; and from this instant, euen till death, doe dedicate my life vnto the Almighty his seruice; and so getting out of his hollow seat, he followed mee; and by that time wee were gone some few paces, the horse that was before so wilde, as gentle now as any lambe, came to his Master, and suffering himselfe easily to be laid hold on, we brought him along to the Hermitage; and being here, I perceiued him to be his Owner: for hauing changed his apparell, and putting on  
some

some of mine, he desired me to take the clothes, with some Jewels and Monies that he had, and in his name offer them to our Ladie of *Guadalupe*; which I did, together with the faire Horse, Saddle and Furniture, which he himselfe told me, he had hidden formerly in the Bryers.

So that now in a poore Hermits Weed, in heavenly meditations, he so shined in a short time in pious exercises, that, anticipating my yeeres, he left me behind: such and so strict were his fasts, so rigorous his penitence, and so continually feruent his meditations; all which, chiefly the macerating his flesh, had beene much more outrageous, if my perswasions had not something mitigated his feruorous spirit. In this manner he went on sixe yeeres together, in which time, hee would many a time and oft freely recount vnto me the rare and admirable euent of his life; the which (stealing some houres from him) for an example and warning to others, I haue as exactly as I could, (which you shal see) set downe in these Lines; and drawing out a little Tiller, and out of that a Paper-booke, opening the same, and taking some fresh breath, he beganne with the ensuing Contents:

In the Kingdome of *Toledo*, not farre from the Royall Citties selfe, is situated the famous *Talhora*, qualified as well for her owne Antiquitie, as knowne by her noble and ancient Gentry. Here, a Gentleman sprung from worthy Ancestors, called *Fernando*, vvas borne; whose childhood, (though with marvellous forwardnes it gaue a strong likelihood of his more flourishing maturer yeeres) I passe o-uer, as little suting vvith our purpose, and come to his sixteenth yeere of age, at vvhich time, his parents dying, hee being left free and rich, the disposition of his noble mind might the better be declared, in which his generous ver-

tures posting, as it were, in a short time, made him the most loued by the vulgar, and most emulated by his equals, that might be. Hee was not guiltie of the least habituall noted vice, nor disposed much to that youthfull wantonnes most proper to young Gallants of his age: or, though his naturall frailtie might happely something incline him that way, yet his proceeding was such, so warie, as escaped (at least) publike notice: which retirednesse in his actions, made him singular in the generall opinion. In his expences hee was most prouidently regular, though farre from pinching; for in point of honour, vpon himselfe, his family, and friend, in any good occasions, hee would expresse a liberall bounty neerer prodigalitie; being then the most forward, most braue, most liberall. To strangers hee was vvonderfully courteous, in defending or protecting them in extremities, carefull for the aduenturing in the behalfe of friends too, his wealth, life, or what dearest, reputation. To make this good, you shall clearely perceiue it in the course of his life, since his greatest troubles tooke their beginning from this cause.

*Fernando* at this time exceedingly affected a certaine Dame, who, had his parents liued some longer time, might haue beene his wife; and though this loue of his were gouerned with the vsuall warinesse that the rest of his affaires, yet it could not so bee concealed from some of her friends and kindred, but by meanes of a Damozell of hers, to whose notice it came, it was discovered to the others: and although the alliance displeased them not, they closely dissembled their knowledge, expecting when himselfe should first become an open suiter; which had doubtlesse beene effected, were it not that in the *Interim* a crosse businesse worthy your obseruing happened; from whence much vquietnesse arose, and indeed the breach of these amorous  
 prose-

prosecutions: and therefore though it bee to enter into a different matter from the present, I cannot but make a succinct mention of that, to give the better light to our Story: *Fernando* proceeding in his noble conditions, grew into a streight league of friendship with a Gentleman, a stranger, one that also extremely loued another Dame of *Auila*, both of them (vpon seuerall occasions) then residing in *Tal-bora*, she with her Kinsman *Segundo Oñauio*; he, with his father, Gouvernour and chiefe Iustice of the place.

*Gerardo* from that very moment that the Hermit named *Fernando*, expected some more euident token in his knowledge, but now thorowly satisfied, crying out, interrupting the relation, and pittifully fixed vpon those hoarie lockes, he said: Peace, good Father, for Heauens sake forbear the prosecution of my lifes torment: Wretched and vnfortunate man, that at length art arrived to such growne ills; to be a witnesse, if not of thy best friends death, yet at least of his grievous disasters, of his tragicall story, and ignorantly with thy rude foot-steppes to presse his quiet Graue!

He could no more for teares: but his brother *Leoncio*, who with better temper vnderstood the successe, perceiuing plainely that the deceased Hermit was their ancient friend *Fernando*, hee could no lesse then hold fellowship with his brothers sighes; they also that were ignorant of the first Parts successes, were stricke into greater confusion, but not long remained they in these dumps; for the godly old man, ghesing as well by the sad extremes of both, as the speech of *Gerardo* onely, that they two were (doubtlesse) the Gentlemen, of whom he had heard so many things from his dead companion, he requested them, that mitigating their passion, they would afford him a second, better attention; ywhich they agreed to, so that seeing them in more  
quieter,



quiet, this following discourse he first framed to their comfort.

Scarce could I this night (considering your vnexpected arriual so full of desperate passages) credit mine eyes in the truth before them: but having this present occasion to know you, I am not onely vvell apaid, but rest also most assured and satisfied, that God Almighty was pleased out of a particular goodnesse to direct you to this house, that the prodigious life, and late death of this Gentleman comming to his chieftest friends notice, might not be buried in the obscure silence of these remote Desarts: and therefore, though hitherto I not condemne your iust repentment; yet from henceforward it were a fondnesse to embrace it: for knowing his valorous determination, holy election, and happy ending, these should rather make you reioyce at his marvellous actes and vertues, since they are rather vworthy of admiration and enuie, then lamentation and teares; such are fitter to be vsed to the Author of his happinesse, to be sorry that we liue behind him in a world of miseries: vse teares to him, or rather seruent prayers, to make you like your dead brother; and beleue for certaine, that this arriual of yours, guided against a naturall and ordinary course, hath beene disposed to the intent, that hearing these your friends admirable successes from my mouth, they may serue you as examples, shunning their bad, to attaine by his like repentant penitence, so happy an end as that of his life, in which I now with your good pleasures will proceed, and so much the more willingly, since I suppose the Relation may not be vnprofitable for some one present among you.

*Leoncio* and *Gerardo* had no replies left, which made him the more contentedly turne to his *Storie*, and so rehearsing the greatest part of that amorous, tragicall Discourse  
of

of *Gerardo* and *Clara* mentioned in the first Part, and pointing at the actions, (in which *Fernando* as his familiar friend shewed himselfe on his behalfe) at length hee concluded them, saying, that the parents and friends of *Fernando's* Mistress allied to the deceased *Don Rodrigo* and *Segundo Octanio*, seeing him sided with their contrary Faction, not only contradicted his suite, but altogether averse from what so much concerned them, the more to spight him, they wrought so effectually with her, that in fine they perswaded her to a Nunnery; where, though *Fernando* laboured by all possible meanes to dissuade her, at the end of her yeeres Probationership, taking the holy profession vpon her, shee cut the thred of his intents.

This wound of Fortune (sayd the reuerend Hermit) our affectionate Gentleman so painefully felt, that his griefe now desperate, without all consideration hee suffered himselfe to be carried headlong on, in such sort, that with the continuance of his passion, his complaints comming to *Camila's* notice, (so hight his *quondam* Mistress) perceiuing (though late) better then formerly her lost Sweet-hearts affection, and calling to mind some ancient passages of their amorous meetings, vnable to resist the strong temptation of her thoughts, she at length vvilfully plunged her selfe into them, and sent these following Lines vnto *Fernando*:

*Though well I might (had you any reason to blame my determination) find a iust excuse from the necessarie obedience due to my Parents; yet it shall be needlesse, (there being no occasion) that I desire you to admit any; since you can neither haue the face to deny your selfe to haue beeme the cause, nor can I want courage to complaine of your coldnesse. Your friend Gerardo was more happy, whose affaires ('tis well knowne) you preferred before our affection, smoothing all difficulties, to make his party good against my*

*my friends and Allies; who, not uniuſly (that beeing the greateſt harme they meant you) haue taken what reuenge on you they might. Conſider then, whether I haue not reaſon to bee ſenſible of what is paſt ſatisfaction, and you ſhall ſoone perceine that my complaints are more warrantable, then thoſe of yours (I am told of) which might better be concealed; which that they may, I ſhall not much need, I preſume when you ſhall haue read theſe Lines, to requeſt you; my deſire is onely to ſee you, and receiue my ſatisfaction, which Camila better then your ſelfe deſerueth.*

Any Medicine comforts and reioyceth the poore ſicke man, that panting for deſired health, oft couets thoſe moſt hurtfully preiudiciall. *Fernando's* heart was vvrung by his blind paſſion, and ſo (though his cleare vnderſtanding might haue preuented a greater danger) the ſharpe pricke of his ſcorching affection, checking the free uſe of reaſon, ſpurred on his ſwift determination, and oppoſitely croſſed his more conſiderate iudgement, vvhich made him, to gaine an amorous conqueſt, aduenture at one bold Vye, his ſoules perdition.

But Religion had little to do, vvhere *Fernando* ſtill ledde by blind paſſion, followed his affection; vvho, by *Camila's* order, vvvent often to the Nunneries Grate to viſit her, and had thoſe cold Barres in ſtead of hardneſſe, tongues, they vvould (no doubt) haue lowdly vvarned him from the deteſtable purſuite of that ſubieſt, in that place. At this time (he before an afflicted Louer) had leſſe cauſe to complain; for *Camila* with his preſence had more ſatisfaction then euer, vvvhich made them fall backe into their former loues, or (to limit my ſelfe) to a kind of new deuotion, vvvhich long (diſpoſed warily) might haue laſted: but as ſuch ſtations are much in fauour of our common Enemy, ſo is hee more carefully punctuall, more ſtrong and powerfull, to enflame the

the mind, trouble the senses, and adde Fewell to the fire. It seemed, his subtiltie found best accessse to the weaker vessel, by the readier way *Camila's* heart, which hauing (heauen so permitting) posselt, stirring vp by degrees her brutish appetite, and tyring her inward concupiscence, shee was at last quite vanquished. No longer could her determinate will, for any danger of her close retirement, deferre the vnchaste execution: for the Diuell doth easily facilitate such difficulties, and till a sinne bee acted, all is plaine and smoothest way.

Onely a shamesfastnesse of her personall honour, pinched at the infamous price, though by *Fernando* she was anticipated in that point; so that the consideration of her Lovers modest behauiour, (from whom, or in him, in all the time of their conuersation, she had not so much as heard a lasciuious word, seene a lustfull action) perplexed her ignorance for want of meaner: but he, whose craft (as is said) moued the whole engine, fearing the losse of so likely a booty with new devices and stratagemes forced this last Bulwarke to yeeld.

How farre at this time (though amorous) was *Fernando* from a carnall thought? he, onely satisfied with the sight of his Votaresse, desired no other happinesse, neither could his warie condition hurry him to more vn-limited bounds: he vsually conuersed with her, and indeed, beeing a most punctuall frequenter of the Grate, not an hower passed him without a sight of her, nor a day, in which she receiued not some dainty or other from him, holding the expence of his estate vpon *Camila*, as a gaine and haruest; though she now burning in the flames of lust, beeing one day alone with him, meant thus (as you shall heare) to breake her mind vnto him.

The better to declare it, I must first aduertize you of this necessary

necessary point. *Camila*, when she heard *Fernando* one day was come to see her, had purposely (longer then she vsed) deferred her comming to him; insomuch, that sensible of the noueltie, his heart began to mis-doubt something; and in this trouble, desirous to know the cause of her stay, glad would he haue beene, that the Nunnes sight might haue preuented his asking: now shee that vsed this fit occasion, the better to order the Dance, vwhen she came, fained, that as she was comming to her vsuall Grate, a friend of hers by the way entertaining her Votary at another, had called her; the cause proceeding from a certaine nice doubt which the two were sisting, in which, (making her, whether she would or not, their Iudge) shee was to heare their allegations, which was the reason of her (more important) not seeing him.

Here, *Fernando* much longed more originally to know the proposition; whose desire, *Camila* not ouer-squeamish to be intreated, as one well studied in the thing, most cheerfully fulfilled.

*Clemencia* and *Fausto* (said shee) both vvhom you well know, haue falne into a deepe controuerfie, and into a tickle point: *Fausto* maintaines, that in all kinds, *Possession* of a thing is the chiefeest good; vvhich opinion *Clemencia* contradicts, who holds, that *Hope*: to vvhich she attributes the greater excellency; and hereupon grounds her *Tenet*, saying, That this is so much the more to be esteemed, by how much neerer it is to Ioy and Pleasure, and consequently distant from sorrow and repentance; but *Hope* is neerer Content, and hath lesse neighbour-hood with distastes: whereas in *Possession* happens the quite contrary; which alwaies, or for the most part, is accompanied with grieve and affliction: and with all (such is our naturall frailty) things once possessed, grow to lesser estimation: for there is no Beauty on earth



earth so rare, which once enioyed, becomes not (if not loathsome) yet lesse prized then before: wherefore too, it must needes be euident, that the time we spend in our pretensions is incomparably better, then when accomplished with *possession*, it is lesse lookt after: for so, hee that *hopes*, doth carefully desire, couets with delight and pleasure, that, which he who *possesseth*, wants; since in the glutted state he liues, hee neither likes, desires, or esteemes: and thus shee clozed vp all, alledging, that *Hope* by it selfe alone, hath much more excellency and perfection, then *Possession* of what is hoped for: for the thing desired, is in a manner ioyntly *possessed* as hoped after: when he that *possesseth*, hath onely the dominion of the thing he attaines to, and then his *hope* finisheth.

But now you must marke, that *Fausto* wanted no reply, for the making good of his part, and therefore inforcing the superiority of his opinion, he goes on, saying, The whole life and encouragement of *Hope*, is in respect of *Possession*: so that the good which redounds from *Hope*, is not in it selfe, but in the thing hoped for; whereby the thing it selfe desired, is better then the hope of it: for the *end* is euer more to be esteemed, then the *meanes*, which are onely disposed to the same.

The securitie and safenessse of a good consists in the greater perfection of it, and this, he onely that doth *possesse*, not he that *hopeth*, hath: who (held he *Hope* to be the better) neuer caring to come to *Possession*, he might, not onely expect, but also, not call that expectation *Hope*, rather, *mortall despair*; for ill could he bee said to desire a good, that declined so much from the *Possession*: so that the perfection consists in the reality and accomplishment of the desire, and not in the appetite it selfe: therefore lastly, he that comforts himselfe with bare *Hope*, must needes bee cast, since plainly

plainely, hee affects that which is most profitable : liking rather to liue in a continuall warfare , then settled quiet peace, which is onely found in quietest *Possession*. They vrge many other reasons to this purpose, but these are the most materiall ; and though they haue named me for their Iudge Arbitresse, yet I confesse my shortnesse of vnderstanding ; and therefore, *Fernando* relying on your discretion, I meane to take you as an Assistant to sentence this cause before we part.

*Fernando* gaue pleasing attention to the whole disputation, and thorowly satisfied, thus replied to *Camila*: Beleeue me, deare Votaresse, the parties ( though to my cost ) may render you many thanks, as not needing to complaine for want of attention in their Iudge, nor to distrust the iustice of their cause : for it is not possible, that shee, vvho hath so well related each point , and duely considered euery circumstance, should erre a iot in the sure determination ; and though I be well enough assured of this truth, yet, subiecting my selfe to your commands, I must obey : and therefore resolutely set downe, that you may sentence on *Faussto's* behalfe, of vvwhose right so confident am I, that had not he to my liking sufficiently made good his opinion, I should with fresh reasons endeouour to vnderprop it. Then belike (replied *Camila*) vvhosoeuer is of that mind is vvifest, and consequently, he that is against it, peruerse and ignorant : To which *Fernando*, ignorant of her purpose, sayd, for his part he thought no lesse ; vvhen , vvithout more adoo the resolute Dame in this manner proceeded : Go to then, *Fernando*, either you or I loue not ; or, if the greatest good bee in *possession*, and this wanting, vvhy spend vve all our time thus fruitlesse to no purpose ? Our Gallant hearing his *Camila*, was stricke speechlesse, and though at first he had supposed all to haue beene pastime and merriment, yet looking nee-

rer into the matter, and perceiuing those Arguments to haue beene before-hand premeditated, he fell into the purposed stratagem. It oppressed him strangely, for his thoughts had neuer been so outragiously boundlesse: hee wisely feared the greatnesse of the danger; and yet the being intrall'd by his amorous passion, made him confusedly wauer in his answer; which at last was the safest, endeavouring to diuert her from the impossibility of her desires, framing greater difficulties in the obtaining them, then *Camila* could euer haue imagined: but she resolutely bent vpon her will, not onely desisted not from her purpose, but angrily disdain'd his coldnesse, attributing it to cowardize, and so was about to haue turned from him.

But those fained shewes of leauing him, so much preuailed vwith the Captiue Louer, that inconsiderately hee condescended to her pleasure; and reconciled, they agreed vpon a meeting, which should be, that *Fernando* might enter the Garden by climbing the Wall, where (as the ensuing night) she would expect him.

*Camila* affoorded him no longer time, fearing lest vwith more, he might repent; and so the prefixt limit drawing neere, *Fernando* hauing provided himselfe of a strong-corded Ladder, made knowne his intent to a kinsman of his that liued with him; & finding sufficient company in him, both wel-armed, prepared themselues to the exploit, which heauē auerted by more different means then they imagin'd.

*Fernando* had at this time caused certaine Scutcheons of his Armes, grauen in Marble, to be set vpon the Arch of his Doore, and to this purpose the Workemen had raised scaffolding; so that, as he was going out to the said intent, dazled, as it were, vpon a sudden, he stumbled vpon the Timber, which fell downe so forcibly, that it brought down one

of the Posts that sustained the boords aloft, one of vvhich vvanting the proppe, or not vvell fastened, or (which vvvas likeliest, Heauen so permitting) falling downe, lighted vpon his foote, which, ('twas maruell)crushed it not to pieces, though notwithstanding it shrewdly bruised him : his kinsman and companion was farther behinde him, and therefore hauing no share in the blow, might the better help and lift him vp, which hee did ; and knowing his hurt, vvvas forced to carry him to his Chamber, where he kept his bed a long time after.

This accident somewhat troubled *Fernando*, not that his blinde affection vvould let him fall into the true consideration of the cause of this effect ; but how hee might giue *Camila* satisfaction ; for, for this he had much to doe, neither vvould shee giue credit to his hurt, till shee had procured some trusty persons, to bee eye-witnesses of the same.

At length, after hee was recovered, they fell backe into their amorous pursuite ; and *Camila* re-solliciting her Louer, a new appointment was made, against which time the two kinsmen prouided, came faire and softly to the Garden wall : where, vpon the lowest part of it they cast their Ladder, and *Fernando* began to mount iust at the instant that, about the Nunnery gate, not farre from them, a great noise and clashing of Swords was heard, which made him (fearing to be scene) step downe againe ; and passing forward, he might perceiue three men (to his thinking two against the third) together by the eares. *Fernando* seeing so manifest oddes, and the poore single party begin to giue ground, could not containe ; but, leaving his kinsman to looke to the Ladder, in a trice he ranne in to the lone mans aide, but his charitie came somewhat of the latest ; for the others

others Contraries hauing found their Aduantage, gaue him feuerall wounds, vvhherewith fainting, he fell downe at *Fernando's* feet: which the two perceiuing (though hard laid to by the new-comer) betooke them to their heeles; leauing him to looke to their enemy that was false. So that now giuing ouer the principall businesse for which he came, both he and his kinsman vvholly intended the poore wounded man; whom, because hee cryed out for Confession, they tooke vp betweene them to haue conueyed him to their owne home.

Yet carefull they were to auoid meeting with the Watch, and therefore went thorow the least frequented and by-Lanes; but in one of those (their endeouours mis-carrying) they met with those they shunned: it was not possible for them to haue escaped, neither thought they fit, by running away, to make themselues delinquents in a matter vvherein their charitie was shewne. So the Governour of the Towne, meeting and knowing them, sorry to see their carriage (though they truely related what passed) and obliged by his Office, could not but commit them both to sure custody.

*Fernando*, though his innocencie might haue prouoked him, was little sensible of this vvrang; rather for feare of falling into a new suspition with his Votaresse, hee vvas so much afflicted, that his blinded heart bereaued him of all other considerations; as also of the dangerous illicite businesse, into which he was so wilfully imbarcked. In fine (glad) the Officers had not seen their Ladder, they suddenly conueyed it from them, and now expected the wished day; by when *Fernando's* imprisonment knowne and published; some, approouing it, did much aggrauate the matter, others gentler minded, blamed the Governours hasty proceeding,



as supposing that to a Gentleman of his quality better respect might haue been had, if not entire credit given vnto him; and passionate in the case, thought his imprisonment was too rigorously inflicted. The whole businesse at last was cleared; for the wounded party before he dyed, declared the truth, accusing one of the two, who first set vpon him, about a difference at Play, to haue with the others help slaine him; which appearing plainly by the Homicides their flight, *Fernando* was out of hand set at libertie, and *Camila* now fully satisfied, more earnestly then euer, insisted in her purpose: yet they resolved for more fittingnesse, to put it off for one three or foure dayes more, since, in respect of the late vnluckie accident, the Watch would bee sure to walke more carefully, or some curious busie bodie might haply prie into his actions, being knowne to walke so late, till such time as the noueltie was a little ouer-blowne and past.

In this they were not vnwise, for in small or lesse populous Citties, where other varieties are wanting, suspitious persons lay hold vpon all occasions, maliciously to pry into their friends or neighbours actions. But the difficulties of their meeting ceased not thus; for against a new prefixed time by them, *Fernando's* kinsman fell desperately sicke of a burning Feuer, which much hindered their businesse, in respect that the Physicians now had wholly giuen him ouer.

*Fernando* made *Camila* acquainted with the mishap, but shee would not belecue or admit of his excuse, the which her hardned resolution more plainly appeared in these brieue Lines:

*I well see, Fernando, by this last fained inconuenience,*  
*that*

what all the former haue beene: Let your dallying cease; for if this night you fulfill not your promise, I shall bee satisfied, and your selfe forbear to bee so hardie as euer againe to see me.

It seemed that the deadly sinne of sacrilegious lust guiding her hand and stile, framed for *Camila* these Contents: so her owne hand was made the Sentencer of that destruction, which Heauen had fore-decreed to the Owner.

The blinde Louer receiued this Ticker, and as the rigorous verdict of his death, so feared hee his Mistresses complaints, and so disposed to obey her: all alone towards midnight he got him to the Nunnery wall. He had no sooner climbed to the top of it, but hee might heare a voice iust vnderneath him, calling out, Is it *Fernando*? Who replide, 'Tis I, sweet, I come. But with this, I come, and his sudden haste to fasten the thred-Ladder, for his better getting downe on the other side, with the darknesse of the night together, and his owne want of heed, hee stumbled vpon a great loose stone which fell from the wall and him, & (it seemed) guided by *Camila's* destiny, or higher Providence, lighted vpon the vnfortunate Creatures head; the waight of it was such as gaue her no leaue to cry out, onely *Fernando* might heare by one soft mortall groane, the execution done, and his bitter losse. 'Twas in vaine for him to leape downe; for the misfortune was helpelesse, but vainer to waste time there in teares or sorrowfull exclamations, since dayes approach would but pull an irreparable danger vpon his owne head: euery way he was miserable, all he could doe (hoping yet to heare some comfortable newes in the morning) was to make to his lodging: which he did, though there with the amazement of

his griefes he had much adoe to liue. His family and seruants were not a little troubled at the strange accident, in-  
somuch that some thought best to haue his Confessor to  
him, others began to thinke of Physicians. *Fernando* had  
one onely Sister, very faire and equally discreet, and be-  
twene both, liuing thus priuately to themselves, there was  
an extraordinary renderesse of affection: she was priuy to  
her Brothers cares, and therefore ghesing that his in-  
firmities was more of Loue then more mortall danger,  
would not for the present that her seruants should call  
for any helpes without, but, making no noyse, left him to  
his rest.

Towards eight of the clocke in morning (after hee  
had long considered his misfortune, and at length taken  
some sleepe) he awoke: and somewhat better-recovered,  
at what time they in the Nunnery (little knowing what  
state *Fernando* had been in, or that hee knew of *Camila's*  
death) sent him word of the lamentable successe; how (it  
seemed) the last night going late into their Garden to her  
Deuotions, walking vnder part of the wall, a loose stone  
had falne downe and dashed out her braines; in which la-  
mentable manner they found her, being first found missing  
in her bed in the morning.

This aduice (though wofully set downe in writing) could  
adde nothing to *Fernando's* extremitie, vwho vvas full e-  
nough of mistrust before: and yet though he suspected the  
worst that might be, his humanitie could not but take one  
wailing leaue more: and now in midst of his mournfull  
grones he craues pardon of his diuine Maker; and so from  
that instant, with new and fresh vowes hee proposed in his  
heart, not onely neuer to haue further conuersation with  
Religious Women, but for euer to abandon their houses,  
and

and Monasteries, which alterward hee shunned as his mortall bane.

With this happy intent (said the good Hermit turning to *Gerardo*) he remained in *Talbora*, till such time as your imprisonment, and *Clara's* searefull end, comming to his notice, mindfull of your ancient friendship, hee left his Country, and soone effected your liberty, being then some moneths absent, till his Sisters carefull solliciting his returne, made him, to giue her content, come backe, where new successses began, such as follow.

Many matches had beene seuerally both to Brother and Sister proposed, and some conuenient enough, though *Fernando* excusing himselfe, refused all, by saying he would first see his Sister bestowed; shee flying likewise from all Treaties, as mannerly retorted her Brothers courtesie: so that each gaue colour of deniall of marriage to the other, and matter to the busie world to censure both: yet some there vvanted not, to affirme, that *Alcina*, so was the Dame called, was vvilling enough to marry, might it stand vvith her owne liking, and not her Brothers choise; their malice alluding to one *Tirso* whom she much affected, but in respect he was Brother to *Rodrigo*, and consequently enemy to hers, he durst not demand her to Wife, nor shee owne him for Husband. These and the like speeches flew about *Talbora*, though no man willing to aduertise so much to *Fernando*, he (ignorant) was obstinate in his resolution, and *Alcina* vvarie and circumspect least her amorous wakings might come to his notice, vvich heauily ended (as you shall heare:) but first it is necessarie for you to know some other circumstances, before that disaster was compassed.

About this time there arriued a dainty *Granadinian* Dame,

that, for some priuate respects, at the instance of her kindred and friends, was dedicated to the Religious retirement of a certaine Couent there; vvhither, at the day appointed for her receiuing the habit and holy Order, all the Gentry, and best of the Citie, were solemnely inuited: only *Fernando*, mindfull of his Vow, in not going was singular; though, to comply with the faire Dames kindred his friends of one faction, he sent his Sister *Alcina* to supply his place at the solemnitie. Which ended, and (the New Nunne generally extolled) she remained in the Monastery, and all the ghests returned to their seuerall homes, wonderfully pleased with the sight, especially *Alcina*, and so enamoured on the new Nunne, that she thought all possible commendations must needs come short of her due praise: which went on in such height of endecrement, as at length bredde an inward longing in *Fernando*, to see so much beauty, though hauing barred himselfe the meanes, he was forced to giue over his difficult curiositie.

Some there are so particular in their actions, so strange in their affections, that many times vvithout all foundation or ground, they fall to like or hate something, for no other occasion indeed, then to haue their opinions generally vpheld, though most commonly they prooue erroneous: such in extremitie vvas *Alcina*, a vvoman that wholly taken with her owne iudgement, desired that her thoughts should haue in euery thing precedency, which made her vnproperly lay hold on *Elisa's* beauty (that beeing the *Granadinos* name) labouring all shee might, that her Brother *Fernando* with his eyes might qualifie her election.

To which purpose, going to visit some of her owne kinswomen in the Nunnery, she desired *Elisa's* acquaintance, making such shewes of loue or Court-ship to her, that, but  
for



for the vvarrant of her sexe; the other might haue suspected a hazzard to her retirednesse.

This acquaintance of theirs begannie so to kindle betwixt them both, as it grew to an exceeding height of affection; by which meanes *Elisa* also, from his Sister, came to haue some notice of *Fernando*, whose parts and merit being cunningly set out by the shee-relator (no manuell if haply *Elisa* might couet an eyesight of the Owner.) The Nunne, besides many excellencies in which Heaven was propitious to her, had a most sweet and pleasing voice; and of her equall skill too (though more warily, in respect she was but in her yeere of *approbation*) *Aleina* now and then participated, giuing afterwards (but with circumstances more flourishingly surpassing all that hitherto) notice to *Fernando*, of that and other rarities; which doubling the former itch of desire in him, made him plainly declare his minde: which vnderstood by *Aleina* (but to no other intent more then the confirming her opinion) she quickly so contriued the matter, that without publike note it might be effected: and so, sending a warning to her kinswomen to prouide her a seat neere the Nunnes Grate, shee went also thither before; agreeing onely with her Brother, that he should stand close, and not shew himselfe, till such time as shee had intreated *Elisa* to begin to sing, which (because she was not yet a professed Nunne) was very difficult; and should *Fernando* be seene, or any other man, altogether impossible.

The businesse suited iust to her wish: and her Brother as ready, as vnmindfull of his Vow, went thither, and came so opportunely, that both his eye and his care were quickly beleeuers of *Aleina's* truth. *Elisa* (that knew nothing of his comming, for *Aleina* fained it to haue been casuall) espied him, and blushing, would faine haue hid her selfe, but that the

the rest of the Nunnes kept her backe, and the new-come Ghest making himselfe knowne to her, (a hardinesse in him, considering her modest composednesse was not inferiour to that rare beauty that astonisht him) they grew to some complementall acquaintance; and before they parted, himselfe vvas caught a tender louer as euer, and shee (but vvith more chaste intentions) lesse coy and disdainfull, which she better expressed, by not suffering the Couple to returne empty home, without a full satisfaction of Natures best Musicke, her voyce.

This Gentlemans relapse doth so at the present vexe my consideration, that me thinks I euen vvith my wish forestall the punishment that after happened vnto him, which I shal briefly come to: but this ensuing circumstance must first be the Prologue or Introduction.

*Fernando*, after many a sight of *Elisa*, was so extremely gone in her affection, that at last (the end of her yeere drawing on, at which time, if shee professed there was no helpe for him) caused his sister *Alcina* to put in for his marriage. She made knowne his mind, but *Elisa* deferring her answer, and wisely dissembling her intent, shewed little will: rather, a strong inclination to that deuout life she had made choice of: which might haue sufficed to haue kept him from molesting her quiet profession; but this, which hee thought disdain, so blew the fire of his growing loue, that not now secretly, but in publike he prosecuted it, and made meanes to *Elisa's* kindred, who ioyned as suiters with him, and vsed such diligent perswasions, that at last they wonne her to consent.

They esteemed themselues most happy in the alliance, and no lesse honoured: and so, notice also was giuen to her Parents, and in the *interim* of their answer, *Fernando* as one  
sure

sure enough, began to make severall preparations of brauerie for himselfe, and the future Bride; and turning night into day with Maskes, Musicke, and severall delights; and day, into Bull runnings, Canes-sport, and Dancing: the time passed on in mirth and pastimes, till at last the answer of the Nunnes parents was, that themselves were vpon the way: which generally reioyced the Bridegroom, Bride, and their kindred. So their arriual, and the time happily meeting, the desired Nuptials were solemnely performed; which, and some weeks ouerpassed, the Parents returned to their home at *Granada*, leaving their sonne-in-law with his Spouse as contented, as themselves ioyfull with the match. *Elisa* was no lesse inwardly vertuous, then faire without; so warily modest, that her *Fernando* might iustly esteeme himselfe fortunate in her; who being himselfe also such, as wee haue formerly described him, knew how sufficiently to account of those good parts in his Spouse; and therefore giuing himselfe wholly now to be guided by her will, he liued most happy and contentedly: which to consummate and make vp, the bestowing *Alcina* onely kept him wakefull, to procure her a deseruing husband, and ridde himselfe of the carefull burden of their double honour. Indeed *Fernando* was ignorant of his Sisters secrets; who, though shee were in loue, yet fearing the awfull austere condition of her brother, dissembled all she might her affection: and now with *Elisa's* free conuersation and companie, she was lesse solitary, more then formerly at liberty.

In this manner, two yeeres from *Fernando's* marriage were accomplished, at the end of which, his wiues father, and soone after, an onely brother of hers dying, shee remaining sole Inheretrix of a good Estate, and her husband importuned by her mothers Letters, was forced, for settling  
of

of the new Inheritance, to repaire to *Granada*: and though it much troubled him, to be thus for some long time absent, yet the necessity compelled his patience to submit, leaving his house and domesticall affaires (for the better governing them) to his Kinsmans carefull overseeing, whom hee loued dearly: and hee hauing beene long maintained by him, relying with good satisfaction vpon his honesty, he betooke himselfe the more cheerfully to that vn-willing iourney and businesse, which kept him almost halfe a yeere: in which time, though *Fabricio* (so was the kinsman called) had at the beginning beene very sollicitous, at the first, perceiuing the retirednesse of *Elisa* and her sister-in-law, thinking his watchfulnesse and labour vaine, by little and little hee grew carelesse, and so passed on some dayes, till at length in one stormy Winters night, when he was fast and securely sleeping, a seruant that lay in his Chamber, awoke him, saying, hee heard Musicke and singing neere *Elisa's* Window; wherupon suddenly, and desirous to be satisfied, *Fabricio* got him to a low Grate which lookt that way: from whence hee might see one walke to and fro in the Street, which made him expect what the issue would be: and the Instruments sounding, he might at another corner perceiue a company together, who in three Voyces began sweetly to send forth this following Ode:

*When thou in native thoughts didst imitate  
the simple Turtle Done,  
And constant wer't, I still did consecrate  
to thy true faith, firme loue:  
(That rurall Bird doth neuer range,  
Fixt to her Mate, affects no change.)  
But since thy former plainnesse to disguise,  
with Art thou dost contrine,*

*And*

*And first affection lesse do'st equalize,  
why do I longer strine?  
For Love that doth excuses frame,  
Ei her is none, or not the same.*

This Ditty madded the waking *Fabricio* : for coniecturing he might know the subiect to whom it was meant, yet his ignorance of the certainty robbed him of vnderstanding, though on the other side obliged by his care, he must proceed in his attendance : yet comforted he was, as imagining the Musick might be giuen to some other in the Street, and out of his loue to his kinsman, he would not rashly suspect his chaste Spouse, till such time, as the new *Eccho's* of those Voyces began againe in the following Song to increase his doubtfull feares..

*Vanish Hope, expect no more;  
Ayrie Promises giae o're :  
where the reall Act doth want,  
Meane intentions are too scant.  
Let, no longer, words or wind,  
Dull, and wronged Patience blind :  
Outward fauours from the tongue,  
when the true ones we prolong.  
Pinchingly, discover plaine,  
'Tis but manners wish disdaine.  
Toying Clownes that sow the Land,  
Harow, plough with weary hand,  
Bodies to the cold inure,  
Wind and Winters frosts indure;  
Yet at length their suffering reapes  
Lopes, with corne and fruit by heapes.*



*All Lones ioyes, his blessednesse  
 Is (the Haruest) To possesse.  
 Other hopes, our feares, or care  
 Prooue but barren, deepe despaire.  
 Can deafe doore, dumbe locke, or words  
 Two or three, dead faith affords,  
 (Opposite, with Love at strife)  
 Hinder vs the act of life?  
 Or Boords chinke, whose new-cut rinde  
 Not least sight admits, scarce winde:  
 Or is this the ayne and scope,  
 Now, of all my lingring hopes?  
 Is the Bed lesse secret (Fie!)  
 That so stiffely you deny,  
 Then a window, wall, or street,  
 Where a thousand hazards meet?  
 Each of these with trait'rous eye,  
 Will, thus open Love descrie:  
 Then, to ease your honours doubt,  
 Let me in and locke them out.*

With greater confusion the Sentinels cares turned into hollow trunks, impatiently heard out the Ditty, and with more torment, vvhhen hee might heare a Window open in *Elisa's* Chamber, and the vnknown Gallant drawing neere, beginne to discourse.

The two sisters in *Fernando's* absence lay together, but *Fabricio*, ignorant of that, no sooner saw this, vvhhen vvhithout distinction he condemned *Elisa's* lust and falshood towards his kinsman. Impossible it was for him from where he was, to heare their vvhole Dialogue, though by some answers of the one, he might ghesse at the demands of the other. And hearken-

hearkening with all attentiueneſſe, he might heare the man thus proceed: You cannot at laſt deny my iuſt complaints; for after ſo many vaine ſhifts and delayes, I cannot but bee wearie, though (as I am a Gentleman) vvere your excuſes grounded vpon any the leaſt reaſon, I ſhould ſtill willingly ſuffer and expect, as I haue hitherto done, and you know how patient I haue alwaies beene: but, if I ſee what a happy occaſion we loſe in *Fernando's* abſence, what may I thinke, but that I am abuſed, and that with your falſhood you mocke my vnſained affection? Here *Fabricio* vnwilling to hearken longer, vvas thorowly ſatiſfied with what hee had already heard: and though his indignation egged him furiously on to haue runne into the ſtreet, yet his more diſcreet vnderſtanding, ſuggeſting vnto him his kinſmans honour, vvhich might not haue beene ſo publiſely wronged, by laying open a vviues infamie, reined in his courage, only from that time forward made him more circumſpectly wary about the houſe.

But impoſſible it is to ſet ſufficient guard vpon a diſſolute woman: Luſt (though lockt vp like *Danaë*) will finde way: ſo his vvatching was vaine; for (to his grieve) not long after he came to the knowledge of more miſchiefe; there beeing ſome in the houſe, who pittying their poore abſent Maſter, told *Fabricio* not onely of night-walking and Muſicke, but vnlawful egreſſe and regreſſe too: and that at the ſame window where he heard diſcourſing, a man moſt nights at vnſeaſonable houres mounted by a Ladder, whom the partie that gaue the more certaine notice of it, beeing an old ſervant of *Fernando's*, many nights ſaw from his owne houſe, which was directly oppoſite.

*Fabricio* ſeeing the matter ſo openly ſcandalous, could no longer conceale his reſolute purpoſe; ſo that though the reuenge

revenge belonged not to his hands, he with them prepared it, by writing to *Fernando*, that without all delay hee should immediately returne to *Talvera*, for as much as it concerned his honour so to do.

Any noble heart may easily suppose without my relation, the effect that this Letter wrought in *Fernando's* brest; who, not without some sinister thoughts, ruled by his kinsmans aduice, tooke speedy Posts, and vvithin foure dayes arriued at his house, to his *Alcina's* no little admiration; vvho not so soone expected him, vvhich made him the more ioyfully welcomed, especially by the faire *Elisa*; and next, longing to be resolu'd of his doubt, with a conuenient opportunity, he vnderstood all that had passed in his absence from his carefull Kinsman; who, considering *Fernando's* dishonour and affront, vvvas ready to haue slaine himselfe. The other after he had paw'd a little with himselfe, made no difference or distinction of the vvrong; for whether *Alcina* or *Elisa*, one of the two he was sure had defamed her selfe and him: his vvife was most deare to him, for which reason his ielousie led him to suspect rather her falshood: for it is a naturall effect of this hel-bred Passion, that where wee most naturally loue and affect, there we most carefully feare. If his sister were in fault, why, the grieuancee was as equall to his blood, which equally prouoked his revenge. But after he had waighed with himselfe all and sundry particulars, he beganne to thinke of first satisfying his owne eyes, not wholly relying vpon the relation of another, in a matter that so neerely concerned his honour. And so much the rather inclined he to this resolution, by seeing his wiues behaviour and carriage in the same equall ballance he left it; her obseruance punctually the same; her honest looks and shamefaced blush no way diminished; her affection equally composed,

posed, and her embraces as louing, as loyall as euer. But if this relenting consideration would presse too much vpon his somewhat mollified mind, the bitterneffe of the wrong would call backe his furious remembrance, and shut the doores to all commiseration: and then thinking there was nothing but fallhood and dissimulation in wom in, hee fell passionately backe into his watchfull diligence. Most desirous was he to satisfie his sight, but the actors too cunningly deferred their dangerous pleasures. *Fernando* still haunted with his ielousie, thought this was but a trick, and therefore with a counter-plot, hee fained a new occasion to returne to the prosecution of his businesse at *Granada*, and putting his intent in practice, without note or least suspicion of his house and family, causing *Fabricio* and the seruant priuy to the secret, to be in a readinesse, who (as is sayd) had some of his windowes iust opposite to his; in conclusion, all things cunningly handled, their designe was quickly effected.

But although he lay all that night, and the next following in waite, with more care then *Argus*, yet hee neither saw ought that might trouble him, nor heard any noyse that might increafe his suspicion, which made him, a little heartened, now beginne to wauer in the truth and credit of the matter, blaming to himselfe his kinsmans too rash and easie being perswaded; (a fault that sometimes the most carefull are lyable to:) yet his ielousie still prompting him with misdoubts, the third night came on, in which (then thorowly satisfied) he saw no visions; no: but about midnight two men plainly walking in the street, who hauing fetcht a turne or two, perceiuing the coast was cleare, one of them whistling, gaue the signe, at which, the seare-cloth leaues of a Bay-window were opened, and a woman appearing vvas

H h

his

his answer. The Moone shone brightly at that time, so that though *Fernando* could neither heare the voyce, nor vuell know the face, yet by the apparell shee wore hee might perceiue it was *Elisa*, the stufte of her Gowne silver Tinsall, vvith the Lace and trimming futable, giuing his eyes an apparent Testimonie. The vnfortunate Gentleman was vvith the accident extremely heart-strucken, though vvithout any sudden haste he quietly attended their short discourse: after vvvhich he might see (vvvhich he thought vvvas a preparation to the mans getting vp) a String, and to that a Ladder fastened at the Window, by vvvhich the Gallant nimble mounted, and straight the Window-leaues were clapped to.

*Fernando* more enraged then any angry Lionesse that had lost her young ones, could no longer forbear, but taking the speediest vvay, returned in by his owne doore, where finding his kinsman, and two of his seruants surely armed, hauing giuen them instructions vvhat to do, he left them to make good the Street, if happely the adulterer should escape him vvithin: vvvhich done, vvith a false Key he opened the street doore, and soone after got into his owne Chamber, where vndauntedly rushing in, though the close roome were darke, he furiously lighted vpon the bed, and finding first the vvretched *Elisa*, hastily bestowed three or foure stabbes vpon her: at the very first the poore soule awoke, securely sleeping, and not thinking her latest houre was so neere: and seeing her selfe so bloodily handled, all amaz'd, not knowing the Homicide, threw her body out of the bed vvith the mortall pangs.

*Fernando* next of all carefully groped about vvith his hand for the adulterer, and perceiuing some stirring vnder him, thinking he was sure there, drawing the Curtaine, he  
directed



directed his sword and rage thitherward; where he had no sooner seconded his thrust, vvhhen knowing the voyce of his sister, crying out, Enough, deare Signior, oh I am slaine, made him hold his hand, suspended by the frightfull Echo's of his owne blood, yet he could not so much as imagine her to haue beene the sole cause of his dishonour: and now too he might heare the Window-leaues pulled open, at vvhich the fearefull Gallant had meanes vvith the darke to leape into the street; vvvhich vvithout *Fernando's* hinderance he did: but his feare making him lose his ayme, together vvith the height, vvhen hee came to ground, hee broke his legge with the fall; howsoeuer his escape had bin beyond possibility, in respect of the three armed that there waited for him, who quickly in the state hee was in, vvith their swords dispatched him. By this time *Elisa's* maides, hauing heard the deadly grones of their Mistris, weere gotten into the Chamber with Lights; vvhere beholding the bloody spectacle, they quickly ranne to hide themselves from their Masters angry presence; vvho, seeing how vvell his kinsman and seruants had behaued themselves, yet, not wholly satisfied, taking a Light from one of the vvomen, with it soone vnderstood his bitter misfortunes: finding his *Elisa* with dolorous grones, clung to an Yuory Crucifixe, that hung before, at her beddes-head, euen giuing vp the ghost, and by her, his only sister weltring in the gore blood of her two deadly wounds. His wife was not quite dead, with nothing but her Smocke vpon her: but *Alcina* clad in her faire sisters Robes, in perfect sence and memory, fully satisfied her wronged Brother, by letting him in her last agony know, that *Elisa* died innocently, as hauing not so much as beene a partaker of her wakings; for, tempering her supper with drowzie *Opium*, which prouoked her to

deadly sleepe, she made sure of beeing seene or heard by her sister; so that she her selfe alone iustly deserued the fatall punishment: since so against her honour and shamefastnes, she had admitted the embraces of her Houses enemy, with whom, without her brothers knowledge or approbation, she had beene pre-contracted. And so ceasing, oppressed by her mortall pangs, she yeelded vp her spirit; leaving the miserable brother that heard her, amazed with grieve, and sorrowfull about measure, when repentance came too late; for *Elisa* too was now starke dead in his armes. His tongue was fast tyed, which silence wrought in his mind in such manner, that his vitall spirits euen failing him, hee might suddenly haue followed his deare Spouse, but that *Fabricio* comming hastily vpon him; rowzed him vp, by telling him, the party whom they had slaine below, was no other then *Tirso*, *Don Rodrigo's* brother, one of his greatest enemies. The noyse also began to increase within doores, and to bee seconded without: so that seeing so many, so vnexcusable mischiefes before him, to adde no more (by his owne for vpshot) to the number, hee was forced to provide for his owne safety, desperately leaving his house and household-goods to the arbitrement of a distracted family.

With this resolution accompanied only by his kinsman, mounted on horse-backe, they left the Towne, posting on all that night, and the next following, till such time as *Fernando* laying hold vpon a fit opportunity, gaue *Fabricio* the slip, and crossing by a Bridge the Cristalline streames of *Tagus*, turning toward the rugged mountaines of *Guadalupe*, in a short time he got into the secretst and wildest parts of those rockie Desarts, where euen spent almost by the vanquishing oppression of his disasters, he had by degrees wasted away, had not Heauen that helped him, and enlighthened his

his vnderstanding, made him fall into this consideration, that his present evils were but slight punishments for his past crimes, which hee abundantly in teares bewayling, not to be vngratefull to his diuine Creator, that had but superficially chastised him, resolu'd in my company vpon a rigorous penitent life, in which after he had remained sixe yeeres, three dayes since, with maruellous tranquillitie of soule, betooke himselfe to his latestt rest.

Thus ended the long, but not tedious Story of the deuout Hermit, with no lesse attention then sorrow from the Auditors, especially the two Brothers his dearest friends; though conforming themselues to the diuine pleasure, his happy ending was a comfort to them; in whose lifes circumstances, and diuers other matters they spent the nights remainder; & in the morning accompanied by their good old Oast, betooke them to their way, and in the best part of it, visited the famous Monasterie of *Guadalupe*: and afterward taking leaue of the Reuerend Hermit, and holding on their iourney; within foure dayes they came in sight of the strong walles, and Towry Castle of *Cesarina*; and arriuing about Sun-set, assuring themselues *Nise* must be within, they all alighted.

*Gerardo* had no sooner set footing on the threshold, when knowne by some of his Mistresses seruants, not without extraordinarie shewes of admiration, they ranne greedily to haue imbraced him; for as the newes which *Nise* had divulged held currant, he was in all those parts giuen for a dead man, so that wholly amazed, though they felt him, they doubted; and (though they saw him) whether he were the obiect of their eye-sight. These extremes filled *Gerardo* with no lesse wonder, though at last informed of the cause, his desire increasing to satisfie his Mistresse, hee could not

be at quiet till he had seene her; but manifesting his minde, he was by one of those seruants told the occasion why *Nise* was at that time out of the Castle, which was, that perswaded verily that hee had beene cast away vpon the Coast of *Barbary*, she returned to the Nunnery where she had before liued; and leauing her possessions (against all perswasions of her kindred) meant to take vpon her the Religious habit of Saint *Clara*, and to liue and dye in that profession.

The ghests at the vnexpected Relation were much troubled, though, in *Gerardo*, this vvas not onely an effect of trouble; for his eyes, vvithout vvagging their lids, staringly fixed vpon earth, he stood as immoueable, as if he had been a Statue of brasse, rather then a man of flesh.

*Leoncio* vell noted the sudden alteration, and expecting a little to haue him come to himselfe, thinking it too long for a muze: about to haue giuen him a secret iogge, hee had like to set him off his legges to the ground. *Gerardo's* passion vvas not so slight, nor the Torment he endured so tolerable as his Brother imagined, his heart quite failed him; and therefore applying new helpes, and causing a bedde suddenly to be made, they laid him in it, his Brother and kinsmen in this strange accident round besetting him.

These things passed not so couertly (the distance being not much) but that the same of them in an instant flew to *Nise's* eares: who though at first (relying wholly vpon her owne thoughts) she could giue no credit to the newes; yet, vvhen at last shee heard it seuerally confirmed, no tongue can expresse her ioy, though indeed her Louers present danger mingled it with some sorrow: to whom, shee carefully dispatched sundry messages, disposing them so, that one came

came in the necke of the other, yet all were answered by *Leoncio*: for the brother lay yet in a profound Extasis, which made her ready to haue forsaken the Nunnery; which she had straight performed, leauing her holy habit, but that such an Act might haue been imputed to much leuity. But *Leoncio* with the rest of the Gentlemen, not long after went to visit her, by whom she was told (to her no small ioy and comfort) that *Gerardo* amended: and after some speech betwixt them the agreement was, that the next day (since the onely cause of her retirement, was, thinking that *Gerardo* was dead, and that the contrary at present appearing, shee might, without her honours hazard, quit the Order) their so long desired Nuptials should in the Monasteries Church be solemnized.

This newes was quickly spred about the Village, and so heartily celebrated, that ere night, all the Turrets, Battlements and walles of the enclosure; as also, Streets, Market-place, Doores and Windowes, were full of Lights, Torches and Bonfires, nothing was heard but noise of ioy and Musicke. The better sort of the Gentry likewise, with the *Ginetiers* of the Coast, then in the Village ranne their seuerall Carreeres before the Nunnery & Castle Gates: where, though *Gerardo* were now somewhat better come to himselfe, yet hee could not thorowly bee comforted, neither could his kinsmen or *Leoncio* know what to attribute the cause of it to, who much afflicted to see him still in that manner, importuned him all he might, to know the ground of his strange discontentment.

*Gerardo*, out of the mutuall affection betwixt them, would soone haue satisfied his Brother, but that hee iustly feared, *Leoncio's* perswasions might preiudice his secret intent: wherefore, dissembling the true cause, hee told him that the



vnexpected newes of *Nise's* Religious estate (presuming his owne to be desperate, his sudden griefe allowing him no time to weigh the matter) had so much hitherto oppressed him; but that, vnderstanding now the truth of her affection, he vvas better pleased and contented. So vvas *Leoncio* vwhen he heard this, and assured that his Brother concealed not his cares from him, his, were to prouide against the prefixed time; and so taking order to haue all things, and the Bridegroomes brauery in a readinesse, they all, that night, the better to cheere vp his brother, supped in *Gerardo's* Chamber. And toward midnight every one withdrew to his lodging, and all, vwhen day came, went downe into the Castle yard; where, with shewes of noble emulation, in rich embroideries, an Epitome of our *West-Indies* might bee seene: and in this manner (hauing sent word first to *Nise*) *Leoncio* with them vvent to fetch the gallant Bridegroome out of his bed: but finding the Chamber doore shut, and his seruants attending his awaking, wondring at his drowzinesse (though some imputed it to the late accident) they knocked aloude; but hearing no answer, *Leoncio* hastily vwith his foot shoued the doore open, which was but only close put to; and himselfe with the rest entring in, thinking *Gerardo* vvas yet asleepe, they drew the Curtaines, but neither found *Gerardo* in bed, nor saw any of his apparell; wherfore *Leoncio* much troubled, and fearing some disaster, caused search to be made for him all about, and willed that they should see if his Horse were missing, which vvas as he misdoubted; and therefore his kinsmen called to haue theirs saddled, with purpose to seeke him out: but a Letter which one of them found vpon one of the Pillowes, stayed their intent. The hand was knowne to be *Gerardo's*, and seeing the superscription to *Leoncio*, he taking it, not with-

out some teares read it ouer first closely to himselfe, and then asswaging his passions as vvell as he could, in presence of them all, he read alowd the ensuing Lines.

Deare Brother, that this vnexpected Aēt of mine, especially in an occasion so vrgent, must of necessity cause in your Noble brest (if not also compassionate) a strong distaste against your Gerardo; I cannot doubt; yet must I likewise, relying vpon your wisdom, duely weighing the reasons thereunto mouing me, hope, your punishment may be turned into the pardon I presently desire: but first let me request you, that, calling to your remembrance my past life so full of affrighting, dangers and hazzard, you would also consider the miraculous meanes and wayes, by which Gods goodnesse hath freed me from them: to whom I must, besides the generall obligation of my Redemption, owe a more particular dutie, which, his vspeakeable bounty, in raising me from the bondage of a vicinus life, hath imposed vpon mee. This truth then granted, had you your selfe receiued some especiall benefit not from an equall friend, but some meane soule, could you bee otherwise then thankfull for it? And, tell me, in stead of beeing so, were it fit with vile ingratitude, to goe about to bereane him of his onely Iewell? What pittying brest would not reuile you for so loude a crime? which out of louing gratitude, or modest feare, you should not dare commit, or lesse imagine.

If then, oh Brother, such be now my case; If this haue hapned in my lifes whole course: why should not I, by falling into the reckoning of my sinnes, striae to expiate some one, by leauing to the quiet possession of my gracious Maker, a Spouse, admitted to his Hymenean rites? And this, if not for infinit blessings and mercies bestowed, at least for the iust feare (Fernando's example my trofull President) of an equall punishment: And thinke not you, or any else, that, that stupendious accident which befell vs, was only casual

casuall (farre be it) To loose our selues in a high-way, to descend with such sure and certaine danger, a steepe craggie Mountaine at midnight, to finde in such a wildernesse so good shelter and company; and our old true friend, (though dead) proclaiming lowly in his life such successes. All this (beleene mee) was not without some mystrie, or gouernment of Gods most liberall hand. Nise to me shall be no Elisa, neither will I to niceties with bea-men, or quiddities of her professing or not professing: whet her she may, ought or will accomplish my wil (though now it be different:) for should you say; 'Twere fitter too to satisfie her; and that if Fernando wooed Elisa, 'tis otherwise with mee: I wooed not Nise, rather, there is a necessitie to pay the forcible debt of honour; my answer is, That the diuine providence, from which nothing is hidden, fore-knew all this; and notwithstanding that I was safe from the Seas danger, disposed her heart and whole affection to so sure a choise. Wherby I collect, that that was fittest for her, and most profitable for both our soules, which, mine, by Heauens fauour, shall follow, and I hope the discreet Nise will admit of the reasons of this Letter, and my resolution, which I request you make knowne vnto her, and withall, that none of you trouble your selues in my search; for, doubtlesse, in worldly affaires wee shall neuer meet. And thus my only Brother, and you, the rest, my Kinsmen, Friends, receiue my last best wishes for embraces; in exchange, if euer I were acceptable to your hearts or eyes, comfort my absent, poore afflicted Mother; and lastly heauen giue ----

But here Leoncio's tongue was knotted, and the Paper dropping from him, the paine he was in, bereaued him of his speech. The rest of those Gentlemen bore a part also with him: so that nothing was heard amongst them, but a confused murmure of inward sighes, which grew quickly to sad groanes, with whose noise Leoncio awaking out of his

his passionate slumber, cries out outrageously; Oh my *Gerardo*! And so his whole cōtent melted into bitter teares, and the cause of them was straight dispersed about the Village.

'Twas not the least of the good *Leoncio's* afflictions, to consider in the midst of his griefes, *Nise's* iust sorrow, which made him, as if he were within her bosome, proclaime her complaints, fearing in himselfe, that not without cause shee might exclaime of her double iniury, and being twice abused by his Brother; and calling to his mind withall, that Masculine exploit of hers, when for his libertie she left her home and Countrey, exposing her life to a fraile piece of wood, and the Seas danger, ashamed then, he durst not looke vpon her. But knowing how precise a necessity there was of seeing her, deferring it no longer, accompanied by his Kindred, hee went to the Monasterie.

Here, though he might haue supposed all things to be in a readinesse, and at the first sight the Walls clad with Arras or Tapistrie, he saw no more alteration then the day before, nor the least noyse or stirring, that such a solemnity might haue required: wherefore with more admiration he desired that the faire *Nise* might be called: and thinking (according to the last agreement) to haue seene her in all her Jewels and brauery, he found himselfe beguiled, and *Nise*, as formerly in her Vaile and religious habit.

Accompanied she was by some other Nunnes, her face and countenance, more awfully graue, lesse cheerefull then the day before: which perswaded them that shee was acquainted with *Gerardo's* absence: and therefore *Leoncio* presuming that it was so, turning to the faire Dame, framed this discourse:

Consi-

Considering you know of my Brothers vnexpected accident, I may saue a labour to giue you notice of it, complying in the rest, with what he hath committed to my trust and charge. *Nise's* heart was much oppressed with hearing this, and cutting him thus passionately off, answered; How said you, Sir? Alas, what should I know, that know nothing of his disasters? Is he dead, or vvhhat doe you meane? If so, said *Leoncio* in more confusion, I may proceed, though *Gerardo's* absence, and the finding you so carelesse of these Nuptials (since ouer-night to your liking they were agreed on) cannot but containe some especiall mysterie: so, without more pawse he told her the vvhole businesse, as also of the Letter: at all which, her compassionate eyes sent forth their teares, and the afflicted Gentleman making an end, *Nise*, not so much troubled (as might haue beene feared) made this modest answer: When Heauen so cleerely shewes his wonders, 'twere needlesse to make strange my thoughts, or longer to conceale my intention. Your noble Brother, *Leoncio*, hath discreetly in fine made the happiest election: in which (though you may thinke hee preuented me;) I gain'd him by the hand and eldership; for I no sooner yesterday departed from you, resolved to be his Spouse, when my heart beginning to ponder, and my affections altering, God Almighty was pleased to illuminate better my weake vnderstanding; and, considering I left cleere light for lasting darknesse, chose momentary ioyes for eternall; and lastly, the Creature, in stead of my Creator, seeing the manifest errour I was in, my sorrow & repentance brought me to this wholesome remedy of holy retirement: from which, not all worldly respects, or aboue all other, that powerfull loue I once bore to your Brother, must euer remove mee: and therefore, I vndoubtedly inferre that two,  
so

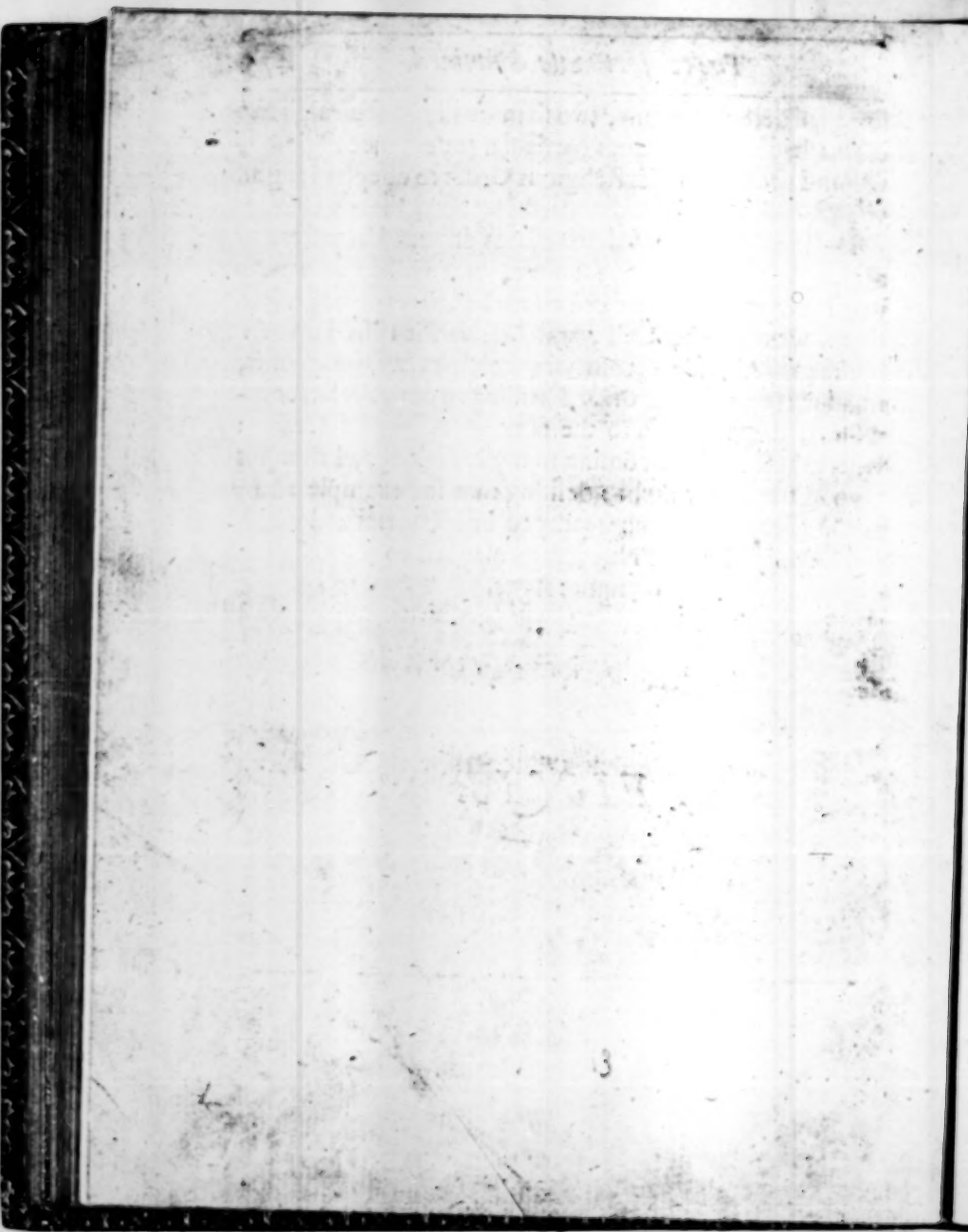


so equall determinations, two so mutually concurring affections, have been by Gods particular providence disposed, whom I professe in this Religious Order to obey, as long as vitall breath shall-----

In the midst of this valour she was drowned in teares, as accompanied by the Spectators, and vnable to vtter a word more, with a farewell courtesie, shee meltingly left them, went into her Cell, and *Leuncio* with his kinsmen backe to the Castle; from whence that very afternoone, not once looking after *Gerardo*, willing to obey his last commands, they returned to the famous Village of *Madrid*: where these passages coming to my knowledge, I thought good to publish them: desiring that for example and memory of men worthy to be immortalized in the Presse, they may last to future Ages.

*FINIS.*

---



C 4919  
84668 SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE  
**HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY**

---

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION